



ABSOLUTE CHOICE

BOOK 01

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Absolute Choice

(Jue Dui Xuan Xiang)

(绝对选项)

by

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

(梨落秋溪)

Synopsis

A world filled with heroes with superpowers. A world attacked by calamity fiends. A modern world filled with wonders and dangers.

Shi Xiaobai, a child from normal Earth, walked into such a world, proclaiming to be its king. But at the first signs of danger, he is forced to make a choice, one which he cannot refuse for time would repeat, making him face the choice again.

He is not humble nor is he modest, but neither is he delusional. Yet, the Absolute Choice seems to make fun of him. Will the joke be on him or will he laugh at his opponents? There will be many watching his escapades, and there will be some joining him in his adventures.

To see through the world and to grasp its truth, that is the destiny of the King.

Copyright by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rex @ [Wuxia World](#)

Translation Edits by Lucas @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Make Your Choice, Youth

“Implode reality, pulverize thy spirit. By banishing this world, comply with the blood pact, I will summon forth thee, O’ young Demon King!”

At a park during sunset, a childlike, handsome youth placed his left hand on his chest, while his right hand was stretched out with his fingers wide open, as though he was about to release something amazing from his palm. He looked serious and solemn. His eyes were as bright as the stars, reflecting a shadow in them. It was like it encompassed the darkness of the entire world.

“Big Brother, who are you?”

Standing opposite the youth was a fat, little boy at about the age of five. At this moment, he was hugging a soccer ball. He was covered in dirt and, as he spoke, snot hung so low down from his nose that it was just short of flowing into his mouth.

“Hahaha!”

The youth roared out loudly thrice. As he flipped his right hand, he retracted it back and covered his face, immediately covering half of his face and one eye.

Then he said with a cold voice, “Who am I? I’ve been called the fairy of towering mountains, the father of the sun, the ancient heroic spirit, the soul of animals, a deity, a ghost and a little green hulk. Then, I was called God, Demon, Fey, Alien, Extraterrestrial

Biological Being, Lepton and Quark. My titles are constantly changing, but my name has only been one!”

“That’s right! I am the Master of Fate, an Emissary of Justice, a Hero who will save the world—Shi Xiaobai¹!”

Upon saying that, the corner of Shi Xiaobai’s lips curled up as he guffawed loudly once again.

Little Fatso sniffed forcefully as his snot flowed back up into his nose. His eyes lit up. “So Big Brother is a hero! Mommy said that heroes can defeat calamity fiends and protect everyone from disasters. Can Big Brother do that too?”

Shi Xiaobai crossed his arms and nodded, saying, “Of course. There is no demon from the alternate worlds that cannot be finished in one punch by me, Shi Xiaobai. If one punch isn’t enough, then two punches would do! This ruined world shall be saved by me, Shi Xiaobai! As for you, young Demon King, you will be my servant from today onwards. You will expel the darkness in this world, breaking the shackles of destiny, and become an eternal hero by following me!”

“Can... Can I do that as well?” Little Fatso was immediately thrilled as he wiped his leaking nose once again with the back of his hand.

“You have already signed a blood contract with me. As a servant of a king, you will obtain a hundred millionth of my energy. With this energy, you will be able to overcome and defeat all calamity

fiends! Laugh out loud and be excited, young Demon King. Your fate has already been completely overturned by me!” Shi Xiaobai pointed at the little fatty and his eyes shone like the burning sun.

“Big Brother, can I really...defeat calamity fiends and protect Mommy?” Little Fatso wiped his hand that was covered in snot on his clothes on his back while his eyes were full of anticipation.

“That’s right. The Demon King soul that has slumbered in your body for thousands of years has been awoken by me, Shi Xiaobai. You will possess the power to protect everything! I shall now declare that, henceforth from today, you will be my Xiaobai Hero Squad’s second member!” Shi Xiaobai said it extremely earnestly with a solemn expression.

“Woo!” Little Fatso cheered. He began running around in the garden with the soccer ball. Suddenly, with an excited leap, he jumped into a sandpit and threw the soccer ball up. He then laughed out with his arms akimbo as he said, “I’m a hero. I can defeat all calamity fiends. Mommy will buy me a mountain of snacks. Little Rat will no longer call me Little Fatso. Little Lei will definitely be willing to be my girlfriend. Wahaha...”

The dusk had dyed the land in a warm layer of pale red. In the small park with only the two of them remaining, Little Fatso was jumping and cheering in the sandpit, while the youth not far away revealed a contented smile on his face.

“Xiaobai Hero Squad has finally welcomed its second member. A small step for me, Shi Xiaobai, today, a giant leap for the world.”

Shi Xiaobai clutched his fist to his chest as his eyes flickered like blazing torches while staring far away into the setting sun.

“Gu~”

Suddenly, a clear and crisp growl came from his stomach. Shi Xiaobai’s handsome face scrunched up as he sighed, saying, “So hungry. So in this ruined world, I, Shi Xiaobai, only have a mortal’s body.”

Shi Xiaobai was not a person from this world. He came from another world and, to put it simply, he had crossed worlds.

Before crossing over, he held a Seven Star Holy Sword in his hand while wearing Gold Dragonscale Armor. He stood on a Ten Thousand Tribulation Qilin, and he was battling the ultimate Great Demon God that was devouring the world. He remembered that, at his final moment, he had consumed his life force in a burning flame, issuing ‘Excalibur’, immediately causing widespread destruction. The Demon God was annihilated. But at the same time, he was completely exhausted, resulting in him dying—in a game.

When Shi Xiaobai thought of this, he sighed. “What I, Shi Xiaobai, was playing was not a game, but life.”

While playing a game, he had crossed over to this world, and it had already been two days. In these two days, Shi Xiaobai wandered around everywhere. He was unable to clarify his identity

in this world, but he slowly understood the composition of this alternate world.

This world was actually very familiar, but it was also quite alien. The scientific and technological culture shared many similarities with 21st century Earth. It also had cars, televisions and computers... However, the entertainment culture was completely different. News reports of Heroes and calamity fiends were broadcasted every day. The broadcasted programs were all a variety of cool and dazzling battles.

Furthermore, according to Shi Xiaobai's understanding, the people of this world could cultivate their Psionic Powers, and they were known as Psionites. And the battles broadcasted on television were all footage of real fighting scenes. Those fighting scenes were even more spectacular than the fantasy films from Earth.

However, when humans gained power, it similarly gave rise to many problems, such as criminals or terrorist organizations that constantly emerged in great numbers. The international situation was also extremely serious, with hidden conflicts between countries.

And the greatest danger in this world was the constant emergence of extraterrestrial biological organisms. There were Astral Calamity Beasts from the stars or extraterrestrial beings that would suddenly visit the planet. And finally, the most terrifying calamity fiends from other worlds.

Calamity fiends came from a different dimension, but they could break through the dimension of space into the human world at

anytime. Maybe you might be in the bathroom, and a spatial dimension rift opens up in the toilet suddenly. The calamity fiend would come out through that, eviscerating you. Of course, the chances of a calamity fiend appearing were not high. So if one had the misfortune of meeting one, one could only blame it on one's own bad luck.

But even so, this world was still fraught with danger, evil and death. Then, there were certainly some entities that would address these dangers and defeat all sorts of evil, saving those whose lives were in danger.

This entity was called—Hero.

The word Hero was not a mere title or honor bestowed on them. It was a global organization, a profession that was recognized and respected by the public. It was a symbol of the strong as well as a representation of the brave. Heroes would defeat calamity fiends, saving humanity and protecting Earth. This was a consensus of all people.

“Although I, Shi Xiaobai, am just a frail mortal now, there will be one day when I will become a powerful Psionite, leading the Xiaobai Hero Squad to save the world. All of this is already a choice made by the Gate of the Destiny Stone!”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. Although his stomach was growling with hunger, his eyes were filled with dreams of the future.

Suddenly, his pupils contracted violently in an abrupt way as his

breathing involuntarily stopped. This was because he saw a black rift appear about one meter above the sandpit. The rift enlarged almost instantly, becoming a black hole the size of a window.

A blackish-purple head extended out of the black hole.

Shi Xiaobai immediately recalled the descriptions mentioned by passers-by—a calamity fiend was about to appear!

The blackish-purple head looked extremely ugly. It was bald and it had three eyes lined up in a row. A black horn protruded out of its forehead, as vertical fangs stretched out of its lower lip. Sticky black spittle constantly dripped down, burning blackened craters in the sandpit with sizzling sounds.

Little Fatso, who was playing in the sandpit, was only about 2–3 meters away from the calamity fiend that had stretched its head out. And the calamity fiend was using its three eyes to stare coldly and cruelly at the Little Fatso.

“Run, hurry up and run!” having not seen such a terrifying scene before, Shi Xiaobai could smell terror that originated from his very soul. His legs began to tremble, as he roared in his heart. However, it was as though his mouth was stuck with something, as not a single sound came out.

And at this moment, Little Fatso gave a terrified but excited cry.

“I’m now a Hero. I can defeat you, you Big Baldy!”

Little Fatso pointed at the calamity fiend's head. Although his little body was trembling slightly, his voice revealed firm courage and confidence.

And when the calamity fiend heard these words, it let out a soul-crushing roar of terror.

“It's over. He angered the calamity fiend.”

Shi Xiaobai's vision went black as the fear in his heart magnified limitlessly, while his brain momentarily went blank.

Suddenly, he felt the entire world freeze. The scene of Little Fatso raising his hand seemed to be a still frame. The momentum of the calamity fiend crawling out of the black hole also came to a halt, as if time had frozen.

When he saw everything before his eyes stop, to the point of him not being able to move at all, as it was no longer under his control, only his consciousness remained clear, and his thoughts were still active.

“This... This isn't an illusion? Did it... Did it really stop?”

At the instant this thought flashed across Shi Xiaobai's mind, three rows of gigantic, black words appeared in front of his eyes, with the world as their background.

[Choice 1: Save Little Fatso (A-level reward)]

[Choice 2: Escape (F-level reward)]

[Choice 3: Watch by the sidelines (E-level reward)]

At the same time, a fiery voice resounded in Shi Xiaobai's mind. "Make your choice, youth!"

Following that, the fiery voice kept repeating in Shi Xiaobai's head, like a looping soundtrack. It shouted again and again, "Make your choice, youth!"

And seeing the world past the three lines of black text, Little Fatso and the calamity fiend's figures still remained motionless like ice sculptures. The leaves on a faraway tree did not move one bit, while his own body could not move at all.

"If I do not make a choice, time will remain paused at this moment."

Shi Xiaobai slowly calmed his fear down. After making a judgment on the current situation, his eyes landed on the three lines of black text.

“Isn’t the difference between an A-level reward and F-level reward...too big? Ahem. How can I, Shi Xiaobai, be tempted by rewards?”

“I...want to save Little Fatso, and I have to save Little Fatso. If I can’t even save a child, how am I to talk about saving the world? It’s just a tiny calamity fiend, so how can I, Shi Xiaobai, be afraid of it? Tremble and be filled with despair, calamity fiend, for your end has come!”

...

“A-level reward, I, Shi Xiaobai, am coming for you!”

“I choose choice 1. Save Little Fatso!”

At the instant, Shi Xiaobai made his choice, the sound of wind entered his ear. And at the same time, the calamity fiend’s cruel laughter resounded. Time had begun spinning again!

“Run! Hurry up and run away from there!”

This time, Shi Xiaobai bellowed out. At the same time, he charged forward towards the sandpit. Blue veins protruded out of his handsome face and his eyes turned red, as if he had gone crazy.

“Big Brother!”

Little Fatso turned around, and gave out a pleasant cry of surprise. His small eyes were filled with endless confidence and dependence.

At the same moment, the calamity fiend in the black hole had half of its body out. Two of its hands were reaching out of the black hole, but instead of saying hands, they were more like two blackish-purple sickles. The calamity fiend's sickle-shaped right hand raised up prominently and, in the dark sunset, a cold luster flickered like a stare from Death.

“No, don’t!”

Shi Xiaobai stared with widened eyes, while his desperately running body was about to reach the sandpit. He was just a tiny distance away from touching Little Fatso's snot-flowing, rotund face if he stretched his right hand out.

“Pu!”

Hot blood splattered in front of Shi Xiaobai, spraying onto his face and into his eyes. It dyed the entire world in the coldest color of crimson.

Through the dripping blood, he saw Little Fatso's head fly up high in the sky as his body collapsed backwards. The neck that had been snapped was constantly spewing fresh blood. The flying rotund face looked extremely frightened from disbelief and horror, but Shi Xiaobai could see a trace of snuffed hope from those bleak

eyes that lacked life.

Little Fatso's eyes were staring at him.

“Big Brother, who are you?”

“So Big Brother is a hero! Mommy said that heroes can defeat calamity fiends and protect everyone from disasters. Can Big Brother do that too?”

“Can... Can I do it as well?”

“Big Brother, can I really...defeat demons and protect Mommy?”

“Oh yeah! I'm a hero. I can defeat all demons. Mommy will buy me a mountain of snacks. Little Rat will no longer call me Little Fatso. Little Lei will definitely agree to be my girlfriend. Wahaha...”

“Big Brother!”

“...”

If despair had a color, then it would definitely be the crimson blood red at this very moment.

“Putong!”

Shi Xiaobai's body that was rushing forward leaped up as he stretched out his arms to grab Little Fatso's head, before crashing into the sandpit.

“This Demon...hates...being called Big Baldy... Heh heh...” A cold and cruel voice came from the calamity fiend. It was a hoarse and lacerating-like voice that seem to come from a saw grinding against bone.

Shi Xiaobai hugged Little Fatso's head as he faced the calamity fiend that had fully climbed out of the black hole. His height was not even half of the calamity fiend's. Hence, he raised his head, and at the same time, burning hot tears flowed down his cheeks.

“Tremble and be filled with despair, Big Baldy! Your end is here! I, Shi Xiaobai, shall turn you to ash with the wave of my hand,” a tearing Shi Xiaobai said through gnashed teeth, despite the extreme fear he felt in his heart.

The calamity fiend's eyes flashed with anger and it, once again, raised its right hand like Death raising its scythe and slashed it at the youth's neck, as though it was reaping the harvest.

Shi Xiaobai felt a pain in his neck as all his life force was drawn away instantly and his eyes went black.

...

“Make your choice, youth!”

A fiery voice suddenly rang in Shi Xiaobai’s mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

This voice repeated once again as Shi Xiaobai jolted awake. When his vision returned, he saw the three familiar lines of black text floating mid-air.

And looking past the black text, he could see the scene of Little Fatso’s intact body standing there still, while the calamity fiend was crawling out of the black hole. At this moment, only its head was protruding, and it was not moving, looking like an ice sculpture.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Author’s Note: This book’s first few chapters will be quite abusive to the main character, but the style after this will be free and easy. So to those who don’t like abuse, don’t give up because of the first few chapters. Make sure to stick with it.

Chapter 2: If Despair Had A Color

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice buzzed in his head. The three lines of black text in front of his eyes were still [Save Little Fatso], [Escape] and [Watch by the sidelines]. Time was similarly frozen. As if the ending had been overturned, and the story had restarted once again.

“Was that just a dream? Has my clairvoyant ability awoken in this world?” Shi Xiaobai’s mind buzzed, but as he recalled the terrifying experience from before, he could not help but shudder. However, a strong sense of fighting spirit promptly ignited in his heart.

“If this is also the choice of the Gate of the Destiny Stone, then I, Shi Xiaobai must prevent the end of this world line. I must change Little Fatso’s fated death.”

“However...being sealed by the God of Darkness, it’s really hard for me to defeat Big Baldy’s Scythe of Death! Could it be the first tribulation of ten thousand calamities that I, Shi Xiaobai, will be experiencing in my cycle of reincarnation?”

“Phew, before transcending the tribulation, I must first think of a way to save Little Fatso.”

After experiencing the nightmare of gory blood and terror, Shi

Xiaobai understood one thing—Humans, when killed, would die. That weak neck was even softer than tofu in front of that sharp sickle. It was even easier to break than straw. Little Fatso was completely powerless in front of the calamity fiend, unable to withstand even a single blow.

“Damn it. To think the insidious enemy already knows Little Fatso is the weak point of Xiaobai’s Hero Squad and first struck at the weak point to weaken Xiaobai’s Hero Squad. That is such a despicable act. I never expected you to be such a Big Baldy. No, I must think of a way to resolve this situation.”

Shi Xiaobai was secretly worried, but no matter how hard he racked his brains, he could not think of a way to prevent Little Fatso’s death from happening in such a situation.

Suddenly, the fiery voice in his head turned extremely cold and began slowly counting down. “Ten, nine, eight...”

So there was a limited time to choosing! Shi Xiaobai began to fluster and began to lament secretly. He did not know what would happen if he exceeded the time limit, but his intuition told him that he had to make a choice before the countdown ended. He did not have any doubts regarding which to choose, but he was at a loss what to do after making the choice.

“I can only do it that way...” At the final moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of the bleak eyes that had diminished hope. He finally decided to adopt a method he had rejected right from the beginning.

“Little Fatso, I will definitely save you.”

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai made his choice once again.

The still time began spinning once again the moment he made his choice. Little Fatso was still trembling but standing in the sandpit with determination. The calamity fiend was still slowly crawling out of the black hole, but this time, Shi Xiaobai did not shout for him to escape, nor did he rush forward.

Shi Xiaobai cupped his hands in front of his mouth and took a deep breath. With his eyes closed, he used all his strength to shout, “Big Baldy, you contemptible Big Baldy! Let This King step on your empty bald head, and This King will mercifully let you lick the bottom of This King’s soles! Kneel down in prostration before This King, BIG~BALDY!”

After Shi Xiaobai finished shouting, he puffed to catch his breath. His eyes opened and said to himself that it had to succeed.

When the calamity fiend in the black hole heard Shi Xiaobai’s yelling, his raised right hand suddenly stopped. He then slowly turned his hideous head towards where Shi Xiaobai stood.

“I’ve succeeded. The Art of Aggro Transference has garnered great success! Well, time to add more to it!” Shi Xiaobai was excited as he immediately shouted again, “Tremble and be filled with despair, Big Baldy! Your end is here!”

“You...are...courting...death!” The calamity fiend’s deep blue eyes were filled with anger as its voice turned dry and sharp, as if it wanted to rip the Shi Xiaobai in the distance into shreds.

“What did I hear? Oh, it’s the cry of the weak!” Shi Xiaobai began to give a derisive laugh. As he shook his head, he wagged his index finger. Following that, he clenched his hand into a fist and pointed downwards with his thumb. His eyes were full of provocative contempt.

“Foolish...human...this Demon will definitely...rip you to pieces!” The calamity fiend screamed out like a wailing wraith. Finally, one foot stepped out of the black hole and its body landed in the sandpit. It ignored Little Fatso in front of it and turned to walk towards Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai felt dread, almost to the point of not being able to stand still, but he still continued cursing, “Silence! You are just an incompetent mitochondria that breathes. Do you think you will have the chance to take a breather? Ha, your lungs are great. Why don’t they work hard to produce carbon dioxide, so as to contribute to global warming? Compared to the fish in the ditches that can only use gills to breathe, you indeed are eligible to be This King’s pet...”

“Heh heh...” The calamity fiend sneered and took step after step towards Shi Xiaobai. The gigantic blackish-purple figure was filled with squirming muscles. Occasionally, deep blue eyes would open from its skin, making it look crowded and terrifying.

Shi Xiaobai's legs began to tremble with great intensity. His mind's strong desire to live implored him to escape, but when his gaze landed on Little Fatso in the sandpit, he realized Little Fatso was still standing there waving his fists, cheering him on, as if looking forward to see how he could defeat the calamity fiend with a single punch.

“No, if I escape, Little Fatso is doomed. I also cannot yell to Little Fatso to ask him to run, or Big Baldy might transfer his aggro.”

With these thoughts in mind, Shi Xiaobai's body involuntary took a few steps back. He then raised his right hand and said to the calamity fiend, “Do not approach This King, or you would experience the most terrifying soul suppression in this world, directly exploding your body!”

Before his words reached their target, a cold light flashed. Shi Xiaobai's eyes stared straight ahead as he saw his right hand flying into the sky. As the setting sun's rays illuminated it, it spewed out red hot blood as red as the sunset.

“Ah!” Shi Xiaobai immediately screamed tragically. His left hand hurriedly reached for his right side, but all he felt was moist flesh and blood. As he looked on in fear, all he saw was a stump on his right arm.

At the moment he felt the pain, he suddenly felt as though all the light in the world had been devoured. A figure covered him in its shadow. Shi Xiaobai trembled as he raised his head, immediately realizing that the calamity fiend was already standing in front of him. The blackish-purple ugly body was occupying his entire

vision.

“Little Fatso will definitely know that I lied to him. He will definitely escape immediately. As long as I help buy him some time, he will definitely be able to escape. Just drag it out a little longer...”

With such thoughts, Shi Xiaobai said with quivering lips, while enduring the pain and coughs, “Arms and legs, so what if one or two is given to you. So what if this body is sliced and lacerated? If your ugly sickle can slice through your destined miserable fate, then keep slicing for This King to see! Ha, ha...”

“This Demon will tear you apart.” The calamity fiend said coldly and calmly. It raised its right hand and swiped it thrice, forming three cold beams of light flashing past. Immediately, all of Shi Xiaobai’s limbs were sliced off. His body could not help but convulse as his eyes stared so widely that they nearly popped out. An excruciating scream squeezed out from his mouth as it opened up, filling the sky.

However, another cold arc of light flashed out, and Shi Xiaobai’s tongue was instantly pulverized. His tragic screams turned into a crying whimper.

“Dong!”

Suddenly, a dull sound echoed from behind the calamity fiend’s back. Despite it not being very loud, however, it seemed to drown out all other noises. A soccer ball covered in dirt bounced off the

calamity fiend's back, and then fell to the cold hard ground.

“Heh heh, this Demon had nearly forgotten about you.” The calamity fiend's eyes turned cold and stepped on the soccer ball, bursting it. Then it turned around and headed towards the sandpit.

“Mm... Mm... Mm... Mm!” Without limbs, he was unable to stand, and without a tongue to say any words, Shi Xiaobai gagged as two bloody streams of tears rolled down his cheeks.

If despair had a color, then it was definitely Shi Xiaobai.

Author's Note: A reminder once again. The first few chapters will be quite abusive, but it will be a relaxing novel later on. Those who do not like abusive text, please persist longer because of Shi Xiaobai's courage. It will be over in a few chapters.

Chapter 3: Have You Experienced Despair?

Little Fatso's tragic screaming and crying echoed in the park in succeeding fashion. It was as if his cries would shatter the evening afterglow, drowning all light.

With all four limbs severed, and his tongue in pieces, Shi Xiaobai lay there bleeding profusely. He let out whimpers of anger, hate and worry. It was unknown what “magic” the calamity fiend had cast on him before leaving him. A black glow enshrouded him, and the stumps of his four broken limbs were no longer bleeding. The pain was intense enough to knock him out, yet he found it impossible to go unconscious.

The screams of Little Fatso and the cruel laughter of the calamity fiend assaulted Shi Xiaobai's ears, making him imagine all kinds of scenes with the calamity fiend torturing Little Fatso. Unlike the previous decapitation, the calamity fiend seemed to torture Little Fatso with extreme patience. Shi Xiaobai knew that the calamity fiend was venting his anger that had arisen from his provocation.

“Sorry, Little Fatso. I was unable to save you, and instead, I harmed you.” Shi Xiaobai felt extremely agonized. For him, mental torture was much worse than physical torture, making it easier for him to break.

Little Fatso's screams gradually weakened till they disappeared. It was a long process, so long that it seemed to cross millennia.

“It’s your turn. Remember this Demon’s name, Sahadun. It will accompany through the short remaining life of yours with extreme pain.” The calamity fiend’s cold voice echoed, and immediately following that, the sound of the calamity fiend’s footsteps could be heard.

Shi Xiaobai slowly closed his eyes, waiting for the incoming ordeal.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Suddenly, the fiery voice boomed once again in his mind as Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes instantly. All he saw was the still scene of the calamity fiend sticking its head out of the black hole from the past. Everything had once again returned to that moment when time had stopped. He was still alive, and everything was as perfect as before.

However, Shi Xiaobai was not dumbfounded, nor was he pleasantly surprised. He did not have an ounce of emotion and only faced it with an ashen face, as if he was a walking zombie. Previously, he had attempted to deceive himself by thinking it was a clairvoyant dream, but now, he finally reached the point when he needed to carefully think things through.

Why was he returned to the moment before making the choice twice in a row? So it was not a dream, nor was it an illusion, but because he had failed. He had failed to “Save Little Fatso”, resulting in time being reset.

“What will happen if I were to choose the other options?” That was the first thought Shi Xiaobai had. His eyes landed on another line of black text—“Escape”!

“If I were to immediately escape, I’ll definitely be able to succeed...Then, time would probably not reset to this point in time. I will not die, while Little Fatso will probably be killed, but at least he wouldn’t be tortured...”

“But.. I really want to.. save him!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes, which had just lit up, turned cloudy once again. His thoughts turned dark, as the voice inside him began to laugh in derision.

“You can’t save him. You are a weakling. You are garbage. You can’t protect anything.”

“Do you understand? You are neither a protagonist, nor are you a hero.. You are just an ordinary student found commonly on the streets.. But if you had to become a protagonist in a certain piece of work, then you would definitely end up in a tragedy...”

“You can’t even save yourself, so how are you to save others?”

“It’s not fair? The unfairness in this world boils down to the person in question being inadequate. Little Fatso will die, because he doesn’t have the ability to survive.. but you can, you can live on!”

“Run, run, run! As long as you run, you can survive!”

This voice had an enticing charm to it, as it made Shi Xiaobai’s eyes slowly turn red. If he were to choose “Save Little Fatso” once again, it would only be causing the tragedy to repeat itself once again. However, if he were to choose “Escape”, then his suffering would come to an end, and he would be liberated.

Scenes of bloody brutality flashed past Shi Xiaobai’s mind, as if it was bewailing the pain and horror he had previously suffered. It seemed to persuade him to be firm in having the will to escape.

Suddenly, the scene flashing through his brain stopped on the soccer ball. That ball that had flown through the twilight sky and had gently hit the calamity fiend. It was very gentle, but yet it seemed as heavy as gold.

Expression and emotion returned to the youth’s black eyes of eternal luster. An unyielding conviction emerged from the bottom of his heart.

“I choose...”

.....

.....

It was truly a long evening. It was clearly the final struggle before the arrival of the night, yet it refused to give up. It clung onto that last ray of light, releasing that remaining warmth.

Regardless, time began turning once again.

The calamity fiend's neck peeked out of the black hole. Little Fatso still looked like a resolute wall that would make its final stand before it fell. The tragic scene was about to begin immediately.

“Hahaha! O great Lord Sahadun, this lowly one.. this lowly one has been kowtowing to the Demon World for thousands of years, and have finally awaited your arrival, so as to witness how this ruined world will lie prostrate beneath your feet after a long and hard wait!”

A flattering but eccentric voice suddenly emerged. Shi Xiaobai had suddenly knelt down on the ground, fully prostrating himself and doing it three times with his arms stretched out. Every time his forehead hit the hardened ground, it would emit a clear thud.

The calamity fiend had only crawled out halfway and was just about to kill the child that had scolded it “Big Baldy”, but when it heard Shi Xiaobai's words, it immediately turned its head over and said in disbelief, “You..Human, how do you know this Demon's name?”

Shi Xiaobai stood up from the ground and said with a passionate stare, “This lowly one has been waiting here all along for your

arrival! You are this lowly one's king, and the ruler of the cosmos. How can this lowly one not know of your great name!"

"Your grandeur is darker than the night, your existence is more scarlet than blood. It is your body and your supreme volition. Your Excellency Sahadun, this lowly one swore by his blood before the coming of darkness. For those foolish creatures who obstruct your very path, this lowly one is willing to devote his body, and burn his soul, so as to become a small stepping stone for your magnificent exploits. This lowly one will die without regret."

Sahadun's gaze turned soft, as he slowly eased up on his vigilance and animosity. As one of the weaker existences amongst the calamity fiends, this was the first time he had received such veneration.

"Big Brother, what's wrong with you? Big Brother..." Little Fatso spoke in a confused and terrified voice.

Sahadun was jolted awake. That kid who shouted "Big Baldy" deserved death! Sahadun immediately raised its right hand, about to slash off Little Fatso's neck.

"Wait! O' great Sahadun! Listen to this lowly one first!" Shi Xiaoba anxiously piped up.

"Oh?" Sahadun stopped his action and looked at Shi Xiaobai with a scrutinous gaze. Its vigilance and animosity rose once again.

“This person has reviled your magnificence—he has committed a sin that is deserving of a thousand deaths! He absolutely should not be put to death easily. He must experience all sorts of torture before he can die with an aggrieved heart! And only then can that relieve this lowly one’s hatred for him!”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice was filled with anger and hatred. He took a few gentle steps and walked towards the sandpit.

“Big Brother?” Little Fatso’s eyes were brimming with tears. He looked at Shi Xiaobai with eyes of deep disbelief, but he still had a tiny flicker of hope left in him.

Shi Xiaobai took no notice of it and said politely to the calamity fiend, “This lowly one believed that compared to physical torture, the pain from mental torture would be many times worse! This lowly person will rip apart the remaining hope that he possesses, making him despair with no form of reprieve.”

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at Little Fatso and said coldly, “You foolish and contemptible human. You thought your Big Brother is really a hero? You think your Big Brother will save you? No, all of them were lies. They were all fake, understand? Do you feel despair?”

Shi Xiaobai appeared to laugh crazily and was already standing beside the sandpit. Suddenly, he lifted his leg and forcefully kicked Little Fatso. Little Fatso immediately flew backwards as he cried in pain.

“O’ great Sahadun, please take a rest first. Let this lowly one tell this foolish human what despair is.”

Shi Xiaobai walked towards the fallen Little Fatso, with his eyes appearing as if the most cruel demon resided within.

“Foolish human, have you ever experienced despair?”

Chapter 4: Hero! Hero! Hero!

“Heroes are unable to save this putrefying world. Magnificent Lord Sahadun will destroy it and kill those useless heroes along the way!”

“Big Brother...”

“I am not your Big Brother. I am Sahadun’s most loyal servant. Whatever I said to you was just a lie. Foolish mortal, your feebleness has never changed. You are only a fatty who has snot dripping down your nose, forever abandoned by your friends! You are the lowliest existence in the world!”

“Mommy...”

“Your fantasies will be shattered by me. Your pride will be trampled by me. Your insolence against His Excellency Sahadun will be met with the cruelest of punishments!”

“Little Rat, Little Lei...”

“Tremble and be filled with despair, mortal. Lord Sahadun is here! Your end is here! This world’s end has come! Your friend and the little girl you like will all die. They will die without proper burials because of you!”

“Boohooohoo...”

“.....”

Shi Xiaobai placed his foot on the fallen Little Fatso. With a ferocious look, he kept shouting, while Little Fatso wailed loudly under his foot, sounding depressed and looking utterly helpless.

Sahadun immediately watched this scene with interest. Having a lowly status in the Demon World, it had never been exalted before. Furthermore, this human’s showcase of a show titled “Despair” was quite fascinating. It was a rare indulgence for it to witness how despicable humans would lose their humanity in a bid to survive, slaughtering one another.

“So the best way of torturing humans is to make them experience despair.” Sahadun liked this newfound knowledge. Its three eyes looked at the youth whose back was facing it. Then suddenly, a cold glimmer appeared.

“Foolish human, do you think that by fawning over this Demon, this Demon will spare your life? After you have finished torturing that little fatty, this Demon will torture you and make your hopes of surviving turn completely into despair. Haha, what a great thing, this thing called despair. This Demon will definitely relish in your despair.”

With this thought in mind, Sahadun felt an increasing sense of anticipation. However, it soon found itself impatient. This was because it realized that the youth in front of it was only using

words to torture Little Fatso. Nothing else was done other than the first kick causing Little Fatso to be slightly injured. After that, everything was just an empty show of strength.

Hence, Sahadun angrily boomed, “Enough! Let this Demon personally torture him!”

With his back facing Sahadun, Shi Xiaobai’s expression immediately changed. His eyes flashed with an intense struggle as he suddenly kicked Little Fatso’s belly with all his strength. Little Fatso immediately cried out as he went into a fetal position while grabbing his stomach.

Shi Xiaobai continued to kick Little Fatso’s body forcefully before turning around to speak politely to Sahadun. “May Your Excellency Sahadun please give this lowly one a chance. Let this lowly one kill this foolish human who dared offend you. To be able to contribute my meagre strength for Your Excellency is all the meaning of this lowly one’s existence!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes were full of respect, madness and infallible loyalty.

Sahadun turned silent for a moment before it nodded in agreement. To it, for humans to kill their own kind so as to survive, resulting in such an inhuman scene, made it extremely pleased. Besides...the greater the hope, the greater the despair. For this, it was willing to go along with the youth’s request, resulting in the most realistic illusion.

After Sahadun had agreed, Shi Xiaobai turned around and forcefully kicked Little Fatso a few more times before saying politely, “Your Excellency Sahadun, this lowly one knows of a mystical technique. Once it is used, the person hit by it will seem to experience an abyssal hell, craving a death that he would not be able to receive!”

Sahadun’s eyes immediately flashed with a hint of vigilance, but it could not feel a single shred of psionic fluctuations from the boy. Hence, although it was alert, it was also very curious. As a result, it said, “Hurry, this Demon’s patience is running out.”

“Yes!” Shi Xiaobai nodded with excitement. He immediately clasped his hands and placed them before his chest, while he began chanting.

“The nigritude of the burning inferno! Burn unto my body! With the key of darkness, open up the doors of my goal! When the sky is shrouded in a red veil, the land and I will prostrate before you! Awaken, awaken, awaken! Use my blood and make it the most cruel Cursed Flame!”

Shi Xiaobai extended his arms as he cried out loud. He looked up into the sky, as if he was summoning the power of some form of darkness.

“Fragments of the King of Demons, the demonic command of the God of Torture, let the infinite nightmare demons descend upon us, scatter the boundless bones, and let the soul-devouring wraiths rain down their curses on the sinner in front of me...”

Shi Xiaobai shouted in vehement earnestness, as he constantly changed his actions. He appeared devoted yet passionate. It looked like he was really about to summon a terrifying existence and unleash an extremely amazing mystical spell.

However, a few minutes later, Shi Xiaobai was still chanting away. Sahadun immediately harrumphed coldly, “How dare you fool this Demon?”

Shi Xiaobai turned around and showed fearful reverence. He said with a placating smile, “I’m almost done. The only flaw of this mystical technique is that it requires a long chant. However, please rest assured Your Excellency, once this mystical technique is unleashed, it would definitely let you witness the cruelest form of torture in the world!”

A cold glimmer flashed in Sahadun’s eyes. Its patience had been completely worn off. It suddenly raised its right leg and kicked Shi Xiaobai in the chest. Shi Xiaobai immediately cried out as he flew backwards, landing heavily outside the sandpit.

“Your pathetic life will be spared temporarily. Watch and you will see how this Demon tortures humans. The cruelest form of torture in the world? This Demon will show it to you!” Sahadun immediately looked downwards at Little Fatso, whose face was completely covered in tears and snot. Sahadun revealed the cruelest smile.

“Stop!” Shi Xiaobai felt like his chest was being ripped apart after

being kicked. However, when he heard Sahadun's words, he immediately screamed.

Seeing Sahadun raise his right arm's sickle, Shi Xiaobai's eyes stared painfully as he shouted towards the sky loudly. "Hero! Hero! Hero..."

Sahadun was momentarily stunned as a derisive smile appeared on its face. It said, "Foolish human, so you were actually trying to stall for time. Unfortunately, this world doesn't have Heroes. You will not succeed in waiting for a Hero. Once this Demon is done torturing this foolish pig to death, true despair will be bestowed unto you."

Shi Xiaobai turned a deaf ear to Sahadun's words. He was in a frenzied state and constantly shouted "Hero". Every shout seemed to tear his throat apart as it echoed throughout the park, as if it was about to break past the gloomy mist of despair.

When Little Fatso heard this, he too began yelling together with him. The yelling that intertwined with a weeping accent echoed alongside Shi Xiaobai's yelling, as they resonated into the most heart-wrenching wails.

"Hero! Hero! Hero..."

"Shut up!" Sahadun bellowed in anger. Without any further hesitation, it swiped its sickle-shaped right hand towards Little Fatso's neck!

“Clang!”

A silvery moonblade blocked Sahadun’s sickle!

A not-so-tall figure had suddenly appeared between the calamity fiend and Little Fatso.

A charismatic voice filled with warmth, regret and anger echoed.

“The Hero is here!”

Author’s Note: Finally the first four chapters of abuse is done. Friends, an easygoing and interesting story will begin almost immediately!

Chapter 5: Can I Call You Big Brother?

“The Hero is here” were the words Shi Xiaobai was waiting all along for.

In fact, at the final moment when he failed during his second go, he had heard the same words. At the moment after Little Fatso was tortured to death by Sahadun, and with Sahadun walking over to him, he had slowly closed his eyes, but this line travelled into his ears—The Hero is here!

But following that, the fiery voice of “Make your choice, youth!” rang in his head. Hence, before he had the chance to catch a glimpse of the late Hero, time had returned to the paused state with the choices.

“If I can hold on till the Hero arrives, maybe we can be saved?”

This thought became the faith Shi Xiaobai needed in order to choose “Save Little Fatso” for the third time. To hold on until the Hero arrived, he needed to think of ways to stall for time.

However, after experiencing two failures, Shi Xiaobai knew very clearly that he was extremely weak in front of the calamity fiend. He couldn’t stand the slightest bit of torture, hence, to stall for time, bluffing or putting on airs was impossible for success.

Thankfully, Shi Xiaobai had received two very important pieces

of information during his second failure. The first was naturally that a Hero would come. The second was that the calamity fiend's name was Sahadun.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai thought of the most likely method to succeed—Flattery. He used the most exaggerated words and phrases to praise Sahadun, in an attempt to gain its trust, and at the very least, divert its attention.

The effect was beyond Shi Xiaobai's imagination. He never expected the calamity fiend to be so susceptible to praise, allowing Shi Xiaobai to let out a sigh of relief in his heart. However, every word of praise he said to Sahadun made him recall of the tragic cries under the sunset.

The more he praised Sahaun, the angrier he felt. He could not suppress the sorrow in his heart, as if his tears would instantly flow out of their floodgates, as though all the negative emotions were stirring in his stomach, making him want to barf all he could.

However, Shi Xiaobai knew that not only was he not to express his true emotions, he had to put on a show of fanatical devotion. This was very, very difficult, but Shi Xiaobai had managed to do it.

After obtaining Sahadun's "trust", he had to first and foremost save Little Fatso's life. Shi Xiaobai was very dumb, so he used the dumbest of methods, which was also the method of filling a victim with the greatest despair.

Only the Heavens knew how much he wished that all of this were

a dream when he kicked Little Fatso. When he shredded the hope in Little Fatso's eyes word after word, he had hoped so badly that he would immediately wake up from this painful nightmare.

In fact, he should have given Little Fatso a much worse beating, for only then would he be able to eliminate Sahadun's wariness. But damn it, he couldn't. After a single kick, he was already on the brink of collapse. He was playing the role of an evil character, the ones he had always hated on, but he longed in his heart to transform into a hero of justice who could put Sahadun down in one punch.

Dreams were beautiful, but reality was very cruel. Shi Xiaobai had done his best. He had even racked his brains to produce a long incantation that made no sense in the end, causing Sahadun to lose all of its patience. And with that, Shi Xiaobai was no longer able to stop him.

Shi Xiaobai, who was on the brink of despair, still had the last glimmer of hope that he would await the Hero's arrival. Hence, with this last shred of hope, he began to shout loudly.

The Hero really came.

Shi Xiaobai tried his best to resist crying, because he knew now was still not the time for him to cry. The moonblade-wielding Hero might have been able to block Sahadun's sickle-bladed arm, but the battle had only just begun. The most important question was whether the Hero could defeat the calamity fiend.

“Keep it up, Hero.”

Shi Xiaobai clenched his tiny fists tightly, as he moved carefully towards Little Fatso in the sandpit.

.....

.....

The Hero, who blocked Sahadun’s strike with his blade, dressed in a peculiar fashion. He was covered in a tight yellow jumpsuit with red gloves, boots and belt. He also wore a white cape behind him. Even stranger was his head. It was completely bald and could even reflect light off it.

It was a bald hero dressed like a generic superhero.

The atmosphere at this moment was similarly peculiar. After Sahadun’s right sickle-arm was blocked, its body began to violently tremble. Its deep blue eyes slowly turned crimson red, but not only did it not retract its right arm, it did not even seem to have any intention of doing anything with its left arm.

Even after the bald hero leisurely withdrew his blade, Sahadun still remained in his frozen state—right arm swinging half-way up—like a statue.

“How do you want to die? Chopped to death with one slice? Or smashed to death with one punch? Or...” The bald hero spoke as

his keen pair of eyes that were filled with murderous intent suddenly went blank when he put away his blade. His originally tensed facial features softened, and he momentarily looked kind of harmless.

“This...This Demon...” Sahadun spoke with a stutter as his body trembled even more intensely, as if the baldy in front of it was extremely terrifying.

“This Demon, this Demon doesn’t want to die!” Sahadun suddenly roared and twisted its body to escape in the opposite direction. The way it fled looked like a dejected dog.

Shi Xiaobai stared in astonishment. He only saw the bald hero raise his blade and aim for the fleeing Sahadun who was about to disappear from sight.

“Don’t tell me he can kill the calamity fiend with an air slash?” Shi Xiaobai watched with excitement. He looked at the superhero-dressed bald hero with eyes filled with admiration.

At this moment, an anxious girl’s voice appeared in the distance.

“Leave its head for me!”

When the bald hero heard this, he scratched his head and sheathed his blade into his scabbard. Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded as he looked at Sahadun, who was about to disappear from his field of vision, with an anxious heart.

Suddenly, an unforgettable scene for Shi Xiaobai appeared.

He saw that the calamity fiend, which had tortured him endlessly—the Sahadun that was so powerful that he had no way of resisting—had been sliced into numerous tiny pieces in an instant like a piece of tofu cut numerous times.

Shi Xiaobai was entirely unable to see what had happened, but at that instant, Sahadun fell apart, turning into a mess of minced meat.

At the same time, from the edge of his vision, a young girl slowly walked towards them.

As it was quite a distance away, Shi Xiaobai was unable to see the girl's face clearly. She was dressed in a t-shirt and shorts. She had white skin and her impressive figure was telltale.

“So cool!” For Shi Xiaobai, this was a moving scene that he would never forget in his entire life.

However, he did not focus on her for long. Instead, he crawled up, while enduring the pain in his abdomen, and then walked towards the sandpit.

“We did it, Little Fatso.. We survived.. We..”

The walking Shi Xiaobai slowly came to a halt as he saw Little Fatso retreating backwards in fear. His gaze at him was filled with dread.

“I’ve hurt him.. It’s all because I am too weak.. If I had been stronger, I would have had a better way of protecting him.” The joy in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes slowly diminished.

“Sorry...” Shi Xiaobai said to Little Fatso. His voice was filled with regret as he deeply lowered his head.

“Big Brother..” Little Fatso spoke in a sudden, crisp voice.

Shi Xiaobai looked up. That rotund face that was a convoluted mess of tears, snot and sand looked like an old soccer ball under the sunset’s illumination, appearing light, yet heavy.

“Do...Heroes exist?” Little Fatso asked in a whisper.

“Yeah!” Shi Xiaobai nodded his head strongly.

“Big Brother, you aren’t lying to me?”

“Yeah!”

“Am I a member of...Xiaobai’s Hero Squad?”

“Yea!”

“Mommy, Little Rat, Little Lei, all of them won’t die?”

“Yeah!”

“Big Brother, can I call you...Big Brother?”

“Yeah!”

“Wa...Wu Wu Wu~”

The tiny body leaped up from the sandpit and landed in a similarly small embrace that was just enough to accept him.

In the park at dusk, Little Fatso hugged Shi Xiaobai, bursting into tears.

Shi Xiaobai, who was fighting back his tears, could no longer hold them back. Two streams of tears poured out from his eyes.

“Wa~”

At this moment, this young, thirteen-year-old child let out a heart-wrenching cry.

Chapter 6: Hurry Up And Sign A Contract With This King

The simple dialogue, of two children hugging each other while crying their hearts out, seemed like it could be composed into a tear-jerking story after some arrangements. The cries that mixed bliss and grievance sounded like the most beautiful musical notes and the most elegant script.

The bald heros' eyes flashed with a trace of gentleness as he sighed.. He walked towards the girl who was complaining on her way here.

“Tsk, to think that it’s just an F-Class calamity fiend. This tiny bit of points isn’t even enough to fill the gaps in my teeth.”

The young girl was around 15–16 years old. She had a delicate face and had skin as white as snow. She had a ponytail behind her that made her look pretty and charming. Dressed in a white t-shirt and black shorts, her chest was propped up with a full curve, while her slim, straight legs had a graceful curve, showcasing her perfect figure.

Hearing the girl’s complaining, the bald hero smiled gently and asked, “Little Riko, what’s your ranking now?”

Riko furrowed her brow slightly. “Teacher One-Pun, you can’t add the word ‘Little’. Please call your student—Riko.”

One-Pun's dull eyes flickered with a faint amused look, as he nodded, saying, "Alright, Little Riko."

"Hmph!" Riko responded with an unhappy snort. However, she did not fuss over the matter any further, presumably because she had failed several times before.

Riko recalled the question One-Pun had just asked and lowered her head to look at something that looked like a watch on her wrist. She immediately sighed in a helpless manner, grumbling, "E-Class Hero. Ranked 321. Ahhh, I'm going crazy soon!"

Following that, she looked pitifully at her bald teacher and said petulantly, "Teacher One-Pun~ Help me capture a S-Class calamity fiend and let me get the last hit. Please, pretty please~"

One-Pun said in a serious manner, "Don't do that. It's sickening."

"Tch!" Riko's face immediately turned gloomy as she said hatefully, "Others don't even have the chance to see me act coy. Teacher One-Pun, you really don't know the blessings you have. Tch! You deserve being single your whole life."

One-Pun rubbed his round and shiny bald head in silence. He turned to look at the two children who were still crying.

Riko followed One-Pun's gaze and instantly saw Shi Xiaobai. At first glance, she determined that Shi Xiaobai was not a Psionite.

Secondly, she determined that Shi Xiaobai had no serious injuries.

“Wasn’t he just given a fright by a calamity fiend? He isn’t seriously injured, so is it necessary to cry so sadly? Tsk, I hate such cowardly and crybaby boys the most.” Riko, who was in a bad mood, was never one to mince her words.

“That child is very brave.” One-Pun, who had his back facing Riko, said. When he said those words, his expression was no longer a dull one, but of a rare seriousness.

Unfortunately, Riko did not get to see One-Pun’s expression. She retracted her gaze and said, “Let’s go. We came out here to look for people, not to comfort a coward. Those people from [Creation] have apparently found a Psyker. While for us, [Annihilation], we have yet to even obtain a rookie with an A-Class evaluation.”

One-Pun acknowledged her words as he continued staring at the two children not far away.

Riko stamped her feet and said angrily. “Hurry up, you big baldy teacher! As a member of [Annihilation], [Annihilation]’s honor is our honor. We cannot lose to [Creation] even if it’s the annual recruitment in terms of quality! We have to find a rookie that can completely outdo [Creation]!”

Riko noticed One-Pun ignoring her as she said with a sigh, “[Creation] has got a Psyker this year, while we don’t even have one. On this trip out, we have to find a rookie Psyker. Although Psykers were one in a million and would be snatched by various

organizations the moment they were awakened, finding one that has slipped through the net is even harder than winning the lottery. I will absolutely not give up easily!”

As Riko spoke, she thought of something that suddenly got her very emotional. “Heavens, why is my life so miserable? Why must I make a bet with that devious bitch!? I absolutely can’t lose! Psyker, oh Psyker, if you were to appear in front of me, I’ll give you my first kiss!”

At this moment, One-Pun turned around with an extremely strange expression.

“What’s wrong?” Riko looked at One-Pun’s expression with an ominous feeling.

“That child.” One-Pun pointed to Shi Xiaobai who was not far away.

“Ya?” Riko was puzzled.

“He is the Psyker you want.” One-Pun explained.

Riko was instantly dumbfounded.

.....

.....

Shi Xiaobai was crying his heart out. As a thirteen-year-old, he had led a peaceful, carefree but boring life in the other world called Earth.

Having suddenly crossed over to this different world with a similar level of technology, but with a completely different culture, he was initially filled with excitement. Especially when he had learned of the existence of Heroes and calamity fiends from passers-by, making him long for the future.

However, the short experience of less than an hour had made him suffer a torment that felt as long as a century.

He was initially determined to save Little Fatso from the beginning because of the A-level reward, as well as the guilt in his heart. After all, his lies had given Little Fatso false courage.

The second time he chose to save Little Fatso again was because he did not realize that the choices he faced could result in time resetting. He had thought of the first death to be a dream.

And for his third choice, he had struggled for a long time in his heart. His rationality had told him that he should choose [Escape], but the soccer ball that hit the calamity fiend told him of a reality that—when he encountered danger—Little Fatso did not choose to escape. In addition to the information of knowing that a Hero would arrive, as well as acknowledging that he could repeat it all again in the event of death, Shi Xiaobai, who lacked courage, chose [Save Little Fatso] with great difficulty.

However, he was afraid the entire time. If he were to fail a third time, would he still have the courage to pick [Save Little Fatso] a fourth time?

“I would have escaped, I would definitely have chosen escape. I, Shi Xiaobai am already a mortal.”

Just having these thoughts made Shi Xiaobai cry incessantly, only until a fiery voice rang in his head.

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations to the Host for obtaining an ‘A-level reward’—‘Psy awakening’.”

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt completely relaxed. The terrifying nightmare was finally over. Although he did not know what it meant by ‘Psy awakening’, he knew that an A-level reward couldn’t be too bad.

For some reason, the relaxed Shi Xiaobai felt like crying even more. Hence, he hugged Little Fatso and cried. He cried incessantly as if he was running all the tears in his lifetime dry.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai noticed that the bald hero and the invincible girl were walking towards him from a short distance away.

“Badump! Badump! Badump!”

Shi Xiaobai felt his heartbeat race, as the invincible girl was a person who had easily sliced Sahadun into a million pieces.

“If I can learn a move or two from her, I, Shi Xiaobai might also become a Hero!”

With this thought in mind, despite not done with his crying, Shi Xiaobai raised his finger and pointed towards the girl walking towards him, proclaiming loudly, “Girl, hurry up and sign a contract with This King!”

Translator’s Note: One-Pun is modeled after [One-Punch Man](#)’s Saitama, but he is not Saitama, nor is he invincible. There will be a few future characters who will be described to have the looks of certain Japanese manga characters, but they do not have many similarities with the manga counterpart other than looks. The author also stopped modelling characters after manga characters pretty quickly.

Chapter 7: Girl, Your King Is Here

His face was clearly still covered in tears, yet he had deliberately said the words “Girl, hurry up and sign a contract with This King!” in a dignified voice that was unable to hide his sniffing. That solemn yet sacred expression made Riko involuntarily stop in her footsteps. She even began to ponder over the meaning of this line.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai said again, “Sign a blood contract with This King and become a servant of The King, and you will obtain a millionth of This King’s power.”

Seeing Shi Xiaobai say such absurd words with such a serious face made Riko both annoyed and amused when she realized what had happened. You even address yourself as This King? You are clearly a cowardly crybaby. With this thought in mind, she gave him a derisive look.

Shi Xiaobai raised his hand to wipe his tears and said seriously, “This King broke through the confines of the void and arrived in this world, and had unfortunately exhausted all of This King’s cultivation. Now, although This King is of a mortal body, one day This King will reign supreme. Girl, don’t let this godsent opportunity slip by!”

Riko rolled her eyes as her impression of Shi Xiaobai added the word idiot above coward and crybaby. With Riko’s temper, if she were to encounter such an idiot, she would usually have cursed with a “screw off”, but it had to be that such an idiot was a one-in-

a-million Psyker. He was destined to be a genius crazily vied for by various organizations. Furthermore, it was key to winning her bet.

F*ck, this world is so unfair, isn't it?

Riko cursed in her heart and pretended not to hear what Shi Xiaobai had said. She began introducing herself. "Cough, my name is Riko Minamiya. This person beside me is Teacher One-Pun. We come from [Gaia]. We..."

"Wait!" Shi Xiaobai said in excitement. "The [Gaia] that you speak of, is it the Goddess of this Earth sitting beneath This King, Gaia?"

"What? You don't even know what [Gaia] is?" Riko's reaction to Shi Xiaobai was even more intense. She said in disbelief, "I'm surprised to know that there is someone on this planet that doesn't know of our [Gaia]! Are you really not a person of this world?"

Shi Xiaobai immediately said with a sneer, "Heh heh, Girl, you've finally touched the Door of Truth."

Seeing that their conversation was straying off-topic, One-Pun coughed and said, "[Gaia] is a global Hero organization."

"Hero organization!" When Shi Xiaobai heard the word "Hero", his eyes lit up, but he quickly lowered his head in rumination. He muttered to himself, "Since it's a Hero organization, then wouldn't [Gaia] be a rival of This King? No, it might even be an archenemy!"

When Riko heard this, she was instantly greatly disappointed. So this idiot had been taken in by other organizations. Indeed, even if he was an idiot, he was still a Psyker after all. There would still be plenty of people who would fight over him.

“This King’s Xiaobai’s Hero Squad may currently only have two members, but it will eventually stand at the peak of this world. If [Gaia] dares to hinder This King, then don’t blame This King for turning against you!” Shi Xiaobai looked up in high-spirits.

Riko took two seconds to react. She deeply felt like she had been toyed with, but Shi Xiaobai’s serious look made her unsure. It was like someone throwing a rock at you, saying that it was a bomb. It looked unbelievably stupid, but the expression on the person’s face was so serious, as if the rock was truly a bomb.

Riko lost the tiny bit of patience she had in her as her temper flared. She reached out her arm to grab Shi Xiaobai’s collar. She angrily said, “I am inviting you to join [Gaia], are you joining or not?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a moment before silently raising his head to meet Riko’s bright eyes. They stared at each other for a long time.

Riko suddenly thought of her offering first kiss in jest. Of course, she would not uphold such a casual remark. She was a person who would even disavow anything that had to do with a bet if she lost, what more a joke the person involved did not know? But at this

moment, while she looked into Shi Xiaobai's eyes that were as bright as the stars, she felt a strange feeling of discomfort in her heart.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai asked softly, "Does joining [Gaia] mean becoming a Hero?"

Caught by surprise, Riko loosened her hand and said carefully, "In theory, yes. Although as a rookie, you will have to go through a period of training and tests to become an official member of [Gaia], but as a Psyker, it shouldn't be a big problem for you. The passing rate of becoming an official member of [Gaia] in the 'Hero's Trial' has been over 90% over the years. Cough, as long as you put in some effort, the probability of becoming a 'Hero' is very high."

Riko added on in her heart, "But Heroes are separated into classes. An idiot like you would at best be one of the bottom few amongst F-Class Heroes."

Shi Xiaobai fell silent after hearing this because he couldn't understand what she had just said. However, that was not the point. Shi Xiaobai had already made up his mind, as he asked, "After joining [Gaia], can This King...Can I also be capable of defeating a calamity fiend like the one before?"

Riko could clearly see the thirst in Shi Xiaobai's eyes that made one's heart ache.

"This fool is pretty cute when he isn't being an idiot," Riko thought in her heart. With an expression of having been defeated

by him, she sneered, “Tch, for that F-Class calamity fiend that can’t be any more trashy than utter trash, anyone in [Gaia] will be able to take care of it easily.”

Although she had embellished her words with some exaggeration, Sahadun was indeed very weak for Riko. In front of One-Pun, it could only flee in fright.

“So the thing I once thought of as the physical form of despair is so weak... ..It’s so weak that I can’t help but despair...”

This thought appeared in Shi Xiaobai’s head. As he lowered his head in silence, he whispered a moment later. “I will join [Gaia]. I want to become a Hero.”

His voice was soft, so very soft, and seemed to sound somewhat nasal.

The look in Riko’s eyes gradually softened. Although he was an idiot, he was still a child. As an elder sister, she decided to be gentler to him in the future.

“Wahahaha!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly looked up and roared with laughter. “There will come a day when This King will let this world’s [Gaia] become a subject of This King! Laugh and be excited, girl. Your King is here!”

Riko could not hold back any longer, as she punched Shi Xiaobai in the head relentlessly.

“Ouch!” Shi Xiaobai immediately cried out in pain and took a few steps back. He bellowed, “To think that you are attempting to smash This King’s Invisible Crown to bits. Girl, don’t tell me you are an enemy sent by the Organization of Darkness?”

“Enemy your ass. Stand still for me!”

.....

As dusk faded away, darkness fell. Shi Xiaobai rubbed his forehead in pain, while Riko looked incensed not far away from him.

“Big Brother, I’m going home.” Little Fatso said with his soccer ball in hand.

“We have to leave too.” Teacher One-Pun reminded.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and walked towards Little Fatso. Seeing the rotund face that had been wiped dry of tears, but still had snot hanging by his nose, Shi Xiaobai said solemnly, “Name. Tell This King your name, young Demon King!”

Little Fatso used the back of his hand to wipe his snot and whispered, “Zhu Zhu...”

Shi Xiaobai gave Little Fatso a deep glance and then said solemnly, “Piggy [1](#), remember, you are the second member of Xiaobai’s Hero Squad, always!”

“Yea!”

Little Fatso nodded his head vigorously.

Author’s Note: I quite like Shi Xiaobai and Riko’s first exchange.

Chapter 8: I Can Only Rely On You

That night, Shi Xiaobai accompanied Riko and One-Pun to a huge villa. It was said to be a residence Riko had bought in this city. After having a simple meal, Shi Xiaobai went back to his room to sleep. During this period of time, Riko did not mention much regarding [Gaia]. She only said that she would bring him to their headquarters, Gaia Base, tomorrow.

Shi Xiaobai fell asleep soon after going to bed, but was woken up by Riko with a kick in the morning. While he was having his breakfast in a drowsy state, he saw a helicopter land in an empty spot in front of the villa.

By the time Shi Xiaobai gathered his thoughts, he realized he was sitting in the helicopter. Riko was sitting across him, but One-Pun had already disappeared.

“Where’s Uncle Baldy?” Shi Xiaobai asked as he caught sight of the white clouds amidst the blue sky outside the window before he began humming, “Puny world, shiver before This King’s feet!”

Riko rolled her eyes and snapped, “Teacher One-Pun left early because he has something going on. In a while, when we reach Gaia Base, don’t you keep saying ‘This King’. Not everyone possesses a temperament as mild as mine.”

Shi Xiaobai had his reservations regarding Riko’s remarks about her mild temperament, but he was still afraid of being violently

beaten up, so he whispered, “This King..”

“What?” Riko cast a murderous look at him.

“Tch!” Shi Xiaobai imitated Riko’s tone, but immediately suffered a beating. As he covered his head, he said in a wronged manner, “Enough, enough, This Emperor will not claim to be This King in the future...Ouch!”

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai, who had finally succumbed to Riko’s authoritative power after enduring several beatings, said in a melancholy timbre, “Girl, you must be a demoness sent by the God of Darkness..”

“Hmph!” Riko waved her fist as her face brimmed with a smile. She never expected bullying Shi Xiaobai would be such a pleasant thing.

.....

The helicopter flew all morning before it descended at noon. From the helicopter, Shi Xiaobai was able to see Gaia Base in its entirety.

High-rise steel buildings loomed like cold mountains, reflecting the sun’s blinding light. Iron-paved roads crisscrossed and differed from the silver-surfaced high-rise buildings. The roads were built with black steel, and looked like black, bottomless rivers from the sky.

“Welcome to Gaia Base—Steel City.” Riko playfully winked at him.

Shi Xiaobai sneered, “This will be the first fief This King will own in this world. Using it to be the base of Xiaobai’s Hero Squad would barely qualify...Ouch!”

Pulling back her fist, Riko began to space out as she looked at the approaching steel ground.

After disembarking the helicopter, Shi Xiaobai treaded cautiously on the steel surface. He realized that while it was sturdy and solid to the touch, it had a degree of flexibility. Furthermore, the ground was not hot as he had expected, instead, a sense of coldness seemed to linger above the ground. After bouncing and walking on the steel surface a few times, he realized it produced very little sound.

“The ground is produced from the shells of the Astral Calamity Beast, ‘Astral Steel Giant Beetles’. It possesses a hardness above ordinary metals, and its heat dissipation and noise reduction attributes are extremely good.” Riko involuntarily explained to Shi Xiaobai when she found him looking at everything with awe.

Shi Xiaobai was secretly astonished as he quietly took note of what Riko said.

As the two of them walked, they encountered a number of people who were driving past them. Many of them stopped to greet Riko with a “Miss Riko” and would also give Shi Xiaobai a complicated

look before driving away.

“I am quite famous in Steel City.” Riko raised her eyebrows while glancing at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai sneered in response. He felt animosity as well as mockery from the looks he was given.

After walking for a long while, Riko finally stopped in her footsteps. She pointed to a tall building in front and said, “We’re here.”

Shi Xiaobai looked over and realized this building was shorter than the other buildings. However, the compound’s boundary was clearly wider. A middle-aged man dressed in a suit stood by the entrance.

“Are they here?” Riko asked the middle-aged man as she arrived at the entrance.

“They are already here. Only you and this young sir remain.” The middle-aged man responded.

Riko nodded, and took the lead to walk through the gate. Shi Xiaobai followed closely behind. After passing through the gate, he heard the middle-aged man whisper to him, “Take care.”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he said with a smile, “Years ago,

someone told This King to take care [1](#), but he ended up being unable to slim down for three years. Uncle, don't raise any unwanted flags."

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai ignored the stunned middle-aged man and walked into the building.

Upon entering, Shi Xiaobai's eyes were immediately attracted by a smooth and bright metallic wall. He looked up and saw huge frames lined up across the wall. There was a high-spirited face imprinted in each frame.

"These are the Rookie Kings of [Gaia] over the years." Riko said in front of him.

"Rookie...King?" Shi Xiaobai followed half a step behind her.

"[Gaia] recruits rookies every year. After a period of training, a competition between all rookies is held. The strongest is given the title of Rookie King. The Rookie King's photo frame is then displayed in this Rookie Museum." Riko explained patiently.

"The strongest person amongst the rookies. A king-like figure!" Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up as he said with excitement, "The title of Rookie King is tailored for me, Shi Xiaobai! The first step in This King's journey shall be you—Rookie King!"

Riko was at a loss whether to cry or to laugh, but suddenly her eyes darted around, having come up with an idea. She immediately

said slyly, “Boy, I also believe that the title of Rookie King belongs to you. Work hard for I think highly of you!”

Shi Xiaobai gave her a cold stare. “Don’t do that. It’s sickening.. Ouch!”

Riko grunted while her fist was raised. She continued walking deeper into the building as Shi Xiaobai rubbed his forehead. As he slowly kept up behind her, he grumbled.

After a short moment of walking, they arrived at a metallic door that was slightly ajar. Riko stopped and took a deep breath.

“By the way, I think I haven’t told you the purpose of coming here today?” Riko suddenly said.

“So that’s it. There is a purpose behind coming here today.” Shi Xiaobai was enlightened as he raised his hands immediately in a defensive stance. He snapped, “Girl, you have finally revealed the true colors of yourself being an evil witch?”

In a rare instance, Riko did not roll her eyes but said with a sigh, “Today, I brought you here to partake in a Rookie Evaluation Test in name, but it’s actually a trap a few bitches had laid for me. Xiaobai, I’m sorry for implicating you in this trouble, but I...can only rely on you.”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised, and just as he wanted to say something, he saw Riko push the metallic door open. She had

walked in.

Following that, a shrill voice immediately erupted from inside, clearly entering Shi Xiaobai's ears.

“Oh, the weakest ‘Pontus’ in history and the trash rookie she has brought has finally arrived!”

Chapter 9: Owning The Entire World

“Oh, the weakest ‘Pontus’ in history and the trash rookie she has brought has finally arrived!”

Shi Xiaobai could tell the deep provocative tone in the shrill voice at the door, but he immediately heard Riko’s pearly voice in response.

“Tch, even the weakest Pontus is a Pontus. Some trash can’t even be one and can only look on with eyes of envy while barking like an abandoned dog.”

“What? Who are you calling the abandoned dog? Didn’t you become a Pontus only because you are His Excellency One-Pun’s student? If not, with your Hero Ranking, how can you even become a Pontus?”

“Tsk, for Teacher One-Pun to only take me in as his only student, that alone explains everything. The Hero Ranking is just a matter of time, and I will surpass the abandoned dog that is you sooner or later.”

.....

The shrill voice and Riko’s voice went back and forth in a heated argument.

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked in and jumped in fright when he saw what was inside. The room was extremely spacious. All sorts of exotic facilities were placed in here. Two large rows of seats lined each side of the room, rising upwards like staircases. On the seats to the left, there were three people sitting in random fashion.

And at this moment, there were four people standing in the middle of the room. Riko and a red-dressed woman were engaging in a war of words. Beside them were two teenagers. One of them looked quite handsome and had his hands crossed, like he was watching a good show. The other person looked very well-built as he kept gesturing with his hands while a distressed look hung on his face.

There was a high platform in the inner recesses of the room, resembling a rostrum in a lecture hall. At this moment, there were three older people sitting on the platform. An old man, a middle-aged man and a middle-aged woman. The three of them were looking straight ahead, as if they had no intention to stop the squabbling between the two.

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked towards Riko, as if no one noticed his arrival, or it could be said that even if they did, no one cared about his arrival.

At this moment, the red-dressed woman suddenly screamed, "Enough! Who knows if you and His Excellency One-Pun had engaged in some dirty deal? Who knows if you sold your body to become His Excellency One-Pun's student?"

The moment this was said, there was silence for a second.

“Pa!” The silence came to an abrupt halt at a sudden loud slap!

“Shut up!” Many roaring voices exploded in unison.

The three older people on the platform stood up.

The middle-aged man reprimanded, “Mu Hongli, do you know who are you talking about?”

The middle-aged woman said with a shrill voice, “How can His Excellency One-Pun’s name be used in vain?”

The elder said solemnly, “His Excellency One-Pun is not to be insulted.”

Riko, who had already sent out her slap, breathed violently out. She said coldly, “Mu Hongli, go back and reflect on what you just said.”

On Mu Hongli’s beautiful white cheeks, a pinkish palm print appeared. Her watery eyes seemed to well up with a mist of water vapor as she lowered her head and said with a trembling voice, “I.. I.. will personally apologize to His Excellency One-Pun.”

After that, she raised her head and looked hatefully at Riko, saying coldly, “But I will never acknowledge your qualification as Pontus. Also, don’t you forget our bet!”

After Mu Hongli said this, she turned around and saw the stunned Shi Xiaobai behind Riko. Immediately, her hatred for Riko extended to Shi Xiaobai. She stared ruthlessly at Shi Xiaobai before quickly walking to her seat on the right side of the room.

The handsome teenager moved to the right side of the room with a look of regret while shaking his head. Following that, the well-built youth also followed while scratching his head.

“Girl, you and that red-dressed witch made a bet?” Shi Xiaobai went to Riko’s side and asked in a whisper.

“Nothing much, just...a casual bet.” Riko revealed an unnatural smile before pointing to the seats on the left and said, “Go there and take a seat. Those three people are rookies participating in today’s Rookie Evaluation Test.”

“Alright.” Shi Xiaobai nodded his head before walking over to the left.

Riko watched Shi Xiaobai’s back and was about to say something, but for some reason, she could not force herself to open her mouth.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai, who was about to walk far into the distance, stopped. Without turning back, he suddenly said, “Girl, This King is a very, very, very...reliable person!”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai strode towards the seats on the left.

“Tch!”

Riko issued a disdainful jeer and turned to walk towards the right, but a charming smile had bloomed on her face.

.....

Shi Xiaobai was at quite a loss. What was Pontus? What was Riko and that red-dressed witch arguing about? What was the strange atmosphere in the room about? Shi Xiaobai had no clue at all.

Shi Xiaobai was desperately hoping he could ask someone. He glanced at the other three rookies that were seated in front of him. One of them was a blond youth about 12–13 years old, while there was a 8–9 year-old boy, as well as a 4–5 year old loli [1](#).

Shi Xiaobai instinctively walked towards the blond youth, but was immediately met with a scornful look. With a turn of his head, he saw the boy giving him the middle finger, and when he walked to the loli, she made a face at him.

“Foolish humans, to think they dare treat This King with such disrespect.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart. He nonchalantly found a seat and sat down. He then looked at the four people on the right side of the room, who were distancing themselves like water and fire.

“The four people on the left and the four people on the right, could there be some connection?”

Shi Xiaobai pondered over this for a moment before feeling irritated. “Who cares? This King will adopt the necessary measures depending on the situation.”

After the two sides took their seats, the elder on the platform stood up once again and took a few steps forward. With a cough, he immediately attracted everyone’s gazes.

“Riko Minamiya, Mu Hongli, Zhao Xiong, Fang Qingshan, the four of you are the respective young leaders of [Annihilation], [Creation], [Order], [Chaos]. Your every action will indirectly affect the prestige of the four Divisions. Therefore, even in the annual Rookie recommendations, you should not relax in your efforts.”

The elder asserted eloquently, when he suddenly looked to the right side of the room. With a twist in his words, he said, “Riko Minamiya, the rookie you introduced two years ago has disappointed the organization greatly. This year, you are not only the young leader of [Annihilation], you are even the Oceanic Pontus. I wish you will take things seriously and not let the organization down anymore.”

Riko replied with an unhappy “Tch”, while Mu Hongli laughed with gleeful mockery while covering her mouth.

The elder continued, “The same old rules apply. After the

rankings of today's four rookies are out, the organization will announce it officially internally. The first ranked Division will receive an increment in Division points, and the last place will receive a reduction in Division points. [Gaia] encourages competition and will reward the strongest, as well as punish the weakest!"

As Shi Xiaobai heard the elder's words, he was lost in deep thought. Suddenly, he saw the blond youth walk towards him, putting him on high alert immediately.

However, he saw the blond youth stop midway. His eyes were filled with burning disdain as he said to Shi Xiaobai with a mocking tone, "So you are just an ordinary person without any Psionic Power. It looks like Riko Minamiya is a rather unreliable person as the rumors go."

Shi Xiaobai's gaze turned a bit cold but he remained silent.

"For Senior Hongli to send me to take down trash like you, it is such an overkill."

The blond youth suddenly revealed a ferocious smile and pointed his thumb at himself, proclaiming loudly, "I am a one-in-a-million Psyker!"

Upon saying the word "Psyker", the blond youth's arrogant look made it seem like he owned the entire world.

Chapter 10: People Are Born Unequal

The blond youth's proud look seemed to be a proclamation of his superiority. At the same time, he was staring intently at Shi Xiaobai's expression, hoping to see looks of shock and admiration from that handsome face.

However, the blond youth was disappointed. Shi Xiaobai only slanted his head and asked with curiosity, "What is a...Psyker?"

The blond youth was stunned for a second as he stared intently at Shi Xiaobai. He realized that Shi Xiaobai did not seem like he was acting dumb in anyway, so he could only let out a dry laugh and mocked, "So it's just a bumpkin that doesn't know what a Psyker is. Riko Minamiya has wasted her recommendation on you. She is truly a foolish girl. Such a foolish girl has no right to be a Pontus. I will prove this to [Gaia] in a time to come."

After saying that, the blond youth turned around and returned to his seat. Shi Xiaobai was just about to say something when he immediately heard another derisive voice.

"Do you really not know, or are you pretending not to know?"

Shi Xiaobai traced the voice with his head and saw a boy, who was likely a rookie like him, sitting behind him.

"This King does not lie."

Shi Xiaobai really did not know what a Psyker was. He had an impression of Riko mentioning this word before, but back then, he was only concerned about becoming a Hero, so he did not pay attention to what Riko had said. When he first arrived in this world, he had heard some things about Psionites, but he had no clue when it came to Psykers.

“Then you will soon find out.”

The boy’s child-like voice seemed earnest, and Shi Xiaobai could even detect a whiff of resentment. “A Psyker is someone who makes people despair.”

“The term despair should not be said out loud so simply, as despair will make people unable to speak.”

Shi Xiaobai mused with a smile.

“It just so happens to be that This King is good at fighting despair.”

.....

The elder reiterated the importance of the recommendation chances to the four young leaders once again, hinting that if any of the four lacked confidence, they could take the opportunity now to switch their recommended rookie. Seeing the four people ignore his kind intentions, the elder sighed. He gave a meaningful glance

at Riko Minamiya before he began to announce the rules.

“The Rookie Evaluation Test is split into two stages. The first stage is an evaluation of one’s natural endowment, while the second stage is an evaluation of one’s ability. The natural endowment evaluation shall begin now. [Order] Rookie, Yang Yang, please come to the podium.”

The moment the elder finished his words, the boy sitting on the left stood up. His hands trembled, reflecting the nervousness appropriate for his age. He took a deep breath before walking up to the podium.

The handsome teenager sitting on the right looked at the well-built youth and asked, “This Yang Yang is the trump card of your [Order] that has the highest likelihood of entering the A-Class rookies?”

The well-built youth scratched his head. He looked honest, and his voice sounded powerful and good-natured. “He’s a good prospect.”

The boy, Yang Yang, slowly walked to the middle of the podium. Suddenly, a square metal box rose up from the ground slowly, like a telephone booth that had suddenly risen.

“Go in.” The elder said with a deadpan expression. At the same time, one face of the square metal box gradually opened. The interior looked complex and intricate, and there was room only for one.

Yang Yang bowed respectfully at the elder before entering the metal box. Following that, the metal door closed and the dull metal box's surface began to emit a faint golden glow.

Shi Xiaobai watched this at a loss. He was filled with curiosity, when suddenly, he saw a series of fluorescent text appear on a large metallic wall beside the podium. The entire wall looked like a gigantic liquid crystal display.

The text began to scroll from top to bottom in streaks, as the constantly changing numbers dazzled Shi Xiaobai.

After a considerable amount of time, a line of text appeared at the highest spot on the wall—"Mind Expanse: A+ Class."

"Not bad." A gleeful look flashed in the elder's eyes as he made a praising remark. However, his eyes were still stared intently on the text shimmering on the metallic wall. It was not only limited to him. Other than Shi Xiaobai, everyone present was closely monitoring the changes on the metallic wall.

It seemed like they were waiting for something even more important.

Finally, at the top of the wall, another line of text appeared—"Psy-genes: None."

When this line of text appeared, other than Shi Xiaobai, everyone

withdrew their gazes. The numbers on the metallic wall also stopped scrolling.

“In terms of Mind Expanse, he is ranked amongst the top of the rookies of recent years.” The elder said lightly.

Yang Yang came out of the metal box. He did not seem any different on the surface. He nodded at the elder before silently returning to his seat.

“It’s sooo impressive to have an A+ Class Mind Expanse~” The blond boy said with a eccentric-sounding voice, causing Yang Yang’s facial expression to change.

“I’m so envious. To have A+ Mind Expanse, I want it too...Wu Wu Wu~” A loli with a bit of baby fat pursed her lips as she looked at Yang Yang earnestly.

Yang Yang’s eyes turned hazy as he sat in his seat with his head lowered, while remaining completely silent.

At this moment, the elder’s voice emerged once again.

“[Chaos] Rookie, Zhong Yue’er.”

The little loli smirked with a gleeful giggle as she briskly skipped over to the podium. She was eager to enter the metallic box and did not seem nervous at all, as if she was entering a most interesting game.

The illuminated text on the metallic wall began to shimmer, and in a while, another row of text appeared at the top—"Mind Expanse: D-Class."

Shi Xiaobai was silently comparing A+ and D-, and then immediately realized the reason why Zhong Yue'er was looking at Yang Yang with earnest eyes. At the same time, that made him more at a loss why Yang Yang's expression looked so heavy.

At this moment, another line of text appeared—"Psy-genes: F Class."

"Nice!" The expressionless elder suddenly revealed a beaming smile. The middle-aged man and woman beside him also nodded their heads, looking very satisfied.

Fang Qingshan looked at Zhao Xiong and said with a chuckle, "This Zhong Yue'er can only be ranked third amongst [Chaos]'s batch of rookies this year."

A tinge of heaviness appeared on Zhao Xiong's good-natured face, before he said seriously, "Yang Yang is ranked first in [Order]."

Fang Qingshan seemed to immediately lose all interest. He turned his head and no longer spoke, while Zhao Xiong clenched his fists tightly, releasing a deep sigh.

At the same time, the metallic wall's text was suddenly cleared,

leaving two gigantic rows of text.

[Rank 1: Zhong Yue'er, Mind Expanse: D-, Psy-genes: F]

[Rank 2: Yang Yang, Mind Expanse: A+, Psy-genes: None]

The little loli was already out of the metal box as she carried on bouncing back to her seat. As she passed Yang Yang by, she made a face at him and said in a childish manner, “Hmph, I’m stronger than you.”

Yang Yang remained silent as his shoulders trembled.

The blond youth’s mocking laughter resounded at this moment. “Do you get it now? This is the difference between a lofty Psyker and an inferior Psionite. Regardless of how expansive your mind is, even the lowest Psy-gene is enough to reverse everything. No matter how expansive your mind is, in front of a Psyker, it is all trash.”

At this moment, the elder announced, “Next, [Creation]’s rookie, Kevin.”

The blond youth wiped the smile from his face and walked

towards the platform with his chest up high. As he walked past Shi Xiaobai, he sneered and said, “This Young Lord will tell you what it means that people are born unequal.”

Chapter 11: This King Takes Back Everything He Just Said

The blond youth, Kevin spoke with a demeanor bloated with arrogance. When he walked into the evaluation box, he did not look nervous like Yang Yang, nor did he look as playful as Zhong Yue'er. To put it more accurately, he looked like a performer, as if the upcoming evaluation was just a performance used to flaunt himself.

Soon, Kevin's first result came out—"Mind Expanse: B Class."

It was higher than Zhong Yue'er's, but lower than Yang Yang's. It was likely an average result, as the expressions of the three older people did not seem change much. Their eyes were still staring intently on the metallic wall. By then, Shi Xiaobai already understood that the second result was key.

Under everyone's attention, the number on the metallic wall rapidly changed, before the second line of text—the most important one—was revealed: "Psy-genes: C Class."

"C.. C Class?" At the instant the results came out, the elder stared with widened eyes. He spoke with a trembling voice, while the middle-aged man and woman beside him looked exhilarated and began exchanging whispers.

The expression of Fang Qingshan, who was sitting on the right side of the room, changed slightly as the red-dressed Mu Hongli chuckled. She gave Riko a provocative glance which was ignored;

however, Riko's expression turned more serious.

After taking in the expressions of all these people, even if he did not know the true meaning behind C Class Psy-genes, Shi Xiaobai could tell that Kevin had succeeded in his game of ostentation.

“Kevin is a true genius.” A deep voice spoke out as Shi Xiaobai turned his head to look over. He realized Yang Yang was behind him without him even knowing it.

Shi Xiaobai did not respond. Very clearly, Kevin was currently ranked first amongst the three people who had undergone the test. He did not know this world's definition of a genius, so even though he did not think highly of it, he did not express his views.

“Psionites and Psykers are like ordinary people and geniuses. A Psyker who reaches C-Class is already a genius amongst geniuses. Even organizations bigger and stronger than [Gaia] would nurture C-Class Psykers as valuable talent. Kevin would definitely be considered one of the most important rookies in this [Gaia] batch.”

Despite saying words that flattered others, Yang Yang's childlike face had a matureness that did not seem to match his age. Following that, he said something that would even make adults ponder deeply.

“As for me, I'm just...an ordinary person with a more expansive mind. There will always be a most despairing distance between geniuses and ordinary people.”

Shi Xiaobai could clearly tell how indignant he was through the childlike boy's eyes, yet he had to hear him say words that sounded like he had completely yielded. This angered Shi Xiaobai greatly as he said coldly, "In This King's eyes, everyone is an ordinary person. A so-called genius is just an ordinary person who works harder."

Yang Yang looked up, as if he was moved by his words. However, his eyes seemed to put up a wall of self-mockery as a self-defensive mechanism. "You are wrong. An ordinary person, no matter how hardworking, would never become a genius. That's because a genius is innate."

"That's right. People are born unequal."

Kevin was already standing in front of them, revealing a victorious smile. "Geniuses are destined from birth to surpass ordinary people. Be it this tiny evaluation, the resources the organization uses for nurturing, or the various kinds of competitions in the future, a genius will forever run ahead of ordinary people."

"You are an ordinary person amongst ordinary people who are even inferior to Psionites. As for me, I am a super genius that possesses C Class Psy-genes. You are destined to be forever left behind by me!"

Kevin turned around to walk away after speaking. The thing he loved to do most was to mock weaklings and then heartlessly rob the the weak of the right to lament.

Shi Xiaobai saw Kevin, who had his back facing them, nearly covering his ears to indicate that he did not want to hear any retorts from them. Shi Xiaobai felt very, very depressed.

“Eh, after all this nonsense, This King still doesn’t know what a Psyker is!”

Shi Xiaobai sighed and suddenly heard the elder announce his name. Immediately, he stood up, feeling slightly disturbed. He gave Yang Yang a nod and then waved his hand at the distant Riko, as though he was about to enter an arena.

“It seems like This King can no longer remain silent.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai came in front of the metal box. The elder gestured to Shi Xiaobai to quickly enter, but after a moment of hesitation, Shi Xiaobai suddenly said, “Wait a moment. This King has something to say.”

The elder’s expression froze. Clearly, he was quite surprised with the self-salutation “This King”.

By then, Shi Xiaobai had already turned around to walk to the middle of the platform, attracting everyone’s attention. He raised his left hand, pointing to the seats on the left and said loudly, “Blondy Narcissist and Pleasant Goat [1](#), listen to what This King has to say!”

Kevin, who had been pointed at, took a few seconds before he realized that “Blondy Narcissist” referred to himself. Immediately, he was not pleased with this. Yang Yang was stunned for a moment before his expression turned extremely strange.

“This King does not know what this ‘Psyker’ thing is all about, nor do I know why Pleasant Goat is so dejected, even more do I not know if Blondy Narcissist meant to say all that nonsense as a lullaby.”

Shi Xiaobai looked up to survey the people around him and had a solemn expression. It looked like he was delivering a stately lecture.

“However, This King knows that your theory about geniuses and ordinary people is flawed. It is tendentious, and something thought of using a goblin’s brain!”

“A so-called genius is just an ordinary person with charms, a hardworking ordinary person, an entranced ordinary person and an ordinary person who forgets himself! In the end, they are still ordinary people!”

“This King wants to tell you that this world has no fated genius. There will be no everlasting genius, nor is there a genius that isn’t hardworking! Geniuses do not last a moment, nor are they born. Neither do they receive this title just with the word ‘Psyker’!”

“If all of you insist on refusing to realize your errors in this theory of geniuses and ordinary people! Then fine, This King shall

tell you another fact—This world actually does not have any geniuses!”

“Do not be dejected just because you are not a genius. Even more so, do not thinking highly of yourself because of being a so-called genius. This is because this world does not have any geniuses, only the strong!”

“A hardworking ordinary person can become one of the strong, while a lackadaisical genius will never be fated to be one of the strong!”

“Do you understand? This world doesn’t have any geniuses! Only the strong!”

Shi Xiaobai turned more impassioned towards the end, nearly delivering his speech with an angry bellow. After saying that, he immediately entered the metallic box. With a slam, he closed the metallic door heavily, while the room echoed with his final words and the sound of the slammed door.

Yang Yang clenched his fists tightly as he lowered his head and pondered over Shi Xiaobai’s words that kept echoing in his head.

Kevin had an extremely ugly expression on his face, but it was mostly anger and scorn.

The three older people on the high platform had the calmest reactions. They even shook their heads. They had seen many

geniuses, so they knew the difference between a genius and an ordinary person..

Sitting on the right, Fang Qingshan did not have much of an expression, but his eyes narrowed with a facetious look in them.

A relieved look appeared on Zhao Xiong's good-natured face before he quickly thought of something. His expression turned serious as a result.

Mu Hongli looked at Riko and sniggered. "This idiot who keeps calling himself 'This King' is the rookie you found? He sure has the courage, but unfortunately he's a tad foolish."

Riko was cursing the pigheaded Shi Xiaobai in her mind, but she laughed coldly. "Sometimes, foolish people can have dumb luck. I happen to like Shi Xiaobai's forthrightness, and not like that Blondy Narcissist you found. It's as if the world revolves around him. Doesn't he know that however strong you are, there is always someone stronger? A C Class Psyker? Tch~"

Mu Hongli's expression changed slightly, but she did not retort. She too did not like Kevin's megalomania.

The two of them continued on in a war of words before turning their gazes towards the metallic wall, where the numbers were still changing. No matter how much they argued, the evaluation's result was most crucial.

.....

After entering the metallic box, numerous beams of light shone on Shi Xiaobai, as they constantly scanned his body.

“To dare make an attempt at analyzing This King’s body. What a naive machine.”

Shi Xiaobai mocked the metallic wall for a moment before recalling the impassioned speech he said outside and immediately felt a bit excited.

“These foolish mortals must have been convinced by This King’s words. How dare mere mortals address themselves as geniuses in front of This King? It’s completely asking for an insult.”

After dazing in the enclosed space for a moment, Shi Xiaobai could not help but think of several questions, and suddenly felt anxious.

“Eh, what if the natural endowments possessed by This King’s mortal body in this world is completely trash..?”

He hurriedly shook his head, abandoning the amusing thought. “What a joke. How can This King be impeded by a mere evaluation test like this?”

Although he had this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai still stuck his ear to the metallic wall, in an attempt to hear the commotions

outside. Logically speaking, if his natural endowments were any good, that old grandpa would definitely have made a big fuss over it.

However, Shi Xiaobai was disappointed. There was not a single commotion, much less a big fuss.

After a while, the light beams that constantly scanned his body disappeared. The metallic box fell into darkness and the evaluation test was over.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and suddenly felt a bit nervous. It felt just like back in the day, whenever he handed his examination manuscripts to his teacher, he would always pray incessantly that he could score more than ten points that one time.

Shi Xiaobai opened the metallic door and slowly walked out of the metallic box. His mind and body observed everything outside the box, as he felt a repressive atmosphere. He realized that the room had completely fallen into silence.

Turning around, he saw the elder focusing his gaze on him. His gaze appeared like he had seen a ghost, and his body was trembling like a patient who could collapse at any time.

With a gulp, Shi Xiaobai slowly looked up at the two rows of text on the metallic wall. The results of his evaluation immediately entered his eyes.

“Mind Expanse: S Class.”

“Psy-genes: S Class.”

After a cursory glance, Shi Xiaobai immediately waved his hand and shouted loudly, “Everyone! This King takes back everything he just said. This world does have geniuses!”

Chapter 12: So We Were Overthinking The Situation!

When the text on the metallic wall fixated on the words “Mind Expanse: S Class, Psy-genes: S Class”, everyone turned dumbfounded.

Kevin was dumbfounded. He recalled Shi Xiaobai acting ignorant, implying that he didn't know what a Psyker was, followed by how he looked dazed after his cocky act. He finally recalled Shi Xiaobai's depressed expression after he left quickly, having mocked him in underhanded fashion. At this moment, as he looked at the two rows of text, he felt a pain in his face. It was very painful, extremely painful. F*ck, is it that fun acting the pig to devour the tiger?

Yang Yang was dumbfounded. He was still relishing in the Kool-aid Shi Xiaobai brewed for him. It was a bowl of chicken soup for the soul named, “No Geniuses, Only the Strong”. But he suddenly realized that the person who brewed the bowl of chicken soup was a genius several times more of a genius than Kevin. He immediately felt a bitter taste linger in his mouth. Damn it, this bowl of chicken soup is poisoned!

The three older people on the platform were dumbfounded. As senior members of [Gaia] with a rather lengthy resume, they had witnessed numerous Rookie Evaluation Tests. However, this was the first time they encountered a double S Class result. If not for their absolute confidence in the evaluation machine's accuracy, they would probably scramble to check if there had been any chances of fraud.

Riko was also dumbfounded. Although she had learned early on from One-Pun that Shi Xiaobai was a Psyker, she did it with an attitude of treating him as a Hail Mary effort, so she had never expected Shi Xiaobai's natural endowment to be so terrifying. Shi Xiaobai was probably the rookie with the highest natural endowment ever since the establishment of [Gaia]. Riko was laughing herself silly, thinking how lucky she was to have come by this treasure.

After everyone was dumbfounded, they involuntarily thought of the final words Shi Xiaobai said before entering the evaluation box.

Shi Xiaobai said that geniuses were ordinary people who worked hard, but they were after all ordinary people.

Shi Xiaobai said that an ordinary hard-working person could become one of the strong, and a lackadaisical genius would never be fated to be one of the strong.

Shi Xiaobai said that this world did not have any geniuses, only the strong.

When Shi Xiaobai said those impassioned words, they were more or less moved, but most of them scoffed at it. However, as they gave his words careful thought, they were suddenly enlightened. Shi Xiaobai said those words not for them, but as a warning for himself!

Shi Xiaobai was telling himself that although he was a genius

amongst geniuses, he did not believe he was stronger than others. If he did not work hard, he would never become one of the strong. This world did not have geniuses. Shi Xiaobai felt disdain for becoming a genius. He wanted to be one of the strong, and for that, he would work harder than anyone!

Was there anything more persuasive than a remark from a genius with two S Class evaluations?

Nearly everyone felt admiration for him. They imagined themselves in his shoes. If I were to have dual S talents like Shi Xiaobai, will I be able to remain so modest and maintain the purest of intentions, so as to strive to become stronger?

The answer was no, they could not do it. A person with dual S talents probably numbered less than a handful in China. Any organization would treat that person as a hot potato, but also a precious gem. If they were Shi Xiaobai, even if they could maintain a false sense of modesty, they would definitely not be able to say those sincere words.

Shi Xiaobai was not only a genius, he was, in fact, even more likely to be a genius that was more hard-working than any of them!

This understanding made everyone's mood turn heavy. An inexplicable emotion began to brew in their hearts. They closed their mouths without prior arrangements, as they stared at the thirteen-year-old youth that had just walked out the metallic box.

The youth wasn't very tall or short, nor was he fat or thin. He

had delicate facial features, with eyes bright like the stars, and was dressed in clean clothes. He was not considered suave, nor did he look extremely handsome. He was the type of person who would be filtered out by one's brain when placed in a crowd.

But such a youth was clearly more of a genius than anyone else, yet he was the one who spurned geniuses more than anyone. Clearly, he did not need to work as hard as anyone, but was more motivated than anyone to work hard.

What sort of soul was hidden beneath Shi Xiaobai's plain exterior?

Everyone was lost in thought when they suddenly heard Shi Xiaobai's hard-hitting voice.

"Everyone! This King takes back everything he just said. This world does have geniuses!"

Everyone was stunned, thinking that they had misheard him, but it was quickly followed by Shi Xiaobai's second sentence.

"This King is a genius. Hahahaha~! Tremble and be filled with despair. Mortals, the true genius is here!"

Shi Xiaobai's unbridled laughter echoed in the spacious room, assaulting their every nerve.

Holy shit, so we were overthinking the situation!

Shi Xiaobai is a complete idiot!

Such a foolish idiot is a dual S class genius?

In that case, aren't we worse than an idiot?

What the f*ck, this world sure isn't fair!

.....

.....

“Why do these ordinary people look like they want to devour This King?”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly found something amiss with the atmosphere. Instinctively, he quickly walked towards the seats on the left from the platform. He noticed how everyone's gazes were following him, giving him the creeps.

“Could a jealous demoness have captured their hearts and minds? This King better be careful!”

Shi Xiaobai gingerly moved to his seat and realized Yang Yang was looking at him with complex looks from behind. Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up and immediately blinked his eyes at Yang Yang.

“Praise This King. Hurry, hurry...”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes blinked even faster, but after blinking all day, he realized Yang Yang had failed to receive his intentions, turning him melancholic.

“Back then, Pleasant Goat wasn’t like this when he was praising Blondy Narcissist. This King is so much more of a genius than Blondy Narcissist, so why aren’t you praising This King?”

Seeing Yang Yang ignore him, Shi Xiaobai immediately turned towards Kevin who wasn’t far away. He waved his hand and said, “Hey, Blondy Narcissist!”

Shi Xiaobai found Kevin’s logic to be very reasonable. Humans were born unequal. For example, wasn’t he, Shi Xiaobai destined to lead an extraordinary life from the moment he was born?

Shi Xiaobai cast a kind smile at Kevin, but Kevin turned to look away with an ashen face. This made Shi Xiaobai even more melancholic.

“The path of the King is indeed lonely.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he felt that they had hurt his fragile heart.

“Shi Xiaobai, I believe what you said was right. A genius does not

equal to being one of the strong.” Suddenly, Yang Yang’s passionate voice rang in his ears.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he suddenly recalled himself saying something similar just a moment ago. Just as he was about to cough to correct the incorrect point of view, he heard Yang Yang say solemnly, “I am not a Psyker, but I’m [Order]’s most promising rookie that has a chance of becoming this batch’s A Class rookie. That’s because the second stage of the Rookie Evaluation Test is a test of one’s ability. It’s not a comparison of talent, but the accumulation of each person’s hard work.”

“So Shi Xiaobai, if you can convince me whole-heartedly in the evaluation of ability, I will acknowledge that you are not only a genius, but truly one of the strong!”

Yang Yang’s eyes flickered with intense fighting spirit and an endless amount of anticipation. Shi Xiaobai might have said those words previously out of jest, but Yang Yang had taken those words to heart. He sincerely hoped that those words were true. Only then could he persist in this belief. For this, he had to first prove that Shi Xiaobai, who said those words, was authentic.

Looking into Yang Yang’s eyes, Shi Xiaobai, who wanted to say, “This King does not need your acknowledgment”, had for some reason said, only with a smile, “This King is not afraid of any challenge.”

Chapter 13: Shi Xiaobai's Confidence Is Shaken

The strange atmosphere in the room loomed for a period of time before it gradually dissipated. After all, the Rookie Evaluation Test was not yet over. [Gaia]'s evaluation of rookies was typically split into two, “natural endowment” and “ability”. Over the years, there was no lack of rookies who had extremely high “natural endowment”, but received terrible evaluations due to extremely low “Ability” scores. As such, Shi Xiaobai's final evaluation was still uncertain.

However, certain things were just clear-cut.

Riko smiled beautifully as her gaze turned smug, “Mu Hongli, do you still remember our bet? Go home and pack up, for I happen to lack a maid servant to order around. Ke Ke~”

Mu Hongli's face sank and looked indignant. She said hatefully, “Our bet is the final outcome of the rookie evaluation. It has only been the first stage.”

Riko smiled widely and did not think much of it. “Shi Xiaobai has already led Blondy Narcissist by so much in the first stage. Unless Shi Xiaobai receives zero points in the second stage and receives a “Useless Person” verdict, Blondy Narcissist is definitely losing.”

Mu Hongli also knew in her heart that the chances of Kevin

winning was extremely low, but she refused to admit it verbally. She snubbed back, “Who knows, maybe Shi Xiaobai will really get zero?”

Riko gave Mu Hongli a look, as though she was watching a retard. Mu Hongli opened her mouth halfway but remained silent. Getting zero points in the second stage was truly unheard of.

Regardless of how idiotic Shi Xiaobai was, he was still a genius after all. He couldn't be so bad that he couldn't score a single point, right?

.....

Shi Xiaobai was now filled with fighting spirit, as he had just accepted Yang Yang's challenge. As for what the challenge entailed, cough, he temporarily had no idea.

“This King will adopt the necessary measures depending on the situation.”

Shi Xiaobai had such a thought in mind, but he had pricked up his ears, making sure to attentively listen to the elder explaining the rules of the ability test.

“The second stage's ability test is to assess one of the most basic abilities of a Hero, shooting.”

Upon hearing the elder's words, Shi Xiaobai was a bit stunned.

When did shooting become the most basic ability of a Hero?

Don't tell me the Heroes of this world relied on firearms, spraying around with machine guns? Shi Xiaobai was immediately disappointed. The Heroes in his heart needed to beat calamity fiends with their punches, kicking Astral Calamity Beasts and slashing extraterrestrial motherships with a sword. They could not rely on external forces, much less technology.

“Why is shooting ability one of the most basic abilities of Heroes? Don't tell me Heroes do not use [cold weapons](#)?” Shi Xiaobai forwent his dignity as King and asked Yang Yang shamelessly.

“Are you serious?” Yang Yang rolled his eyes at him.

“Of course!” Shi Xiaobai nodded seriously.

“I really have no idea if you are acting the fool or you truly are a fool.” Yang Yang could not help but denigrate him. After a moment of hesitation, he seriously explained to Shi Xiaobai, “Although Psionites are split into several realms, most Psionites are in the weakest Psionic Mortal Realm.” And a majority of Heroes are in the Psionic Mortal Realm. That means Psionic Mortal Realm Heroes are basically F Class Heroes, but these F Class heroes form the bedrock of society's general safety. Most criminals and terrorists are apprehended by F Class Heroes. At the Psionic Mortal Realm, one isn't able to perfectly withstand the strike from a bullet, so using a cold weapon is greatly inferior to firearms in terms of power. Hence, to F Class Heroes at the Psionic Mortal Realm, the best choice of weapon is a firearm.”

“To anyone who has the ambition of becoming a Hero, their shooting ability is considered a basic ability, as most people can only be stuck, struggling in the Psionic Mortal Realm,” Yang Yang recited without any expression. “On the other hand, Psykers are a bit of a special case. A number of Psykers would have sufficient means to resist firearms at the Psionic Mortal Realm, but most Psykers at the Psionic Mortal Realm typically have offensive strength less than a gun. Hence, one’s shooting ability is something that has to be definitely mastered by Psykers. In conclusion, be it Psionites or Psykers, before they break through from the Psionic Mortal Realm to the Psionic Soul Realm, firearms have an advantage over cold weapons. After they make the breakthrough, the reverse situation happens. Those Heroes above D Class basically only use cold weapons.”

Having heard a bunch of terms from Yang Yang that he had never heard of before, Shi Xiaobai was immediately filled with confusion, but that did not stop him from asking further.

On the other side, the elder had finished explaining the rules for the second stage.

Once the elder was done, the wall with the shimmering numbers suddenly went white. On the gigantic white screen, the four rookies’ names were written on the top left hand corner, followed by a number. At this moment, the numbers were all “0”.

The ability test was simple but had a strong smell of gunpowder. The four rookies would compete on the same platform, while black target spots would randomly appear on the large white screen. The

four of them could only use laser guns to shoot at it. The person who hit the target first would score a point. After a target was struck, the next target would randomly appear, and there would be a total of a hundred targets.

The randomness here both referred to the location of the target, as well as the time interval between the appearance of the targets.

Such a test could assess the rookie's reaction, shooting speed as well as shooting accuracy. It could be considered quite a well-rounded test subject.

Shi Xiaobai took a laser gun from the elder. It looked quite similar to a normal pistol. He curiously pressed the trigger, and a red beam of light shot out of the barrel. Immediately, Shi Xiaobai turned playful and began shooting laser beams at everyone in the room with “Pew Pew Pew” sounds. Only when the elder stopped him with a blackened face did he stop in resentment.

The other three rookies standing in line with Shi Xiaobai did not appear as relaxed as him. They were extremely nervous. Shi Xiaobai's dual S natural endowment in the first stage had already determined that he would be first at this rookie evaluation. To the three of them, the second stage was even more important.

Shi Xiaobai was indeed not worried at all. He was already trying to figure out how to dismantle the laser gun.

“Hey, Xiaobai, how's your shooting ability?”

A pearly girl's voice echoed, making Shi Xiaobai turn around to see Riko standing behind him. He did not know when that happened.

“Don't worry. Be it [Counter-Strike](#) or [CrossFire](#), This King has already attained perfection. No one can match me in shooting ability. Girl, do you want to try?”

Shi Xiaobai answered with great confidence, raising the laser gun at the girl's face.

Riko was stunned upon hearing that. She kept feeling that there was something strange about this, and subconsciously punched Shi Xiaobai in the face. As this world did not have the two games, Counter-Strike and CrossFire, Riko did not know what Shi Xiaobai was referring to. But from his confident expression, she felt assured. However, she still made it a point to say, “Anyway, as long as you do not get zero points, that's all that matters, even if it's just one point.”

“Tch~” Shi Xiaobai felt disdain towards her statement, but for some reason, took the opportunity to ask, “What happens if I get zero?”

Riko hesitated for a while and felt that there was no point hiding it from him at this stage. Hence, she said, “Cough, that red-dressed ugly freak and I had previously made a bet. As long as you exceed zero points, I'll win.”

“So that's the case. Rest assured, Girl. Since This King has

already signed a blood pact with you, I will naturally help you win your bet!” Shi Xiaobai patted himself on the chest.

Riko rolled her eyes at him. Seeing that the test was about to begin, she exhorted him once more before walking slowly to her seat on the right.

“What a joke. How can This King get zero points? Naive girl.”

Realizing that he just needed to obtain one point, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt extremely relaxed. What a joke. Although he never managed to break past ten points during his school examinations, he had never received zero points before. For this, Shi Xiaobai was rather confident.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Suddenly a fiery voice resounded in Shi Xiaobai’s mind. Time halted along with it, as everyone in the room froze.

Two rows of black text slowly appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai.

That scamming scene from the “Absolute Choice” system had appeared once again!

[Choice 1: During the test, only one shot can be made without opening your eyes (Reward: E-level)]

[Choice 2: Directly give up. Pass the test with zero points
(Reward: D-level)]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice’s mission will give a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a moment after seeing the two rows of black text.

“D-level reward..Looks like it’s possible for This King to get zero points.”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai’s confidence was shaken.

Chapter 14: Why Did I Agree

Shi Xiaobai looked at the two choices in front of him and felt that there was a deep sense of malevolence. If he chose to directly give up, then he would receive zero points for the ability test. If he chose to close his eyes and only shoot once, then it would be highly probable that he would receive zero points, with a minuscule probability of him receiving one point.

Regardless of his choice, Shi Xiaobai's result for his ability test would be terrible. It could be said that there was not much difference between the two choices. However, the latter was a D-level reward, while the former was a E-level reward. Logically speaking, Shi Xiaobai's best choice was to directly give up and receive a D-level reward.

However, he had just promised Riko that he would not receive zero points. As such, one point and zero points had a qualitative difference to him. The only thing was that this one point was not easily obtainable.

On one side was the better D-level reward, while the other side was a slim chance of getting more than zero points. What should Shi Xiaobai choose?

“Hai, a King's promise is more important than anything else. Besides, This King has reincarnated thousands of times and has never obtained zero points before. How can such a precious first be sacrificed for a mere D-level reward? If it was a C-level reward,

that would be more like it...”

Shi Xiaobai vexed over it all day before finally choosing—[Choice 1: During the test, only one shot can be made without opening your eyes (E-level reward)].

...

Against a randomly appearing target without any fixed time interval that he had to shoot blindly—in one shot—was no doubt a ginormous test, but Shi Xiaobai did not mind it at all.

“This King will adopt the necessary measures depending on the situation.”

Shi Xiaobai slowly closed his eyes as his vision turned black. However, the light that reflected off the metallic wall continued projecting a fuzzy layer of light above the darkness. He was still not used to it.

The elder gave Shi Xiaobai a glance, and thought he was closing his eyes to focus. The elder paid great attention to the child with dual S talents. Regardless of Shi Xiaobai’s personality, he was destined to be a very important rookie in [Gaia] the next few years. As long as he did not receive zero points in the ability test, he would naturally be evaluated as an S Class rookie.

Over the past few years, [Gaia]’s ranking did not move much in China, but it was in an awkward position. Internationally, it had

already dropped out of the top ranks into the mediocre. This year, the fresh blood that had been injected into [Gaia] was not too bad, and if an S Class rookie was added, it might let [Gaia] experience a new spring. As such, the elder placed a lot of anticipation on Shi Xiaobai.

“Natural endowment and ability is the most important evaluation standards for rookies in [Gaia]. Do not be dismayed because of a low natural endowment, but make sure not to lose your head because of having a higher natural endowment.” The elder exhorted one last time.

Noticing that the four rookies were ready, he announced, “Let the ability test begin!”

The moment he finished speaking, other than Shi Xiaobai still having his eyes closed, the other three were fully focused on the snow-white screen in front of them. In this kind of competition by count of targets struck for points, victory was not determined in a second, but in milliseconds. Despite being nervous, they still held the guns firmly in their hands. This was because reaction speed was not everything, shooting accuracy was equally important. On this point, even the four-year-old little loli, Zhong Yue'er, put on a proper demeanor. For the three, all coming from a family with Heroes, the basic skills of a Hero was something they had honed since they were young.

The gigantic screen looked like a vertical white plane. It was white, without any colors on it. Suddenly, a tiny black dot appeared like a lotus blooming!

“Peng! Peng! Peng!”

Three beams of different colors shot out at nearly the same instant. They hit a tiny black dot at a speed invisible to the naked eye.

“First point. Blue!”

A cold, machine-like voice echoed from a speaker embedded behind the metallic wall. Following that, the number on the top-left corner—beside Yang Yang’s name—changed from “0” to “1”.

The four rookies used laser guns of different colors. Shi Xiaobai was red, Kevin was yellow, Yang Yang was blue, and Zhong Yue’er was purple. It was used to determine who hit the target first. The first shot was clearly obtained by Yang Yang.

Nearly everyone realized that one laser beam was missing. However, it was just the first shot, so they did not pay much attention to it.

However, very quickly, ten targets had been hit, but Shi Xiaobai had yet to even shoot once.

The elder gave Shi Xiaobai a glance and immediately exclaimed, “Shi Xiaobai, why are you still closing your eyes?”

The moment this was said, everyone in the room was stunned. Shi Xiaobai had been closing his eyes all this while?

Kevin and Mu Hongli felt delighted at this news. From having no chance at victory, they could now see a glimmer of hope. If Shi Xiaobai's ability test received zero points, he would be evaluated as a "Useless Person". It would greatly affect his evaluation, and if that happened, Kevin would have a chance to overturn the disadvantage he received in the natural endowment test.

Yang Yang's heart sank, but he quickly recovered. As he was still in the midst of a test, he had to maintain an ethereal state of mind. He had lost too much dignity during the natural endowment test, so in the ability test that he was best at, he had to defend his remaining dignity.

Yang Yang's calmness gave him the most direct returns. In the dozens of shots that followed, he maintained first place and was opening up a gap. He displayed an extraordinary shooting ability.

By the seats, Riko was already about to cry from anxiousness. She hoarsened her throat by yelling incessantly.

"Shi Xiaobai, stop fooling around!"

Shi Xiaobai, I'll really get mad!"

"Shi Xiaobai, if you don't open your eyes, don't blame me for not sparing my fists or kicks!"

"Shi Xiaobai, don't you screw things up at the crucial moment!"

“Shi Xiaobai, I’m begging you. Hurry up and open your eyes!”

“Shi Xiaobai, I... Nice Sister Riko will not hit you ever again. Can you open your eyes, please?”

“.....”

It was as if Shi Xiaobai did not hear Riko’s yelling. He still had his eyes closed and looked completely unconcerned. By the side, the three older people were also advising Shi Xiaobai to obtain at least one point, telling him that it would affect his becoming of an S Class rookie. However, Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows did not even flinch.

It was as if Shi Xiaobai had fallen asleep. He remained motionless like a sculpture.

What had happened? What was wrong with Shi Xiaobai? Did some mental problem happen? Was it a vision problem? Or was he so inapt at shooting that he was avoiding it?

These questions hounded the minds of everyone as the test began to come to an end.

“Ninety-third point. Blue!”

As of this moment, Yang Yang had 50 points, Kevin had 31 points, while Zhong Yue’er had 12 points. As for Shi Xiaobai, he was still at

o points.

Mu Hongli's anxious heart soothed. She did not give up the opportunity and sneered at Riko. "Don't you forget our bet. I hope I'll hear news of you voluntarily resigning your post as Pontus."

Riko had yelled so much that she was going hoarse. If not for her being disallowed from interrupting the ability test midway, she would probably have charged over to brutally beat Shi Xiaobai up. Upon hearing Mu Hongli mocking her, she immediately felt more disheartened and turned even more anxious.

"Shi Xiaobai! Hurry up and open your eyes to score one point! As long as you obtain one point, I'll agree to anything you want!"

Riko was so flustered that she no longer knew what she was saying.

However, the moment she said that, a miracle happened. Shi Xiaobai's body suddenly moved.

"Girl, will you really agree to anything This King wants?"

Chapter 15: Perception Of God

“What you can’t see with your eyes, use your mind to capture its trajectory and feel its emotions. From that, ‘see’ its existence.”

Shi Xiaobai always remembered this line. Although he forgot where this line came from, maybe it was a novel or an animation, or it could have been fabricated by himself, Shi Xiaobai believed in one thing—one’s mind could see everything.

This was one of the reasons Shi Xiaobai eventually made this choice. Shi Xiaobai believed he could use his mind’s power to capture the target’s location, and from that complete the feat of shooting blind.

“There is nothing This King can’t do.”

This was Shi Xiaobai’s current maxim.

The belief of being able to implement this personal maxim made Shi Xiaobai attempt to sense the energy in his mind after he closed his eyes. Regardless of how chaotic the external world was, he remained calm in his inner mind.

However, what made Shi Xiaobai disappointed was that after more than ninety targets went by, he still failed to sense a hint of his mind’s energy. The world he saw after closing his eyes was still that dark world with that layer of illumination.

But just as Shi Xiaobai was about to abandon his belief, the voice of the Violent Girl resounded in his ears—"Shi Xiaobai! Hurry up and open your eyes to score one point! As long as you obtain one point, I'll agreed to anything you want!"

Agree to anything, doesn't that mean...

Shi Xiaobai could no longer hold on any further. He knew that he could not stay silent anymore. He rushed to confirm if Violent Girl's promise would truly be effective as he hurriedly asked, "Girl, will you really agree to anything This King wants?"

These were the words Shi Xiaobai suddenly said after a prolonged period of silence. However, the more calm and tranquil it was before, the more out of the blue it was!

Everyone was dumbfounded from shock. Their conversation sounded too bizarre, with an inexplicable strange flavor to it.

Riko was also dumbfounded from shock. Although she knew Shi Xiaobai would not suggest any 'creepy uncle' requests, there was no guarantees a thirteen-year-old boy would suddenly have curiosities that arose from puberty, doing some understandably "naughty things". In short, Riko whiffed a dangerous scent from his words.

Just as Riko was in a dilemma, a cold machine-like voice echoed—"Ninety-eighth point. Blue!"

“Holy shit, it’s nearly too late. I’ll agree first. If that darn kid suggests anything scummy, I’ll at most disavow everything and serve him a good beating as a side dish!”

Riko quickly made up her mind and hurriedly screamed at the top of her voice, “I’ll agree to anything. Quick shoot!

At the same time, the cold machine-like voice echoed: “Ninety-nine points. Blue!”

The next target was the last one left! There was no more time left!

Upon hearing Riko’s voice, Shi Xiaobai, who was considering when to shoot, how to shoot and where to shoot, suddenly came to a realization that there wasn’t enough time left. However, the powers of the mind he was hoping for did not appear. The world in front of his eyes was still black!

“It seems like there are things This King can’t do. Sometimes, some things won’t work out. However, one should enjoy life when there is prosperity. When it’s time to shoot, there must not be any hesitation! Here goes, I’ll let all of you see This King’s Shot of Fate!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai no longer hesitated. Immediately he raised his right hand and pointed in a random spot and pulled the trigger. Immediately, a laser beam shot out!

In an instant, the cold machine-like voice echoed—"Hundredth point. Red!"

Red?

Who was red?

Wasn't red f*cking Shi Xiaobai!?

At this moment, everyone was momentarily at a loss, including Shi Xiaobai.

...

Other than Shi Xiaobai, everyone else went into a state of utter confusion. Not only had Shi Xiaobai shot with his eyes closed, he had shot before the target point appeared, not after it appeared!

At the instant Shi Xiaobai pulled the trigger, while the laser beam was flying towards the white screen at the speed of light, the target point suddenly appeared and was then immediately hit!

It could be said that this shot was anticipatory, and there was no mistake to it at all! Be it the location or the timing, there was not the slightest deviation!

How the f*ck did he do that? And he had his eyes closed?

It must have been a wild attempt, right!?

Everyone immediately determined that Shi Xiaobai's shot had been a wild, but lucky attempt. However, they quickly overthrew their judgment the next second, because they suddenly recalled the various anomalies that had happened during the ability test!

Why was Shi Xiaobai closing his eyes the entire time?

Why did Shi Xiaobai retort with a question “will you really agree to anything This King wants?” after Riko Minamiya made such a promise?

Why did Shi Xiaobai immediately hit the target after receiving a definite answer?

This was because everything was self-written, self-directed and self-acted by Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai knew about the bet between Riko Minamiya and Mu Hongli, hence, he knew that Riko Minamiya was afraid that he would receive zero points! That was why he purposely closed his eyes to pretend like he had given up, so as to force Riko Minamiya into a desperate situation. From that, he received Riko Minamiya's promise to “agree to anything”! And the crux of the problem was that Shi Xiaobai had to hit the target in his final shoot, if not, all the work he had done before would have been in vain. But with such a grandiose scheme, he definitely could not risk it on the last shot, yet he had shot out an anticipatory shot. Clearly, it was not a

wild attempt, but because he had sufficient confidence and conviction!

Everyone present was clever, so they quickly deduced the truth and drew a gasp in unison! Under that silly exterior of Shi Xiaobai hid such a dark and scheming heart?

And the crux of the issue was, how did he do it with that anticipatory shot at the very last moment?

The first person who thought of the answer was the most experienced elder. After the astonishment from having been enlightened, he shouted, “I know! This is one of the Six Senses of God!”

The eyes of the middle-aged man beside him lit up, and he immediately added, “Humans have six senses. They are the sense of sight, hearing, smell, taste, touch as well as perception! And for some very talented people, their sixth sense can reach a God-like state. As such, it is called the Six Senses of God!”

The middle-aged woman recovered from her daze and lauded, “Perception is also termed the sixth sense. It is the most mysterious sense. If it’s the Perception of God from the Six Senses of God, then it would be completely reasonable to be able to anticipate the location of the target!”

The three older people revealed the truth in a few sentences.

The elder took a deep breath and looked at Shi Xiaobai, asking, “Shi Xiaobai, do you really have the Perception of God?”

Shi Xiaobai was still in a dazed state, unable to believe that he had managed to hit the target with a wild attempt! Upon hearing the elder’s question, Shi Xiaobai’s furrowed his eyebrows before relaxing them moments later.

“This King was once a member of the race of God. Since the Perception of God has the word God in it, then This King definitely has it!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai nodded at the elder and said, “Of course!”

The elder smiled with relief as he sighed, saying, “The Six Senses of God are so rare that it’s comparable to a Psyker at A Class and above, let alone that you have the strongest Perception of God out of the Six Senses of God. Dual S Class talent, coupled with Perception of God. Child, your future is beyond measure!”

At this moment, everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai with complicated expressions, as if they were seeing a humanoid monster!

Chapter 16: You Are This King's Person

Shi Xiaobai did not realize the strange gazes from everyone, because at this moment, a familiar and fiery voice was resounding in his mind.

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations to the Host for obtaining an ‘E-level reward’—A-level reward fragment (10%). Currently, the amount of A-level reward fragments you possess is 10%!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately experienced mixed emotions. Although the accumulation of lower level rewards could combine into a higher level reward, he had not received any substantial reward, making him unhappy; but then again, he had managed to hit the hundredth target by luck after all, so he could not help but feel a little excited.

“There is indeed nothing This King can’t do!”

The confidence Shi Xiaobai nearly lost was restored and had even increased. As he praised himself happily in his mind, he finally recalled an unforgettable agreement he had with Riko. Upon recalling how the Violent Girl had said “I’ll agreed to anything you want”, Shi Xiaobai’s heartbeat began to palpitate. He immediately turned to look at the seats on the right, but he saw a girl walking towards him.

Shi Xiaobai was still unaware of the strange silence in the room,

as well as the complicated looks everyone had. He only had eyes for the girl with the ponytail, as a fiery voice slowly spat out from his mouth.

“Girl, from this moment onwards, you are This King’s person!”

The silence in the room was immediately shattered.

...

As the people in the room considered the various anomalies during Shi Xiaobai’s ability test, they naturally came to the conclusion that Shi Xiaobai had machinated a meticulous scheme. However, there were two doubts they could not shrug off from their minds. One of them was how did Shi Xiaobai manage to pull off his anticipatory shot? Thankfully, the three older people—with their rich experience—revealed the truth to everyone. Everyone was extremely astonished, as they began to realize how they couldn’t comprehend this silly youth who proclaimed himself “King”.

Hence, the second doubt immediately became the thing that held the greatest suspense—What was Shi Xiaobai scheming? What request did he want Riko to fulfill? Towards such a young and beautiful girl with such a good figure, what sort of request would he have? Could it be...

As everyone’s hearts were filled with suspicion, Shi Xiaobai revealed the truth himself!

Shi Xiaobai had said to Riko—"From this moment onwards, you are This King's person"! Holy shit. This person was actually coveting Miss Riko! F*ck, this kind of silent sexual predator was the worst. He acted silly and dumb, but he secretly had a mind more corrupt than anyone. And most critical of all, this pervert was an uber-genius with dual S level natural endowment and Perception of God! F*ck, this world is so unfair!

Everyone affirmed their guesses in their hearts, as they immediately gave Shi Xiaobai strange looks.

The one with the most intense reaction was naturally Riko. She had not spent much time with Shi Xiaobai yet, but she refused to believe that Shi Xiaobai would make any corrupted requests. However, she did not expect Shi Xiaobai to immediately claim her as his own. Riko was immediately extremely embarrassed.

Realizing Shi Xiaobai was about to open his mouth to speak again, she was afraid he would say something dreadful. Riko immediately charged at Shi Xiaobai like a ferocious beast!

Using the fastest speed in her life, Riko charged straight in front of Shi Xiaobai and grabbed his neck with one hand, covering his mouth with the other. At the same time, she shouted, "Shut up!"

While breathing rapidly, she leaned towards Shi Xiaobai's ear and gnashed her teeth and, in a mild voice, she said, "If there's anything you want to say, do it later!"

Riko did not want to embarrass themselves any further in front

of everybody. Besides, if Shi Xiaobai made an excessive demand, she could not resort to violence in front of so many people. When they were alone, she could then brazenly “reject” Shi Xiaobai.

While fantasizing how she would bash Shi Xiaobai up to the point of him begging on his knees, pleading for mercy, Riko did not realize how suggestive it looked with her grabbing Shi Xiaobai by the neck from the back. Her well-developed chest was tightly adhered to Shi Xiaobai’s back, squeezed tightly like cotton.

Shi Xiaobai felt a soft and extremely elastic feeling and could not help but turn to look at the girl’s weapon.

“Is this the legendary magic—Ball Dribble Charging¹? I heard that this magic attack can weaken the vitality of male biological beings! Oh, does Violent Girl want to harm This King?”

Shi Xiaobai was panic-stricken as he immediately wanted to shout “distance yourself from This King”, but as his mouth was covered, he could only produce muffled “Wu Wu Wu” sounds as his body kept struggling.

Shi Xiaobai’s struggling immediately caused their bodies to rub. Finally, Riko realized something odd and, tracing Shi Xiaobai’s gaze, she realized her chest was tightly clinging to Shi Xiaobai’s back and, due to Shi Xiaobai’s struggling, was even...

“Ah~ Pervert!”

Riko's face immediately turned red as she retreated backwards while screaming. She stretched out her hands to cover her chest, as she realized how this sacred area, which had never been touched before, had just been nudged here and there by this thirteen-year-old youth. Immediately, she was too deep for tears.

After a moment of embarrassment, she grabbed Shi Xiaobai by the collar and directly dragged Shi Xiaobai to the door. She coldly said to everyone else in the room, "The test is over. We will be leaving first!" With that, she dragged Shi Xiaobai out of the room with a face full of murderous intent.

After the duo left, the people left in the room remained in their petrified states. The things that happened today were just too weird, shocking and f*cking capable of rendering you speechless!

After a long while, only when the elder said, "Let's disperse," did everyone disperse with preoccupied thoughts.

The elder sighed. Regardless of Shi Xiaobai's personality, he was destined to be a talent [Gaia] would develop with all it had. The organization would not interfere with his private matters, but Riko Minamiya's status was somewhat special. This matter was probably going to be very complicated!

...

Shi Xiaobai was pulled to a dark corner by Riko with a bewildered look. Just as he was about to ask what had happened, he realized the girl's eyes were reddish, and tears were beginning to well up.

“Girl...You..” Shi Xiaobai was stunned.

“Shi Xiaobai, I said I would agree to anything.”

Riko’s voice was so cold that it seemed like a slab of ice from the Arctic. “Say it now, what is your request?”

Riko stared intently at Shi Xiaobai. She was originally extremely angry, but the more she thought, the more depressed she felt. She did not hate that silly young boy who had eight-grader syndrome [2](#), and was even very willing to be his friend. So even up to this point, her heart still retained the last bit of trust. Of course, now was the moment she gave Shi Xiaobai the benefit of the doubt. If she heard words that made her disgusted from his mouth, then she did not mind educating this misguided child.

Shi Xiaobai could sense Riko’s seriousness and earnestness from her eyes and mannerism. As such, his expression also gradually turned serious. He said with a bitter heart, “Girl, as expected, you still aren’t willing to sign a contract with This King?”

“Ah?” Riko froze.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, “You said that you would agree to any request from This King! This King doesn’t have many requests, all This King wants is to sign a contract with you!”

Riko finally realized that something wasn’t right. She asked

curiously, “Signing a contract.. What...does it mean?”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and used a fiery voice to say, “Becoming an aide of This King, joining Xiaobai’s Hero Squad, so as to save the world with This King!”

Riko was dumbfounded as she asked, “Then, just now, when you said I am your person, what did that mean?”

Shi Xiaobai revealed an expression that said “are you a retard” and said, “By joining Xiaobai’s Hero Squad, you are naturally This King’s person!”

Holy shit, so that was the meaning!

Riko was at a loss whether to laugh or to cry. The ice in her heart melted. In her heart, she came to the realization that the youth in front of her was indeed—an idiot!

Shi Xiaobai sensed that Riko was intending to go back on her words, so he hurriedly said, “Girl, don’t you go back on your words!”

Riko rolled her eyes at him and after a little hesitation, she said softly, “I agree to it.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned, before he roared with laughter, “Girl, from this moment, you are This King’s person! You are not to use violence against This King!”

Upon hearing this, Riko, who had just raised her fist, burst into laughter.

Just like the sudden spring wind that blew in the night, it blew away all the pear flowers away.

Author's Note: This chapter was written a bit ambiguously, as well as to boost the aggro on the male protagonist. F*ck, why aren't there babes Ball Dribble Charging This King!

Chapter 17: Riko's Choice

In the afternoon, Riko brought Shi Xiaobai around Steel City. Steel City was divided into five zones. The jurisdiction zones of the four Divisions were separately the north, south, east and west. In the middle was a joint area with buildings for meetings as well as shared facilities.

[Gaia]'s reputation was now in decline, but it had once been brilliant in China. [Gaia] Base had been established back in its glory days, hence, the facilities in Steel City were considerably adequate. It could be said it had everything. It had restaurants, supermarkets, karaoke bars, bars and other entertainment outlets. It even had a game arcade.

However, this world's "virtual reality" was surprisingly well-developed. Every game was basically a "virtual game" meant for training the abilities of Heroes. Shi Xiaobai's eyes glowed immediately as he yearned to try them out. Riko did not have that much time to waste with him at a game arcade, so she pulled him away. Shi Xiaobai lamented in pity as he decided that he had to find an opportunity to play every game in the game arcade in the future.

It was unknown where Riko obtained a car from. The duo drove around and walked around, traversing most of Steel City in its entirety. Of course, the main introduction was [Annihilation]'s jurisdiction zone.

[Annihilation]'s jurisdiction zone was located to the south of Steel City. The facilities it had were not any different from the other three jurisdiction zones'. The main thing Riko wanted to do was to let Shi Xiaobai understand the structure of the jurisdiction zone, so that he would not get lost while outside. As for whether Shi Xiaobai was listening attentively or not, that was unknown.

The results of the Rookie Evaluation Test were out in the afternoon. A few text messages were sent to Riko's cellphone. Shi Xiaobai had naturally received first place for [Annihilation] in this batch of rookie evaluations. He also became this year's second S-Class rookie. If Shi Xiaobai had received one more point in the ability test, he could have had a chance to achieve S, or even S+ Class. After all, his dual S Class natural endowment was something that only appeared once in several years in the entire world, while he was the first in [Gaia] ever since its establishment.

There was another text message which was quite thought-provoking. According to the organization's investigation, Shi Xiaobai's identity came up completely blank! This meant that even [Gaia]'s intelligence agencies were unable to obtain any information about Shi Xiaobai. There were only two possibilities for this to occur. Either the confidentiality of Shi Xiaobai's identity was above [Gaia]'s clearance level or Shi Xiaobai had appeared out of thin air. The former was unbelievable, while the latter was preposterous.

But in any case, [Gaia] would not easily let an uber-class rookie not seen in a hundred years disappear from their grasp. Even if they had to resort to brainwashing techniques, they would do so just to make Shi Xiaobai have a sense of belonging to [Gaia].

This matter resulted in two conflicting text messages. One of them was sent by the upper echelons of [Gaia]. It vaguely hinted to Riko that while protecting herself, she should try her best to make Shi Xiaobai have a sense of belonging to the organization. It implied a request for Riko to play with Shi Xiaobai's feelings, making Shi Xiaobai fall for her. On this matter, it made Riko unsure whether to laugh or cry, but at the same time, she was infuriated.

The other text message had healed her hurt heart. It was a message sent from her father. Her father's text message cussed at Shi Xiaobai, sternly requesting Riko to distance herself from Shi Xiaobai. He also expressed that he would settle any problems that came from the organization's upper echelons. He wanted Riko to focus on her own matters and to not make any compromises.

Riko immediately replied her father's text message, explaining the misunderstanding. She also depicted her understanding of Shi Xiaobai. After Riko's father received the text message, he immediately responded with—"There's really such an idiotic child?"

Riko immediately laughed in stitches as she began tapping noisily at her cellphone, producing a large passage mentioning how silly Shi Xiaobai was. Immediately, her mood turned better.

After that, Riko sent another text message to the organization's upper echelons. She explained that Shi Xiaobai was a pure and kind child, and that she treated Shi Xiaobai as her younger brother.

The reaction from the upper echelons was swift. They immediately responded with a text message that gave Riko a headache. In summary, the organization decided that Riko was to play the role of Shi Xiaobai's rookie counselor. Also, as there were not enough room in the rookie dormitories, Shi Xiaobai was to temporarily stay with Riko, and they had even used "a younger brother living in his elder sister's house is completely reasonable" as the corresponding reason.

In accordance with established practices, [Gaia] would specially match a corresponding counselor to rookies at A Class or above. The counselor would guide and help the rookie in the beginning stages. The counselor was typically assigned to a young staff member of the organization as a side job. However, Riko's status was extremely special. Not only was she the daughter of the Minamiya family, she was even this generation's Oceanic Pontus. With her status, there was no need for her to shoulder the responsibility as rookie counselor. This was clearly arranged deliberately by the upper echelons.

As for there not being enough room in the rookie dormitories, that was even more preposterous. As a famous Hero organization in the country, and even internationally, how could [Gaia] lack a dormitory room? This excuse was too perfunctory! It was clearly forcing Shi Xiaobai to live with her!

Riko was so furious that she nearly threw her cellphone. Actually, with her status, the upper echelons could not do a thing if she directly rejected their request. If not, the upper echelons would not have used a negotiatory tone, or even have the need to use such a lame excuse.

However, Riko did not immediately reject them. After she sank her thoughts to ponder over it, she finally decided to agree to the upper echelon's request. Firstly, Shi Xiaobai was recruited by her, so she had a certain amount of responsibility. Secondly, she did not hate spending time with Shi Xiaobai. Besides, Shi Xiaobai was still a child. The place she stayed at did have many spare rooms. Thirdly, she was afraid that after her rejection, the organization would find another beauty to seduce Shi Xiaobai. When the time came, she would feel sorry for the beauty that had been coerced by the organization.

For the organization's upper echelons to go so far for Shi Xiaobai showed how stunning his natural endowment was. Riko did not wish for Shi Xiaobai to become a war victim amongst the rotten management of [Gaia]. She felt that it was her duty to protect this thirteen-year-old boy, just like an elder sister.

...

Along the way, Riko's mind was weighed down by various thoughts, while Shi Xiaobai had problems on his mind too. Back when he first met Riko, the scene of Riko instantly slicing the calamity fiend, Sahadun, to pieces was imprinted in his mind. Back then, he told himself—This Girl is the Heroine he had always been looking for. He definitely needed her to join Xiaobai's Hero Squad.

Now, he had finally gotten his wish, and because of that, another wish rose up to the surface of his heart.

However, due to his reservations as King, Shi Xiaobai forced himself not to say it. Neither after dinner, nor after he followed Riko back to her home—a warm house constructed in steel encasings—and even when she turned on the television and watched the flashy fighting program about the Heroes league on a forty inch crystal display. Only when Riko was about to go for a shower did he lose his wits, unable to hold it in any longer. He tugged at her hand and let out the words buried deep inside his heart all along.

“I want to become stronger. Please help me.”

Shi Xiaobai was not aware of how his future would be hallowed, or of how many organizations and the interests of a select few would pursue him. He only knew that he was still an ordinary person at this moment in time. He was still the same weakling who was powerless in front of that Sahadun. And because of that, he wanted to become stronger. And the girl in front of him was a member of Xiaobai’s Hero Squad, his ally. He wished that she could help him.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai no longer called himself “This King”. His eyes were as bright as the stars and as deep as the starry sky.

At this moment, while looking into this youth’s eyes, Riko was very glad that she had chosen to agree to the organization’s request.

Author’s Note: Shi Xiaobai is a funny person, but he is not an

idiot. He will bring joy to everyone and will move everyone sooner or later. Everyone, please wait and see!

Chapter 18: Return Me My Shi Xiaobai

Although Shi Xiaobai was a fool in Riko's eyes, she had no doubt that he was a genius when it came to cultivating Psionic Ability. Be it his Mind Expanse or Psy-genes that were at S Class, or the Perception of God of the Six Senses of God, each one of them was a talent dreamed of by anyone.

Although Shi Xiaobai's final evaluation was S- Class, [Gaia]'s upper echelons and Riko knew very clearly that Shi Xiaobai's true evaluation should have been S+ Class. This was because Shi Xiaobai had only shot once in his ability test. Since he possessed the Perception of God, then just being a little bit serious was enough for him to easily obtain a higher ranking.

This was also the reason why the treatment Shi Xiaobai received far exceeded the other S- Class rookie from this year. Even the upper echelons were foolish enough to request Riko to sacrifice herself to ensure that Shi Xiaobai would have a sense of belonging to [Gaia]. What status did Riko enjoy? Ignoring the Minamiya family's status in China, just the fact that Riko was One-Pun's only student, or that she was this generation's Oceanic Pontus, was enough. If they forced Riko to lose all decorum with them, it was not something that could easily be resolved. Yet, the upper echelons were willing to take such great risks, making the degree of attention placed on Shi Xiaobai evident.

As such, even if Riko was unwilling to admit it, she had no choice but to exclaim. This fool, Shi Xiaobai, was truly the best genius she had ever encountered.

However, despite Shi Xiaobai being a genius, what made it shocking was that he was a weakling. Shi Xiaobai possessed the most amazing Psionic Ability talent, but he was not a Psionite. In fact, he could be said to have had not even begun Psionite cultivation. Without any exaggeration, be it Kevin or Yang Yang, they could have easily taken Shi Xiaobai down. Shi Xiaobai was not even a match for the 4–5 year-old loli, Zhong Yue'er.

This contrast was what made Riko ponder the most. Why hadn't Shi Xiaobai begun Psionic Ability cultivation at the age of thirteen? Some children from a family of Heroes would even begin Psionic Ability cultivation at the age of two or three, for instance Zhong Yue'er. Even those who began later—those who came from ordinary households—would begin at six or seven. This was because the nine years of compulsory education in this world mainly focused on teaching Psionic Ability cultivation.

Riko even began to treat Shi Xiaobai's joke seriously. Was Shi Xiaobai really from another world?

Riko realized that the more she spent time with Shi Xiaobai, the more she couldn't comprehend him. As a result, after all the various incidents that had happened today, there was a veil of mystery surrounding Shi Xiaobai in her heart. It was as if the Shi Xiaobai in front of her was a fictional character, a reality that was impossible to make contact with.

But at this very moment, Shi Xiaobai had used a single sentence to pierce through that mysteriousness, shattering the imaginary barrier to pieces. This made Riko feel a true sense of warmth.

“I want to become stronger. Please help me.”

Upon hearing those words that sounded like a plea, Riko felt as if a particular soft corner in her heart had been gently prodded with a finger. What sort of feeling was that...? Slightly bitter, slightly tingly, slightly warm, but it was very real.

In her mind, she thought, “Ah, so this is Shi Xiaobai.”

He obviously had a talent others dreamed of, yet he desired true power. He called himself “This King” in an arrogant manner, yet he knew better than anyone how weak he was. He knew he had the right to be proud, yet he timidly tugged at her hand and made such a tender request. Perhaps, the reason why he was crying his heart out during the sunset was not because he was afraid, but because he was feeling remorse? He desired—more than anyone—to become one of the strong. He wanted to protect that Little Fatso! No wonder Teacher One-Pun said that he was a brave child.

Such a Shi Xiaobai was very real, and very cute.

At this moment, Riko was touched.

“Tsk. Girl, you are already This King’s person. This King orders you to help This King become stronger!” Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai’s high-spirited voice resounded.

Riko, who was still deep in a million thoughts, was momentarily stunned. An ominous feeling arose in her heart.

“Eighty-one blood-limiting seals were imposed on This King by the evil Gods, and the only way of removing these seals is to constantly become stronger. Once the seals on This King are removed, there would be no rival in this entire world!”

By then, Riko had already guessed the ending. She nearly wanted to cover her ears, so that she need not listen to the rest of his words.

However, in the next second, Shi Xiaobai’s familiar laughter resounded once again. “Wahahaha, laugh and be excited, Girl. Once This King is invincible, this world will be eventually conquered!”

Riko was beyond tears. This fool could not even maintain that sincere act for more than three seconds. It was such a waste of her emotions.

Could it be that she was the one who moved herself a moment ago?

The more Riko thought about it, the more infuriated she became. As she watched on as Shi Xiaobai began bragging how invincible he would be after removing the seals, the more she felt the distance widen between the Shi Xiaobai she imagined and the Shi Xiaobai in front of her.

“Bastard, return me my Shi Xiaobai!”

At this moment, Riko could not help but reach out to wrangle Shi Xiaobai by the neck.

...

As Riko engaged in a moment of unilateral “abuse” of Shi Xiaobai, while constantly shouting “return me my Shi Xiaobai”, Shi Xiaobai was repeatedly shouting in an aggrieved manner, “But This King is Shi Xiaobai!”

After the ruckus, Riko was covered in sweat and could not wait to take her shower. As she was used to wrapping a towel around herself at home, she had accidentally given Shi Xiaobai a chance to catch a glance of unspeakable things. As a result, she immediately screamed and beat Shi Xiaobai up once again.

Shi Xiaobai, who experienced the tribulations, lay on the couch with a face full of grievance.

On the other hand, Riko contentedly sat on another sofa. She began to ask Shi Xiaobai of whatever knowledge he had grasped. In fact, as Shi Xiaobai’s rookie counselor, understanding and helping Shi Xiaobai was part of her job.

However, after a series of inquiries, Riko was shocked. Shi Xiaobai did not know a single thing. He didn’t even know the most basic concept of what a Psionite was.

“So you really have no clue what Mind Expanse is, or what Psy-genes are, as well as the Six Senses of God?” Riko asked incredulously.

“Che, This King just feels disdain about finding it out!” Shi Xiaobai said with a disdainful face.

For a fool that did not know anything to have everything made Riko have a deep sense of malevolence towards this world.

She could only sigh and say, “In seven days, the organization’s intake of rookies will be halted. [Annihilation] will also begin a new batch of rookie training. You can slowly learn the basics in the future, but there is something that cannot be delayed.”

“What is it?” Shi Xiaobai asked.

“Psionic Ability cultivation!”

Riko said in a serious manner, “For this batch of [Annihilation] rookies, the weakest is at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, while the best has reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. As for you, who has been given the best evaluation by [Annihilation], you aren’t even at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. You will probably make a fool out of yourself.”

Riko suddenly thought of something and took out her cellphone to make a call. Moments later, the other party picked up the phone as she whispered, “Teacher One-Pun...”

After spending a few minutes conversing with One-Pun, Riko revealed a smile and looked at Shi Xiaobai. She said with a laugh, “Go ahead and snigger, Teacher One-Pun has agreed to impart his personal Psionic Ability cultivation technique to you. This is something dreamed of by numerous people. Although trying to reach the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in seven days is an extremely difficult task, but with your talent, it might be possible with some effort.”

Riko was already beginning to plan how she would spend the next seven days “drilling” Shi Xiaobai into proper shape.

She did not notice that Shi Xiaobai, who was slumped on the sofa, had eyes burning with intense fighting spirit. It was a morale that seemed like it would burn through everything at all expense.

“This King is unable to endure the thirst!”

Author’s Note: As this is a transitional chapter to build up the plot, it might seem filler-like. However, the story shouldn’t seem too boring, it’s just that the promotion of the plot is slightly slower for this and the previous chapter. In addition, these two chapters are about Riko. Treat it as my favoritism for her, and also to let everyone get a clear understanding of the current situation between Xiaobai and Riko. This novel isn’t about sex and girls. Although there was some ambiguity in Chapter 16, a story with the beauty throwing herself at the protagonist is something This King feels disdain for. Even if there is a female protagonist, there should be sufficiently deep feelings before anything happens. As for whether this book has a single female protagonist, dual or multiple

was asked by someone on the discussion board, but to maintain the suspense, I would not be answering this question. Just leaving a thought for everyone.

Chapter 19: Riko's Superpower

Psionic Ability was the potential each living being had. Psionic Ability cultivation then meant to constantly develop one's potential, a training method to constantly surpass one's limits. As such, the so-called Psionites were humans who had unraveled the potential of their bodies. Based on the difference in development, there were a few realms demarcated. Psionic Mortal Realm was the first realm.

As for how to develop one's potential, this world had already developed a near-perfect cultivation system. There were various cultivation techniques that targeted different types of people, allowing more than 99% of humans to be able to undergo Psionic Ability cultivation to become Psionites. The only problem was that most Psionites would be stuck in the Psionic Mortal Realm.

In simple terms, Psionic Ability cultivation was like the martial arts of Earth. Although everyone could practice martial arts, a large majority of people did it for physical fitness while few managed to cultivate internal energy to become a true Kung Fu master.

It could be said that Psionites were abundant, but powerful Psionites were few and far between. And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai was not even considered anything. Hence, Riko placed great emphasis on making Shi Xiaobai begin Psionic Ability cultivation.

“Psionic Ability cultivation is usually divided into three methods—Cogitation, Training, as well as Combat.”

Riko began to explain the basics regarding Psionic Ability cultivation. “Body training and learning from combat have considerable effects on the development of a person’s potential, but it cannot be done over prolonged periods of time. As such, the main cultivation method for Psionites is actually Cogitation.”

Shi Xiaobai abandoned his playful thoughts and, like an attentive child in class, asked questions from time to time. “What is Cogitation?”

Riko answered, “Cogitation means focusing one’s heart, intent and spirit to the most primal state, after which you let your imaginations in the ethereal state of mind run wild. Depending on what you imagine as well as how realistic your imagination is, the outcome of your Psionic Ability cultivation will change greatly.”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, “Just rely on imagination to open up one’s potential?”

Riko seemed quite pleased with Shi Xiaobai’s present behavior. She could not help but reveal a smile, answering, “This is why Psionic Ability cultivation has become systematic, becoming the main method of cultivation. As there is a special energy known as ‘Psionic Power’ in this world, when humans enter an ethereal state while in their world of imagination, their bodies will begin to automatically absorb ‘Psionic Power’. From that you get Psionic Ability cultivation.”

Riko said very patiently, “And there are two factors that

determine how fast a human body can absorb 'Psionic Power'. Firstly, it's the content of the imagination during one's Cogitation; and secondly, it's how realistic the imagination is. The former is actually an area of research in cultivation techniques. For example, what sort of things should be imagined, or the order of the imagination. This is basically the result of experience accumulated over the years by our predecessors, and some of it is the essence of what some peerless, mighty figures figured out. Teacher One-Pun's unique technique is to open up his own imaginary world."

"And how realistic the scenes a person imagines depends solely on their imagination. As one's Mind Expanse is a main factor that affects the imagination of humans, it is one of the natural endowment criteria used to judge Psionic Ability cultivation.

"In short, cultivation techniques and Mind Expanse are closely related to Cogitation. In other words, these two factors determine how fast or slow one's Psionic Ability cultivation is."

After a long series of explanations, Shi Xiaobai had a rough understanding of what Riko meant.

"So Psionic Ability cultivation is just a competition of whose imagination can go wilder."

Shi Xiaobai summarized this in his head, but on the outside, he was nodding constantly, looking like a model student. Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai thought of a question that had been plaguing him for a very long time.

Shi Xiaobai asked, “What are Psy-genes? What are Psykers?”

Since the vastness of one’s Mind Expanse determined one’s Psionic Ability cultivation speed to a certain extent, then what of the more important Psy-genes?

“Oh~ Psykers are a bit more difficult to explain.”

Riko chose her words carefully before saying moments later, “Three thousand years ago, during the third apocalypse that history calls the ‘end of civilization’, less than 1% of humanity survived. Due to the evolutionary principle of survival of the fittest, many of the remaining humans experienced a genetic mutation during the apocalyptic catastrophe. However, as the mutations of genes are extremely unstable, with the passage of time, they gradually disappeared. And now, only a small number of humans have inherited this gene mutation. And these people are Psykers.”

“The mutations that Psykers are born with give them special abilities. In fact, we can call these people, who have inherited these mutant genes, Espers. However, these Espers have to undergo Psionic Ability cultivation, just like normal people; as such, we merge Espers and Psionites together and call them Psykers.

After Riko’s explanation, Shi Xiaobai finally understood. Espers were extremely rare on Earth, while Psykers were Espers who had undergone Psionic Ability cultivation, or it could be said that Psykers were Espers who possessed Psionic Ability.

“Then since This King was evaluated to have S Class Psy-genes, wouldn’t that make This King a Psyker? Strange, what is This King’s superpower?” Just thinking of himself having superpowers made Shi Xiaobai excited.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai’s excited look, Riko interjected with a laugh. “What a pity. A Psyker needs to cultivate to the fourth level in the Psionic Mortal Realm before their superpower will be awakened. So, although you have S Class Psy-genes, at this moment, you are still an ordinary person.”

With that said, it was like a bucket of cold water splashed onto his face. Shi Xiaobai immediately seemed to lose all interest.

Upon seeing this, and a shift of her eyes, an idea came to her head as she smiled and said, “Actually, I am also a Psyker, and I have B Class Psy-genes!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and asked, “Girl, are you at the fourth level of Psionic Mortal Realm?”

Riko rolled her eyes and said, “Isn’t that nonsense, I’m already a Ps... Cough, I’ll not talk about it. My strength is way too distant for you. However, since I’m in a good mood today, I’ll kindly show you my superpower.”

Upon saying that, Riko went into the kitchen and returned to the living room moments later with a fruit knife and a daikon.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes immediately lit up as his mind generated immense anticipation for Riko's superpower.

“Watch carefully!”

With a faint smile, Riko threw up the daikon, and with the fruit knife in her right hand, she sliced up gently into the air. A cold beam flashed, as the daikon splintered into numerous tiny pieces in an instant, like it had been cut by a million knives.

Shi Xiaobai's pupils involuntarily shrank as he recalled Sahadun being instantly sliced to bits during the sunset yesterday. How did she do it?

Riko revealed a proud smile and explained, “My superpower is called [High Frequency Vibrokinesis]. I can make any designated space vibrate at peak frequency. Although I can only influence a small region with my current level of power, and the distance is relatively short, it can still give rise to startling effects if used properly.”

“At the moment I slashed out with the fruit knife, I had used [High Frequency Vibrokinesis] on the knife's blade. Hence, I was able to slash out numerous knife beams in an instant. And this is just a small application of my superpower. [High Frequency Vibrokinesis] is considered a B Class superpower. Its usage and growth is rather outstanding, and as my Psionic Ability realm increases, [High Frequency Vibrokinesis] will improve, be it its domain, range or even frequency manipulation. When the time comes, tsk tsk!”

Shi Xiaobai listened on with envy as he yearned to possess a superpower.

Seeing that the time was ripe, Riko hurriedly said in a stern manner, “Xiaobai, my B Class superpower is already so powerful, then what of your S Class superpower! If you want to awaken your superpower earlier, then the only method is to do your best and rush towards the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!”

“So Shi Xiaobai! Hurry up and begin Psionic Ability cultivation!”

Riko gave a sweet smile as she thought deep down, “With me here, how can this fool Shi Xiaobai not obediently surrender himself!”

Author’s Note: When it comes to information dumps, it’s indeed quite boring. I didn’t plan on talking about it, but I was afraid people would be confused, so I explained the system that appeared previously clearly. If you didn’t read this chapter carefully, I recommend you to read it with a bit more patience.

Chapter 20: Inverse Sourced World

Riko's tiny scheme naturally succeeded, and its effects were outstanding. The moment Shi Xiaobai realized that he could awaken a superpower that surpassed [High Frequency Vibrokinesis] when he reached the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, he immediately felt his blood surging. The flames of infinite fighting spirit burned in his eyes.

“Hurry up and begin. This King can no longer wait!” Shi Xiaobai said with an eager look.

Riko chuckled deep down, but continued giving an oblivious expression. She said, “Calm down first. The first step to Cogitation is meditation. You need to empty out your mind and body. You can't get anywhere with this impetuous state of mind.”

“Oh.” Shi Xiaobai nodded his head despite having only a hazy notion. He began imitating the meditating old monks from his memories and began to sit with his legs crossed on the sofa. He closed his eyes and attempted to empty out his mind and body.

Riko sighed seeing him do so. She remembered how she had depressingly spent several hours to enter her first meditative state many years back. Even the present her would need about ten minutes to completely empty out her mind and body to enter a meditative state. She did not know how long Shi Xiaobai would take to enter the meditative state.

“I will recite Teacher One-Pun's cultivation technique a few

times. Remember it by heart after ruminating over it. After you enter a meditative state, then imagine the scenes in accordance to what I say. Remember that the imagery has to be as realistic as possible. The more thorough the details, the better.”

Riko explained in great detail the key points of Cogitation, but suddenly, she realized something amiss.

“Eh? It can’t be?”

Riko focused her eyes and was surprised to realize that Shi Xiaobai had not only long and rhythmic breathing, his body was also in a completely relaxed state.

“How is it possible. He entered a meditative state so quickly?”

Riko was flabbergasted, as she could not resist to reach out her hand to poke Shi Xiaobai in the cheeks. She did not expect Shi Xiaobai to topple the moment she prodded him. His body began to topple, frightening Riko. She hurriedly rushed forward to hug the falling Shi Xiaobai. She was horrified to find Shi Xiaobai’s eyes still closed, and his body completely relaxed.

“Holy shit, a deep meditative state?”

Riko could not help but burst out. She carefully righted Shi Xiaobai’s body and took a few steps back. Seeing the Shi Xiaobai who looked asleep, she could not help but depressively curse in her heart.

“How simple is this fool’s brain? It hasn’t even been a minute and he has entered a meditative state, and it’s even a deep meditative state.”

“Back then, I took hours to enter a meditative state! Wu Wu, it’s so unfair. Why is this idiot so fast?”

“Hai, I’m beginning to doubt life.”

“.....”

Riko was dealt a mental blow. Only after a long series of cussing did she regained her composure. She took a glance at Shi Xiaobai, who was in a deep meditative state, and sighed, saying, “Being in a deep meditative state means he can’t hear anything. The cultivation technique I wanted to impart to you is now useless. A deep meditative state is a state ordinary people dream of. You fool, without knowing any cultivation technique, what’s the point of entering a deep meditative state. Wu Wu, what a pity~”

Riko became more depressed the more she thought about it. After staring at Shi Xiaobai for a while, with her lips pursed, she suddenly found the sleeping Shi Xiaobai to be abnormally cute. She could not help but pinch Shi Xiaobai’s cheeks and revealed a smile. She then got up and returned to her room. It was time to sleep.

“Today sure was long. So, so many things happened, but in general, it was quite a happy day.”

Riko threw herself in bed, and tossed around while hugging a pillow. Moments later, she fell deep asleep, with a sweet smile on her lips.

...

...

At the moment Shi Xiaobai closed his eyes, he told himself in his mind to “relax body and mind”. Then...the scene in his head went blank.

An endless expanse of white filled his imaginary world. His body and mind seemed completely imbued in the emptiness.

After a few seconds of panic, Shi Xiaobai calmed down. He recalled the details of Cogitation Riko had mentioned.

“Isn’t it just to how wild your thoughts can run? It’s a piece of cake for This King.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai immediately began to imagine. An inexplicable thing happened, as the moment he imagined the sky, a blue sky would immediately appear above the white world.

Shi Xiaobai was delighted as he immediately went wild with his

fanciful imagination.

In an instant, nine different colored suns appeared in the sky. Numerous iridescent clouds floated in the sky, and following that, the land on appeared in this world. Sea water began spraying out of the holes in the ground, filling more than half the landmass.

Then it was followed by mountains, plains, deserts, canyons, forests, rivers, streams, fountains... Shi Xiaobai felt like he was the sovereign of the entire world, as he excitedly shaped every corner of this world according to his own imagination. Inverted mountain peaks that fell from the sky, plains that rose up, a desert in the depths of an abyss, a large, inverted V-shape valley, and an endless deep abyss that stretched across the world. All over the lands, there were forests that sprawled with towering ancient trees that had five different colors as crowns...

Shi Xiaobai did not seem to perceive the passage of time, much less feel exhausted. He constantly created his own world with his own imagination.

After a long period of time, Shi Xiaobai felt that his world was complete. He decided to—create life.

“What should I create? Humans? Gods? Fiends? Demonic beasts? Or...”

Shi Xiaobai hesitated again and again, when suddenly his eyes lit up. “This King has to be created first after all!”

With a thought, a gigantic Shi Xiaobai who towered high into the heavens was born, with one foot on the ground. The gigantic Shi Xiaobai wore a magical robe, and had a crown on his head. In his left hand he held the Staff of Heaven Punishment, and his right hand held the Axe of Annihilation. He stood there quietly, as if the Heavens and Earth were subservient to him.

Shi Xiaobai was pleased as he began to create life that gigantic Shi Xiaobai would lead. First were the Western Gods such as Zeus, then were the Eastern immortals like the Jade Emperor. The Twelve Legions of Angels, the Eighteen Demon Gods of the Demon World, the Nine Wraiths of the Underworld, as well the numerous heroes of the mortal world. Then it was the Yamanato no Orochi, the Frost Wyrms, the Nine-Tailed Fox, Cerberus...

After Shi Xiaobai constructed every legendary being he could think of, he began to create things that did not even exist, such as a devouring beast that masqueraded as a mountain range, a fat worm that spat out numerous red butterflies, a dress-wearing white cat, about the size of a palm, which stood on its hind legs, a black skeleton that could speak...

Shi Xiaobai taxed his ingenuity, as he imagined his subjects. After an unknown period of time, he felt like the inhabitants in this world had reached a barely acceptable number.

“Next, This King has to set the laws of this world. Eh~ Then there is a need to set a world view, the power system, the history. Oh, some legendary stories are necessary. Then, it will be national wars, ethnic conflicts, the opposition between good and evil...”

Just thinking of the fact that he could create a world that belonged to him made Shi Xiaobai feel a blood rush. All sorts of strange ideas began to flow incessantly out of his mind.

A Will might not be Eternal, but it could create a temporary world.

And with reality as the source of his imagination, to mold this completely inverted world, maybe it should be named—Inverse Sourced World?

Author's Note: This chapter is dedicated to the readers who came from 'Inverse Sourced World'. Due to my fault, I made everyone lose the beautiful world of the Inverse Sourced World and for that, I am deeply apologetic. For this, I brazenly used Shi Xiaobai's brain to restore Inverse Sourced World for you!

Chapter 21: Shi Xiaobai, You Need To Keep A Low Profile

One could not sense the passage of time in an imagined world, nor would he feel a hint of exhaustion at all. However, there was always the point when one would awake from it. The only difference was that waking up from a meditative state would not result in too much mental confusion. Everything would appear extremely calm, as if imagination and reality was just separated by a thought.

And with that, Shi Xiaobai woke up.

After Shi Xiaobai slowly woke up, he immediately sensed his body covered in a sticky substance, making him feel extremely uncomfortable. Nearly instantly, he caught a whiff of a pungent smell. As he opened his eyes blearily, he was surprised to discover himself lying in a bathtub. He was only wearing a pair of shorts, while the rest of his exposed skin was covered in a black viscous layer of an unknown substance.

“It stinks!”

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly held his breath, nearly throwing up. As he resisted the feeling of vomiting, he looked up and scanned the surroundings. Immediately, he saw a shower head in the bathroom, and quickly grabbed at it. Turning it on, refreshing cold water immediately ejected out of the shower head, drenching his body.

Being bathed in clean, cold water, the sticky black substance was like mud being nourished by the rain. Upon turning wet, it coagulated to form an even more disgusting blob. With a swipe of his hand, layers of black blobs fell off his body, mixing into the clear water that turned into sticky, smelly black mud.

“What happened?”

Shi Xiaobai’s mind was filled with questions. As the water rinsed off the black mud from his body, he was finally cleansed moments later. Immediately, smooth, white translucent skin that looked like a charming woman’s skin appeared. If he stretched out his hand, a clench made it seem like water would flow out.

“This is This King’s body?”

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly came out of the bathtub and walked to a mirror in the bathroom that went from the floor to the ceiling. Standing in front of the mirror, it reflected himself that looked the same, be it his facial features or body figure. The only difference was his skin, and for that, he heaved a sigh of relief. Turning around, he saw a set of male underwear and a white towel hanging in the bathroom.

“This must be prepared by Violent Girl.”

Shi Xiaobai used the shower head to cleanse himself thoroughly and then washed away the smelly muddy substance in the bathtub. He then used the towel to dry himself and began wearing the clothes.

The white t-shirt and trackpants Riko prepared for him were slightly loose, while the black underwear was slightly tight, but Shi Xiaobai could do nothing about it. After dressing up, he stretched and loosened his muscles, slowly getting adapted to it.

Shi Xiaobai left the bathroom and wandered around the house several times, but he realized that Riko was not home.

“Odd, where did Violent Girl go?”

Shi Xiaobai shouted a few times but there was no response. Suddenly, he felt an intense sense of hunger burgeoning from his stomach. This sense of hunger felt like he had repressed it for an extremely long period of time. It was like a tightly-compressed spring that rebounded up his head.

“Holy shit! So hungry!”

Shi Xiaobai nearly lost his mind due to the intense hunger pangs. He crazily rushed to the kitchen and forcefully opened the refrigerator. The refrigerator that was filled to the brim with food began pouring its contents out immediately. Clearly, Riko had prepared this early on. Shi Xiaobai gulped down a mouthful of saliva, and reached his hand into the refrigerator to grab some food to stuff food directly into his mouth.

As Shi Xiaobai chewed on cooked meat that was both cold and hard, he stuffed rice balls into his mouth. The way he devoured his food made it seem like he had been starving for months.

Only after his stomach was somewhat satiated did Shi Xiaobai contentedly close the refrigerator door. He casually walked back into the living room, and saw a white piece of paper pressed down by a television remote control on a table.

Shi Xiaobai curiously picked up the piece of paper, and saw beautiful handwriting written on it.

...

“Shi Xiaobai, I have something on, so I’ll be leaving first. I’m not sure how long your Cogitation will last, so who knows when you wake up. But first, I have to congratulate you. You have already broken into the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. I am curious what you were imagining after you entered a meditative state that allowed you to enter the Psionic Mortal Realm so quickly. It’s so unscientific!”

“Oh right, when you first enter the Psionic Mortal Realm, you will experience your first metamorphosis—‘Psionic Flushing’. Your body would automatically flush out the impurities accumulated in your body over the years. In summary, your body would be covered in a layer of smelly and sticky substance. As for how smelly it is, you probably have experienced it. Anyway, after I threw you into the bathroom, I could still smell the stench in the room. I couldn’t stand it, so I’m taking off first!”

“After you wake up, the suppressed hunger will suddenly rebound. I’ve already placed food in the refrigerator, but make

sure not to eat too much, or your stomach will not be able to handle it. Oh yes, the clothes I prepared for you was handpicked by me. Tsk tsk, go ahead and cheer as much as you like!”

“Alright, it’s time to talk about serious matters! Although you are already at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, from what I understand, you don’t even have the most basic offensive skills. In short, you are still very, very weak, extremely weak! Although amongst this batch of [Annihilation] rookies, you are the only one above A Class, as well as a Psyker, there are many rookies who are at or above the second level of Psionic Mortal Realm. There are even some who have reached the fourth level! Xiaobai, I have to tell you currently, you have no Superpower advantage at the moment. Your Psionic Ability realm is considered terrible, and without knowing any combat skills, you will be ranked last amongst this batch of rookies!”

“So, you must be mentally prepared that you would be lining the back! [Gaia]’s first principle is ‘reward the strongest, punish the weakest’. Even for rookie training, there still exists a cruelest elimination mechanism. Your instructor will randomly test you, and every time, the weakest would be eliminated. So, Xiaobai, do your best!”

“Also, make sure not to call yourself ‘This King’! Your strength won’t do, so you must learn to keep a low profile! [Gaia] encourages rookies to engage in one-on-one duels to resolve conflicts, so don’t you seek death for yourself! You must now learn with a humble heart to keep a low profile, to become stronger. Never become the last person, and on this foundation, work hard to climb higher. Xiaobai, with your talent, falling behind is just temporary, so don’t be discouraged if you encounter difficulties,

much less give up!”

“Alright, the rookie training begins on July 1. There is a clock on the wall in the living room that displays the date. Make sure to take a look at it when you wake up. Make sure not to be late on the first day, much less play truant. The instructor for this [Annihilation] batch is quite a redoubtable guy, and he is very peculiar. Anyway, don’t break any rules, don’t leave a bad impression on your instructor, and don’t enter conflicts with the other rookies. Remember to keep a low profile, a low profile!”

“As I need to earn Hero points to raise my Hero Ranking, I took on a Hero employment mission that is slightly more complicated. It will probably take me a period of time before I return. When I return, I wish to see a brand new Shi Xiaobai. Make sure not to disappoint me!”

“—Riko Minamiya.”

After Shi Xiaobai saw this, he felt mixed emotions. Breaking into the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm made him extremely excited, yet the situation described in Riko’s note gave Shi Xiaobai a heavy heart.

“Isn’t getting This King to keep a low profile equivalent to asking for his life?”

The moment Shi Xiaobai realized that he could not call himself “This King”, he felt like the world had darkened a few notches. After a long struggle, he stood up helplessly and walked towards

the wall in the living room. On the wall, there was a small LCD screen that displayed the time.

Shi Xiaobai wanted to see how many days he had left to the rookie training, because this decided how long he could go to the gaming arcade.

Shi Xiaobai went closer and focusing his eyes, he suddenly froze.

What he saw displayed on the clock was—"July 4, 10:30"!

Holy shit, already late by four days!?

Author's Note: Haha, do you think This King will write how Shi Xiaobai trains arduously for seven days, and then join the rookie training normally, so that he can ride on the momentum to put on an ostentatious act? NO! The story about Shi Xiaobai is destined to be different! Alright, a new arc is beginning.

Chapter 22: This King Has Something To Ask You

The rookie training began officially on July 1, yet it was already July 4, 10:30am. Doing the calculations, Shi Xiaobai had played truant for three days, and was late for two-and-a-half hours on the fourth day. Riko had specially mentioned in her message not to be late, much less play truant. It was unexpected that Shi Xiaobai's single deep meditative state made him guilty of both.

The most important thing he should do was of course to rush to the training grounds, and explain the reason why he had violated the rules to the seemingly-peculiar instructor. However, Shi Xiaobai was in no hurry. He slowly found a small haversack in the house, and constantly stuffed food and drinks into it. He even began carefully selecting which foods to bring.

“Being late for a minute is late, while being late for a few hours is also late, so why should This King worry?”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai left the residence slowly, and soon was on the road. Steel City remembered Riko mentioning him several times in her introduction to Steel City that the rookie training ground were south of the [Annihilation]'s jurisdiction zone. It was the southern end of Steel City.

However, which direction was south?

Shi Xiaobai looked at the crossroads in front of him and

automatically stopped. Shi Xiaobai stood at the crossroads for very long before he managed to encounter a passer-by. He immediately stopped the person and after asking which direction south was, he began walking along the roads that were paved with black steel. However, every time he encountered an intersection, Shi Xiaobai would patiently stop and wait for a passer-by and ask for directions before he continued on.

Throughout his journey, he constantly walked and stopped, but he finally arrived at the southern end of Steel City, where a gigantic iron gate was.

“This is the Gaia South Gate that leads to the Demon World!”

Shi Xiaobai awed as he looked at the steel gates, before turning to face a surprised gate-keeping guard. He was planning on asking for the location of the rookie training grounds.

The rookie training grounds were already located rather close to the South Gate, so the guard pointed out a specific route for Shi Xiaobai in a friendly manner. Shi Xiaobai nodded and thanked him before heading out according to his directions.

However, after three corners...

“Eh, did Uncle Demon World Gatekeeper say to turn left or right at the fourth intersection?”

Shi Xiaobai thought in silence for three seconds, and decided to

abandon the painful thinking process. He stopped at the crossroads and began waiting.

It was already noon, and the sun was shining brightly. After standing there for a minute, Shi Xiaobai could no longer stand it. As he looked around, he saw a short warehouse-like steel building. Shi Xiaobai immediately headed towards the iron building's shadow.

As he walked, he suddenly hear a thump, as if something had collided into steel. However, as it was slightly farther away, it didn't sound very loud, in fact, it was nearly inaudible.

Shi Xiaobai pricked up his ears as he could vaguely here the colliding sounds coming from the other side of the steel building. As he headed towards it, the sounds became clearer. When he reached the side of the steel building, the colliding sounds was nearly deafening..

“Peng! Peng! Peng!”

Shi Xiaobai took step after step towards the back of the steel building, from the colliding sound, it did not seem like it was produced by using a hammer to strike the steel walls. Soon, he reached the corner and began faintly hearing violent grunting.

“Puff! Puff! Puff!”

The breathing sounds seemed like a violent wind that blew out of

a hole in the mountains, with a force that seemed to be able to tear. Shi Xiaobai involuntarily slowed down his footsteps as the breathing slowed down too.

He was getting closer and closer. Shi Xiaobai had finally reached the corner of the steel building. Standing still for a few seconds, he slowly took a step forward, leaning his body slightly and turned his head. Immediately, he could see everything behind the steel building.

At the boundary of sunlight and the shadows stood a man. The man's back was exposed under the sunlight, filled with jaw-dropping muscles. And hidden in the shadows, was his front that seemed to contain explosive power. At this moment, this man was punching the steel buildings wall with his fists while spewing beast-like breathing from his nostrils.

And what was most shocking was that although it seemed like his fists were slamming onto the steel walls to produce the deafening sounds, Shi Xiaobai was able to see clearly that every time the fist came to 10 cm in front of the wall, it would stop. It did not make contact with the wall at all!

Looking closely, wherever the fist passed, there were ripples of white light that flashes out from the fist, like a vertical ripple was emanating from the wall. When these white ripple fluctuations hit the wall, it would produce a deafening sound, as well as cause a visible sag into the steel wall.

“This...”

Shi Xiaobai gulped down his saliva. His eyes were shimmering with burning flames as he began observing intently. The scene of the muscular man punching out with his fist was imprinted in his mind. His body involuntarily began to imitate the muscular man's actions, despite him looking extremely clumsy and ridiculous.

The muscular man punched out dozens of times, and similarly, Shi Xiaobai punched out dozens of times. The contrast was extremely disparate. One was like a ferocious beast, causing the wall to tremble with each fist, while the other looked extremely weak. While punching out, he did not even stir a weak wind from his fists.

“Phew!”

Finally, the muscular man seemed to feel tired and pulled back his fist to stand straight. After taking a few deep breaths, he turned to look at Shi Xiaobai. At the same time, Shi Xiaobai pulled back his fists, and turned to look at the muscular man.

Reflected in Shi Xiaobai's pupils was a face that wasn't too much to be described as 'extremely vicious'. A patch of hair that circled the remaining black hair had been trimmed away, and in the middle of his head was yellow hair that stood up like a rooster's crown. At this moment, his eyes were filled with intense flames, while a hideous scar went from his forehead down past his right eye. His mustache was a messy scrawl, and a prominent double chin brought out the terrifying weirdness of his face.

The top of Shi Xiaobai's head only reached the muscular man's chest, and as they faced each other, Shi Xiaobai was like a tiny tree sapling that had been shrouded by a large mountain.

“You have a problem?”

A coarse and rich voice, interspersed with a tinge of gasping, blared out from the muscular man. It sounded like the low growl of a beast, filled with an irrepressible hint of brutality.

Immediately an undeniable idea came to Shi Xiaobai—This man could beat him down in one punch, or even kill him in one punch!

This was what Riko said, to definitely not mess with others! If he dared to call himself “This King”, or say any shameless words, then the man would mercilessly use his fist that could even cause tremors into the steel walls at his head!

Shi Xiaobai immediately knew the best choice for him now was—keeping a low profile, keeping a low profile, and keeping a low profile.

“This King has something to ask you.”

However, his high-spiritedness, and even arrogant sounding words, still came out of Shi Xiaobai. He said it without any trembling or moments of hesitation.

However, the moment he said this, even the sound of wind fell

silent. The shadow at the back of the steel building immediately seem to fall into dead silence.

The muscular man crinkled his eyebrows, as if pondering over Shi Xiaobai's words, or pondering whether he should wave his fists.

Shi Xiaobai held his chest straight out, and looked up to face the muscular man directly. There was no haughtiness or fear in his eyes, not even the slightest emotions.

There was only calmness and naturalness. It was as if he had done something normal like wave hello.

“This King has something to ask you.” Shi Xiaobai repeated himself again.

Against this “ferocious” muscular man, Shi Xiaobai did not choose to keep a low profile, not because he wanted to flaunt himself, just because—This was him, this was Shi Xiaobai. You ask why he did that? Because there is no why!

Regardless of the reason, there was already no way to reverse the impending disaster, because the muscular man had already slowly raised his extremely firm fists.

Author's Note: In order to enhance the chapter's depiction and immersion, it was written in a bit more detail. Also, this novel's battle system has already been decided. I'll not talk about the

various magical superpowers first, but even Psionic Ability combat would be very interesting. Let me slowly introduce it, and roll it out! Right, some people might think that Shi Xiaobai was simply courting death by doing this. Then I have to say that this novel is a story about how a chuunibyou youth, who constantly courts death, but lives better than anyone else!

Chapter 23: The Great Figure Shi Xiaobai

The muscular man slowly lifted his fist, and midair it suddenly stretched out into a palm, as the joint in his arm folded backwards. Surprisingly, his palm touched the back of his head, and his five stretched out fingers began to bend, slightly scratching his scalp a few times.

And the “ferociousness” in his eyes immediately melted away. Replacing it was a nearly honest, good down-to-earth glow.

The muscular man was actually scratching his head, as he asked Shi Xiaobai in wonder, “You..Eh, you are one of the seven Dukes of China?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, as he failed to react in time to the muscular man’s actions. However, when he heard the muscular man’s question, Shi Xiaobai denied without any thought. “No!”

Seven Dukes of China? Shi Xiaobai expressed that he had never ever heard of it before. Out of habit, he waved his hand, and then with a spin, lifted it to his forehead, covering half his face. He coldly smiled, “This King is the King of all, the King of Gods, the King of the Worlds, King amongst kings—Arceus . Jade Emperor of the Nine Heavens . Alexander I!”

The muscular man was stunned momentarily after hearing this. After pondering for a moment, his face turned distressed as he scratched his head, saying, “About that...Me have not heard

before...”

A body as strong as a beast contrasted greatly with the honest expression of distress, it highlighted the muscular man’s silly temperament even more.

Shi Xiaobai immediately gave a look of disappointment, as he shook his head and said with a sigh, “Steel Ox, you are still young after all, that is why you are ignorant and ill-informed.”

Due to his disappointment, what should have been the title, “Steel Wall Shaking Powerful Ox” was shortened by Shi Xiaobai to “Steel Ox”.

“Ah? Me name isn’t Steel Ox. Me name is Ye Jiaquan! [1](#)”

Ye Jiaquan awkwardly waved his hand, then he lowered his head to say in an honest manner, “Me doesn’t know anything. Lingcun always says Me is dumb.”

Upon saying the name “Lingcun”, Ye Jiaquan’s eyes seemed to flash with a beam of cordialness. It looked like that was a person he trusted greatly.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and acknowledged Ye Jiaquan’s dumbness. Recalling that he came here to ask for directions, he immediately decide to no longer continue explaining his identity. He changed topics and asked, “This King has something to ask you.”

This was the third time Shi Xiaobai said those words. Ye Jiaquan's expression turned extremely serious as he nodded, as he said seriously, "Please ask!"

Shi Xiaobai said in all seriousness, "This King was struck by a ninja's Sharingan magic, and accidentally fell into a samsara maze. I have been unable to find my way out. Steel Ox, do you know how to get to the rookie training grounds?"

Upon hearing this, Ye Jiaquan was stunned. He felt that the tiny youth in front of him spoke in an erudite and profound manner. From the beginning, he had failed to understand anything that he had said. However, he actually understood his final question. Furthermore, he happened to know the answer!

Ye Jiaquan immediately said with excitement, "Me know! Me know! Actually, Me is one of the rookies of the current batch of [Annihilation] rookies, so Me know where the rookie training ground is!"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned hearing this. He sized up Ye Jiaquan's massive body and that "ferocious" but mature-looking face, and then thinking of that terrifying punch from before, he was unable to make the connection between this person and the word "rookie".

Ye Jiaquan seemed to notice Shi Xiaobai's doubts, as he scratched his head with a smile and said, "Actually Me is 16 years old!"

Shi Xiaobai was immediately dumbfounded, and was

momentarily at a loss as to how to answer him.

Ye Jiaquan clearly was used to others appearing shocked after knowing his age. He did not proceed to make any more explanations, but naturally changed the subject by saying, “Why do you want to go to the rookie training grounds?”

Shi Xiaobai restored his calmness and thought through his words, before speaking solemnly, “This King was sealed by the Evil Gods of various worlds, causing This King’s strength to fall to the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Now to remove the seal, This King is temporarily joining [Gaia]. Like you, This King is a rookie of the current batch of [Annihilation] rookies! However, as This King was busy administering his own world, that time could only be spared today, as such there were few days of accidentally playing truant.”

Ye Jiaquan was confused hearing this. He could not make any sense out of Shi Xiaobai’s words, and after trying to understand Shi Xiaobai’s words for some time, his eyes lit up. “So, you are actually an [Annihilation] rookie? And you are joining the training today?”

Although he now knew that the youth in front of him was a rookie like him, Ye Jiaquan still spoke politely. In his understanding of the world, as long as it was someone intelligent, he was worthy of being respected. For example, a person like Chen Lingcun or a person like this youth in front of him that he could not even remember the name of. He couldn’t understand most of the youth’s words, clearly indicating how this youth’s intelligence was far better than his.

Shi Xiaobai did not pay attention to these details. He only calmly nodded his head.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai nod his head, Ye Jiaquan's somewhat dazed eyes revealed an unconcealable look of anticipation. To prevent himself from losing decorum because of his excitement, he cramped up as he watched Shi Xiaobai's eyes and pleaded, "If that is the case, can Me..can Me request for you to join Team Red?"

"Team Red?" Shi Xiaobai asked in wonder.

Ye Jiaquan smacked himself in the forehead, as he suddenly recalled that the youth in front of him had just arrived today. He hurriedly used clumsy and ambiguous words to explain. "About that...The instructor split the rookies into two teams, Team Red and Team Blue. During every assessment, the two teams will take part in a competition. The failing team would have one person eliminated. Me is from Team Red, so Me hopes that you will join Team Red!"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised hearing this. He remembered Riko mentioning in her note that the instructor would frequently have assessments, and the person with the worst results would be eliminated every time. According to Ye Jiaquan's explanation, this batch's instructor had clearly changed the rules. And it seemed like the instructor felt that the importance of a team's strength took precedence over individual strength?

"This King cannot be eliminated regardless of anything. It looks

like This King has to seriously consider which team to choose.”

With this in mind, Shi Xiaobai said, “Which team is stronger?”

There was no doubt about the answer if one asked a member of Team Red which team was stronger. However, Ye Jiaquan did not give the answer Shi Xiaobai expected. Instead he lowered his head and said with an indignant tone, “Team Blue..is stronger.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, but he quickly understood that this monster-shaped honest youth with a simpleton heart did not know how to lie.

“Honest Steel Ox, This King wasn’t wrong about you!”

Shi Xiaobai even felt touched as he already made up his mind. However, he carried on asking, “How many times have the two teams competed.? How many victories and defeats were there?”

Ye Jiaquan maintained his lowered head as he clenched his fists somewhat tightly, whispering, “Twice. Team Blue won both times.”

Shi Xiaobai carried on asking. “This King heard that this batch has a rookie at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Which team is he in?”

Ye Jiaquan lowered his head even more. “Team Blue...”

Shi Xiaobai sighed. It seemed like the disparity in strength between Team Red and Team Blue was not trivial, however, this did not affect his decision.

“This King hates how the strong bullies the weak, but likes beating the strong with the weak!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai was just about to tell Ye Jiaquan that he was willing to join Team Red.

Suddenly, Ye Jiaquan lifted his lowered head suddenly.

“Although Team Blue is temporarily stronger than Team Red, but Me believes that it is a matter of time before it will surpass Team Blue!”

Ye Jiaquan raised his clenched fist to his chest as he lifted his head towards the distant sky. His voice exuded confidence. His confidence did not seem spurious, but came from a realistic source that he could rely on.

What suddenly gave this honest youth such fiery hot confidence?

Ye Jiaquan gently lowered his head and looked at Shi Xiaobai as he said loudly, “Please, you have to join Team Red! The captain of Me’s Team Red is Shi Xiaobai!”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised, thinking that he had misheard him.

Ye Jiaquan's fiery voice sounded once again. "Captain Shi Xiaobai will definitely lead Team Red to defeat Team Blue. Me believes in him!"

When Ye Jiaquan said the three words, "Shi Xiaobai", his eyes glowed with a look of adoration, as if he was talking about a great figure!

Author's Note: This is the setting up of the new arc. It's the show before the climax, and any climax needs building up. But I will try to write this building up in a more interesting manner, so that everyone wouldn't find it too boring.

Chapter 24: Shi Xiaobai Is Not The Hope Of Team Red

Having heard his name from Ye Jiaquan's mouth, and that he was the captain of Team Red, Shi Xiaobai was completely at a loss. He nearly asked, "When did This King become the captain of Team Red?", but he could tell the nearly pious veneration in Ye Jiaquan's eyes, which suddenly gave him a new idea.

"He is This King's first believer in this world! No, This King has to test his loyalty!"

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai pretended to look puzzled and asked, "Who is Shi Xiaobai? Is he strong?"

"You actually don't know Shi Xiaobai?" Ye Jiaquan immediately revealed a shocked expression, as if the fact that anyone that did not know of Shi Xiaobai was an incredulous matter.

Moments later, Ye Jiaquan's honest expression turned serious as he said formally, "Captain Shi Xiaobai is destined to shock China, no, he is a super genius destined to shock the entire world!"

Shi Xiaobai kept nodding his head in his heart, as he thought deep down that despite Steel Ox appearing dumb, he was actually pretty clever. The fact he knew that he, Shi Xiaobai would be destined to shock the entire world meant he had a better awareness than anyone else!

Shi Xiaobai felt ease of mind, but that wasn't enough, hence, he thrust his head and asked, "Is he really that powerful?"

"Yes!"

Ye Jiaquan's face immediately looked anxious as he scratched his head. He began to excitedly count the edges the idol in his heart had. "Captain Shi Xiaobai not only has S Class Mind Expanse and Psy-genes, he even has the Perception of God! He is the highest rated rookie in this batch. During the ability test, Captain Shi Xiaobai even went easy! If Captain Shi Xiaobai had been slightly more serious, he would definitely be a S+ Class rookie! Captain Shi Xiaobai is a world-class genius!"

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt that Ye Jiaquan was a rare promising person. He was a talent who knew how to speak the truth! Shi Xiaobai was very pleased in his heart, but he still asked with a straight face, "Is that all?"

Seeing his idol not acknowledged by him, Ye Jiaquan immediately turned anxious. He scratched his head incessantly, puzzling over how he could convince the youth in front of him, or how to let the youth believe that "Captain Shi Xiaobai was an extraordinary genius". In a short while, Ye Jiaquan seemed to think of something. His face flushed suddenly as his limbs turned stiff, his motions looking restricted.

"That...Me's Captain Shi Xiaobai is Senior Riko's man!"

Ye Jiaquan said proudly, "Senior Riko is the daughter of the

Minamiya family, the only student of His Excellency One-Pun, and this generation's Oceanic Pontus! As for Captain Shi Xiaobai, he has subdued Senior Riko!"

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a few seconds when this was said.

"Violent Girl is indeed This King's person, so that probably counts as having subdued Violent Girl, right?"

Shi Xiaobai had such thoughts, but somehow felt that Ye Jiaquan's explanation sounded weird, yet he couldn't tell what was odd about it. However, an inexplicable sense of pleasure seemed to fill his body, it made Shi Xiaobai so excited that he got goosebumps.

"Not bad, not bad. This is a good devotee of This King. However, This King must dig deeper into his beliefs!"

Shi Xiaobai made up his mind, and pretended to look impatient. "Is there anything else?"

Ye Jiaquan immediately widened his eyes, and after a moment of silence, he took a deep breath and exclaimed, "Captain Shi Xiaobai once said that 'this world does not have any geniuses, only the strong!'. For a great genius to say such inspirational words, Me, Me is very moved! Me is not some genius. Me is very dumb. Me can only work hard, work harder and work even harder, so..Me really felt extremely, extremely moved!"

Awkward but sincere words came out from the honest muscular man's mouth, as if he was proclaiming the adoration and admiration in his heart.

“This King is really too excellent. Just a simple sentence is enough to affect numerous people!”

Shi Xiaobai felt flattered, and he could almost no longer keep up his cold facial expression.

The slow Ye Jiaquan did not notice the strange behavior of the youth, but after noticing that he was silent, he thought he was too dumb with words that he had failed to convince him. Ye Jiaquan truly believed the youth would join Team Red to become a teammate, and not a rival. However, he knew very well the disparity in strength between the two teams, hence he did not know how to convince the youth. He had to thicken his skin to mention his captain's name, Shi Xiaobai. However, he never expected that even Captain Shi Xiaobai was not enough.

Ye Jiaquan immediately felt discouraged, but he still wanted to make one final effort. Hence, he said seriously, “It is a fact Team Red is weaker than Team Blue, but all of that is just temporary! That's because Captain Shi Xiaobai is like you. He has yet to participate in the rookie training as of today! Me believes that once Captain Shi Xiaobai comes, Team Red will definitely be able to defeat Team Blue! Me isn't good with words, but Me truly wishes that you can join Team Red!”

“Captain Shi Xiaobai will definitely not let everyone in Team Red down! Me guarantees it!” Ye Jiaquan slapped his chest forcefully,

issuing a resounding sound.

Upon hearing these heartfelt words, Shi Xiaobai was very touched.

“Hai, this is such a pious devotee. This King can no longer bear to test him further. It looks like it’s time This King reveals his true identity!”

Shi Xiaobai felt that the time was ripe, and was prepared to reveal his identity, telling Ye Jiaquan that he was Shi Xiaobai, that he would lead Team Red to beat Team Blue badly!

“Actually, This King...”

At this moment, a cold voice suddenly echoed, cutting off Shi Xiaobai’s words!

“It’s useless even if Shi Xiaobai come. In my opinion, it’s better if he doesn’t come.”

The words Shi Xiaobai said midway were swallowed back when this voice echoed, not because of the biting meaning behind the words, but because the voice was too close by. Shi Xiaobai looked in the direction of the voice as his pupils constricted. He saw a silver-haired youth, about the same age as him, had suddenly appeared beside Ye Jiaquan’s massive body.

The silver-haired youth stood in the middle of the sunlight, and

was equally thin like Shi Xiaobai. His skin was as white as snow, and he had very good looks. He was dressed in a gray t-shirt and blue shorts. His hands were in his pockets, while his body was leaning slightly backwards. On the corner of his mouth, there was a faint smile.

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes, so as to confirming that his eyes had not deceived him. He was immediately alarmed because the sudden appearance of this youth was too sudden. The back of the steel building and the tall surrounding wall had a gap of ten meters, so for him to appear suddenly in such a wide corridor, the only way was to jump down from the surrounding walls or the steel building, if not, it was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to miss him. Yet, if he jumped down, it would definitely have caused some non-trivial commotion.

However, this youth looked as if he had appeared out of thin air. He had not jumped down from the walls or building, nor did he walk from either ends of the corridor. It was like he had always been there, as if before he said those words, he was already standing beside Ye Jiaquan, right there in the sun!

How did he suddenly appear? Could he teleport?

“Shi Xiaobai cannot change the sure-lose situation of Team Red. No matter how gifted Shi Xiaobai is, he is after all still a weakling at this moment, a weak and powerless weakling.”

The silver-haired youth calmly said those words, without any emotion mixed in, as if he was merely stating an objective fact.

“Shi Xiaobai, is not the hope of Team Red.”

Chapter 25: The Targeted Shi Xiaobai

The sunlight scattered on the handsome youth's silver hair, causing a warm glow to reflect off him. It wasn't blinding to the eyes, but instead made one feel a sense of warmth. However, the silver-haired youth's words sounded extremely harsh to the ears, it even made Shi Xiaobai's heart turn cold.

“Shi Xiaobai, is not the hope of Team Red.”

The silver-haired youth seemed to be merely stating an irrefutable fact. His eyes were calm, and his tone even calmer. However, this calmness seemed to be even more deadly than having any other emotion.

Although Shi Xiaobai was shocked at how the silver-haired youth appeared out of thin air, he immediately felt that his dignity as King had been insulted after hearing those demeaning words. He could not stand for it.

However, just as Shi Xiaobai was about to refute him, the silver-haired youth said another sentence that made Shi Xiaobai involuntarily close his mouth.

“Shi Xiaobai, is the hope of all humanity!”

The silver-haired remained calm saying those words, but the look in his eyes seemed to burn even hotter.

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily dumbfounded. This was the first time he felt like his intellect was not sufficient to understand what had happened. The transition of this situation was too abrupt, wasn't it? Didn't he just label him as a "powerless" weakling? Why was he suddenly elevated to becoming the "hope of all humanity"?

Then he heard Ye Jiaquan say in a muffled voice, "Me also believes Captain Shi Xiaobai is the hope of all humanity! However, Lingcun, Me thinks for the first time that what you said isn't right! Me believes Captain Shi Xiaobai can definitely save Team Red! Me believes in him!"

The silver-haired youth that was addressed as "Lingcun"¹ chuckled and said, "Silly Ye, I personally adore Shi Xiaobai, and firmly believe Shi Xiaobai will become the strongest S Class Hero in the future. In the future, he would wreck havoc in the Demon World, withstanding the invasion of aliens, and protect all of humanity. And for that unpredictable 'fourth apocalypse' that will eventually happen, I believe Shi Xiaobai will become the most dazzling sun!"

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his blood surge upon hearing this. He began fantasizing himself heroically saving the world, and being sung praises by every human in the world. The way he looked at the silver-haired youth immediately turned extremely gentle. For this silver-haired youth to be able to so accurately depict the future, could he be the legendary prophet?

As Shi Xiaobai was in seventh heaven, Lingcun suddenly said something unexpected as he sighed, "However, we have to admit an irrefutable fact—Shi Xiaobai is still a weakling. He has yet to

grow stronger yet. He is still a weak ‘infant’! According to information gathered eleven days ago, Shi Xiaobai has yet to begun Psionic Ability cultivation. Even a genius like Shi Xiaobai can at best reach the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in eleven days. The enhancement Shi Xiaobai can bring to Team Red’s strength would be trivial, it still cannot change the fate of Team Red losing to Team Blue!”

The moment Lingcun finished speaking, Ye Jiaquan said with an anxious voice, “Me...Me can’t out talk you! But Me believes Captain Shi Xiaobai can lead Team Red to defeat Team Blue!”

Lingcun’s face that was as handsome as an elf revealed a look of helplessness. With his hands in his pockets, he shrugged his shoulders and said, “Silly Ye, since you refuse to come to your senses, then let me tell you a grim truth. If Shi Xiaobai appears, he will not only fail to strengthen Team Red, he will even make Team Red weaker!”

“What nonsense are you saying!? Me doesn’t believe!” Ye Jiaquan’s face flushed as heavy air sprayed out his nose, as if Lingcun’s words had angered him.

Shi Xiaobai felt mixed emotions seeing this. On one side, one was a fanatic devotee, while the other side was a rational devotee. They were both his devotees, but the two had entered an argument because of him, so he was truly at a loss as to who to help.

“This is a clash of beliefs! Go on, let This King see which one of you has a stronger belief!”

Shi Xiaobai decided to watch coldly by the side, and immediately turned silent. However, Ye Jiaquan and Lingcun seemed lost in their own worlds. From the beginning to the end, Lingcun did not seem to look Shi Xiaobai in the eye, amusing Shi Xiaobai.

“The furthest distance in the world is that you don’t know that This King is here when This King is standing in front of you!”

Shi Xiaobai snickered, as his ears pricked up. Although he felt disdain towards the way Lingcun spoke, he could not help but feel curious.

Why would Shi Xiaobai’s appearance weaken Team Red?

Lingcun sighed and said to Ye Jiaquan, “Silly Ye, have you forgotten ‘Protect the Captain’ that Instructor Hisith mentioned?”

Ye Jiaquan was stunned hearing this as he muttered to himself moments later, “Me..Me doesn’t remember.”

Lingcun gave an ‘as expected’ expression and said, “When Instructor Hisith designated Shi Xiaobai to be Team Red’s captain, Song Xiao’s group had verbally protested. For that, Instructor Hisith came up with the ‘Protect the Captain’ rule. Each of the three strongest people in Team Red has a chance to challenge the current captain once!”

“If Shi Xiaobai were to appear, he will definitely have to accept

Song Xiao's challenge, and against Song Xiao, who is at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, Shi Xiaobai is bound to lose. When the position of captain falls into the hands of Song Xiao, Silly Ye, you should know very well what sort of person Song Xiao is. Do you think Team Red led by Song Xiao would become stronger or weaker?"

After hearing Lingcun's words, Ye Jiaquan was momentarily at a loss. He refused to admit such a fact, but he had no means of refuting. He could only mutter with a red face, "That..That..."

Seeing this, Lingcun shook his head and sneered, "And it seems that you have forgotten about the elimination mechanism Instructor Hisith mentioned?"

Ye Jiaquan said with a stunned look, "Isn't it internally voted by the team?"

Lingcun revealed a helpless expression as he shrugged his shoulders and said, "The internal vote is just temporary since Shi Xiaobai hasn't appeared! The elimination mechanism Instructor Hisith actually announced was that the captain had the sole discretion to decide on the eliminated candidate! Do you understand? If Song Xiao and those jerks in his gang obtain the position of captain, who do you think will they eliminate first?"

"He will first choose to eliminate Shi Xiaobai! Although Shi Xiaobai is a talent that [Gaia] will definitely pamper and protect, who do you think Instructor Hisith is? He is a freak who has violated numerous regulations of the organization, but still enjoys a high position! Since he dared to set such a rule, that proves that

he has the guts to directly kick Shi Xiaobai out of rookie training. So if Shi Xiaobai were to appear, not only would he cause Team Red to fall apart, he will harm himself too. Of course, if a genius like Shi Xiaobai were to leave, the one crying would be [Gaia]. When that happens, someone from the upper echelons would appear to mediate, but by then, Shi Xiaobai would have been greatly disgraced.”

Lingcun’s words analyzed the situation in an extremely clear manner. Even a simpleton like Ye Jiaquan could understand what he said. Immediately, he said with a wretched face, “This...is too unfair for Captain Shi Xiaobai! Why does Me..Me feel that Instructor Hisith is targeting Captain Shi Xiaobai?”

Shi Xiaobai also felt that he had been targeted by this baffling instructor. These scammy rules seemed like it was forcing him to have no choice. Either he was to keep hiding away, or he would be robbed off his position as captain after he appeared and then forcefully eliminated.

“Foolish human, is targeting This King your last stand?”

Shi Xiaobai felt unhappy, for he did not wish to be so easily eliminated. It was even more impossible for him to hide himself.

How was he to make a breakthrough in this situation?

“Instructor Hisith isn’t targeting Shi Xiaobai. He is just playing a game. Instructor Hisith is a madman who treats everything as a game. To place Shi Xiaobai in such a situation is just an interesting

game for him.”

Underneath the silver hair, a confident smile appeared on an extremely handsome face as Lingcun said softly, “However, regardless of the game, the game’s creator will always intentionally or unintentionally leave a path that allows you to win the game. And I happen to know what that path is!”

At this moment, Lingcun’s right hand, which had always been in his pocket, raised up as he pointed out his thumb at his chest.

Author’s Note: Haha, two characters that everyone thought were antagonists are actually Shi Xiaobai’s comrades. You didn’t expect that, right? The story needs fleshing out, but I will try to write these parts in as lively as I possibly can. I will definitely not disappoint everyone when it reaches a climax!

Chapter 26: This King, Tu Dahei

The silver-haired youth who pointed at himself was exceptionally handsome. The corners of his mouth revealed a confident smile, which was both bedazzling, and at the same time, gave a sense of reliability.

Not only did Ye Jiaquan's eyes light up, even Shi Xiaobai began to faintly feel a sense of anticipation. The way to resolve the situation? What was it?

Lingcun said, "On the surface, Shi Xiaobai seems to have only two choices. First, it is to voluntarily concede the position of captain, and try to be on friendly terms with Song Xiao, so that he wouldn't be eliminated. However, this approach is too humiliating for Shi Xiaobai. Even the two of us might not be able to accept it."

When Ye Jiaquan heard this, he shook his head and said loudly, "Me doesn't accept it!"

Lingcun chuckled and carried on, "The second choice is to continue playing truant, and only appearing after his strength rises to the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. As long as he can beat Song Xiao, Shi Xiaobai's position as captain will not be taken away from him."

"But even a S+ Class genius would take at least three months to reach the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm from a mortal state. Although the rookie training can be said to be optional for a genius like Shi Xiaobai, it is extremely important for members of

Team Red. In three months, probably most of Team Red's members would be eliminated, with nearly none left. So this approach might work, but as a member of Team Red, I really do not wish for Shi Xiaobai to make this decision.”

Ye Jiaquan scratched his head and agreed, “Me does not wish Captain Shi Xiaobai to carry on playing truant. But Me..really can't think of any other way out. Lingcun, you are so smart, you must have an idea, right?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai could not help but look at the silver-haired youth. The two choices Lingcun mentioned were naturally something he vehemently opposed. However, he could not think of a better solution in such a short period of time. From the look Lingcun gave, it was like he had already thought of a feasible approach. Shi Xiaobai pricked his ears up as he looked forward to it.

Lingcun did not plan on keeping them guessing, as he directly and simply said, “There naturally is a solution, and it is very simple. I think Shi Xiaobai should join the rookie training, but he has to conceal his identity!”

Once these words were said, Shi Xiaobai and Ye Jiaquan were momentarily stunned. They never expected that the approach Lingcun placed so much confidence in, was actually so simple. In fact, it sounded like there was nothing special about it. However, on further thought, concealing his identity could avoid the previous two scenarios, but was concealing his identity going to be easy?

Ye Jiaquan doubtfully asked, “Me might be dumb, but Me knows that for rookies to enter the team, they have to go through a review. How will Captain Shi Xiaobai be able to deceive Instructor Hisith?”

Lingcun smiled lightly and retorted with a question, “Why is there a need to deceive Instructor Hisith?”

“Ah?” Ye Jiaquan was stunned.

Lingcun did not expect this simpleton, Silly Ye, to be able to figure out the mystery behind his words. He immediately and directly revealed the answer.

“I said before that any game’s creator will intentionally or unintentionally leave hope for the game to be won. A game that is impossible to complete is destined to be boring. As an avid game fanatic, Instructor Hisith, by already deliberately designing a silly game that targets Shi Xiaobai, then he must naturally have left some loophole he didn’t think of that allows the game to be completed, and that will also please him.”

Lingcun dug his hands back into his pockets and then rocked his body. He said while looking up, “And the loophole Instructor Hisith unintentionally left behind is what I just said—concealment of identity. Shi Xiaobai can think of a way to conceal his identity, and continuously grow stronger while joining the rookie training. When the time is ripe, he can reveal his identity, and then defeat Song Xiao. This way, not only would he defend his position as captain, he can also join the training. This is undoubtedly a good method that serves both purposes.”

“And Instructor Hisith is the factor we do not need to worry about at all. Instructor Hisith will actually be very happy to see Shi Xiaobai conceal his identity. An ingenious method of cracking the game is what a game creator looks forward to the most. Although Instructor Hisith might very likely increase the difficulty of the game because of this, there is one thing for sure, Instructor Hisith will not only not expose Shi Xiaobai’s identity, he will instead help Shi Xiaobai conceal his identity. That’s because he wishes that the game will have unexpected developments while under his control.”

“The most important thing is that the information of Shi Xiaobai’s identity is very scarce. It was said that at the Rookie Evaluation Test, Shi Xiaobai’s appearance and departure were all very sudden. As such, no one in the testing room had managed to snap a photo of him. The upper echelons of [Gaia] would not easily reveal information about Shi Xiaobai. As for those rookies that took the test with Shi Xiaobai, for some unknown reason, their faces will show a look of displeasure at the mention of Shi Xiaobai, unwilling to say anything else. So although most rookies already know of the uproar Shi Xiaobai’s testing results has caused, none of them knows what Shi Xiaobai looks like.”

“Hence, concealing his identity is definitely something absolutely feasible.”

Lingcun was extremely eloquent and explained it to the point. Ye Jiaquan kept nodding as he listened. When the explanation came to an end, he applauded and cheered, giving a silly smile.

Shi Xiaobai also understood Lingcun’s idea, and immediately felt

that Lingcun's argument made sense. If Instructor Hisith truly behaved like Lingcun's analysis, and was a game maniac who was extremely wicked, then the strategy of "identity concealment" was indeed within the defined rules. It was more likely for Instructor Hisith's to connive with him than expose him. If the upper echelons of [Gaia] had deliberately concealed his identity, and along with the fact that Yang Yang and company kept their mouths shut, then none of the other rookies knew what he looked like.

Furthermore, if the current situation was understood as a game, then the only challenge Shi Xiaobai was facing was to level up and encounter enemies. If he wanted to level up, he had to first engage in a battle with enemies several times stronger than him. If he wanted to avoid the battle, then he needed to give up on the orthodox path of leveling up.

And concealing his identity had basically resolved the two aforementioned conundrums. It was equivalent to mixing with the enemy undetected, and secretly leveling up. When he reached a sufficient high level, he could defeat the enemy's BOSS so as to complete his counterattack. Thinking it through carefully, it was indeed a very ingenious method of clearing the game.

"Although This King prefers to face things head on, This King was after all, once called the King of Strategy back in the days of raiding the world of games. This strategy of 'identity concealment' seems pretty interesting!"

Shi Xiaobai was already beginning to seriously consider Lingcun's suggestion.

Ye Jiaquan, who was simpering by the side, suddenly thought of something as he said with a wry face, “But how can Me let Captain Shi Xiaobai know of this good idea?”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised hearing this, as he couldn't help but be amused.

“This King is omnipotent, omnipresent, and omniscient!”

Shi Xiaobai felt that he had been silent for too long. He was considering whether he should show them mercy by revealing his identity. After all, the two people in front of him were his pious devotees. Although one was passionate but brainless, and the other was cold and wise, their faith was beyond doubt.

Just as Shi Xiaobai was hesitating, Lingcun suddenly said, “Silly Ye, do you think Shi Xiaobai can't think of something I thought of? Shi Xiaobai, is definitely a lot smarter than me!”

Ye Jiaquan's eyes immediately lit up, as he smiled and said, “Why did Me forget? Captain Shi Xiaobai must have already come up with this idea!”

Lingcun nodded and said, “Maybe Shi Xiaobai will soon join the rookie training with his identity concealed. No, maybe he is already hiding amongst the rookies!”

Ye Jiaquan immediately asked with excitement, “Really!?”

Lingcun chuckled. “So look forward to it. Although Shi Xiaobai is temporarily unable to be the hope of Team Red, he will one day suddenly appear before everyone and prove his glory! Maybe a person beside you is actually Shi Xiaobai, and maybe while Team Red has been suffering, he has been silently accompanying us, silently growing stronger! Maybe Shi Xiaobai will similarly see the hard work we put in. And maybe by the time he reveals his identity, we might already be his friends!”

Lingcun’s pulled his hand out from his pocket and pointed to the sun, proclaiming loudly, “Maybe, as we think he is hiding in the dark night, while we wait for dawn, he has already appeared by our side, emitting the light and warmth like the sun.”

“Silly Ye, maybe Shi Xiaobai has always been by our side!”

Ye Jiaquan turned agitated listening to this as his eyes went red. He nodded continuously in a forceful manner, producing choked sounds of “Un”!

Shi Xiaobai was similarly inexplicably touched listening to this. He felt that the Shi Xiaobai as described by Lingcun was such an endearing person, a person so worthy of respect.

“This King, has always been by your side!”

Just thinking of himself standing in front of everyone in Team Red and saying those words, made Shi Xiaobai’s heart palpitate, his chest turning warm.

“Oh, right. This brother, have you considered which team you plan on joining?”

Lingcun, who never looked straight at Shi Xiaobai, suddenly turned to face Shi Xiaobai and asked him lightly.

Shi Xiaobai's stirring thoughts were interrupted, and was unable to react in time. He subconsciously said, “This King will join Team Red!”

Ye Jiaquan immediately cheered, “That's great!”

Lingcun also revealed a faint smile and took a few steps forward and stretched his hand out, “Welcome to Team Red. I am Chen Lingcun.”

His slender, white fingers looked very long, and under the illumination of the sun, one could see crystalline blood vessels under the nearly transparent skin.

Those hands were like delicate boneless hands.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated silently before reaching out with his equally white, but apparently generous and warm hand, gripping Lingcun's hand lightly.

“This King, Tu Dahei¹.”

Shi Xiaobai reported a name he fabricated at the last moment, while his heart was blooming with a smile.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not seem to notice that the silver-haired youth in front of him had a similar smile, however, that smile seemed like it had a playful and strange hint to it.

Chapter 27: O' My Beloved Little Toy

Shi Xiaobai decided to take up Lingcun's proposal and conceal his identity. Hence, he came up with the dorky name, 'Tu Dahei', successfully mixing with these two Team Red members.

It was noon, and it was also the precious break period for the rookies. However, Lingcun suggested Shi Xiaobai to use this period of time to meet Instructor Hisith, and explain the reason for missing classes for the past few days. As such, the three immediately set off for the rookie training grounds.

Ye Jiaquan did not seem to have the slightest doubt about Shi Xiaobai's identity or name. His extremely simple brain was already filled with the two matters—"Captain Shi Xiaobai might be beside us" and "Team Red has gotten a new member", so all he could do was giggle in a silly fashion. From time to time, he would issue a good-natured "Heh heh" chuckle.

On the way, Lingcun would occasionally make conversation with Shi Xiaobai, mainly to inform Shi Xiaobai of certain things to look out for, for example, a few taboos regarding Instructor Hisith, or a few figures amongst the rookies in this batch that should not be provoked, as well as the power distribution amongst the [Annihilation] rookies.

"This batch of [Annihilation] rookies are split into Team Blue and Red. Team Blue has always been in a dominant position, because their captain is a strong person at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. As such, the team cohesion of Team Blue is extremely high, so they are united against external enemies. As for

Team Red, we already have internal fractures.”

Lingcun sighed and gave his analysis. “Due to differences in opinion for voting, Team Red currently has three different factions. The strongest faction is Song Xiao’s gang, and the faction that can barely compete with them is the one which Ye Jiaquan and I are in, the Han Feng group. The remaining weakest faction are comprised of those who believe voting should be personal, so they refuse to join any group.”

“Due to two rounds of elimination after voting, Team Red’s internal strife has reached such an intensified point that it is irreparable. Although Song Xiao is the strongest person in Team Red, but I personally am dismissive of Song Xiao’s exploits, so I do not wish you would join Song Xiao’s group. However, after you join Team Red, we would respect your decision regardless of which faction you join.”

As Shi Xiaobai listened to Lingcun, he gently nodded his head, and occasionally issued an “Orh” as a response.

Although Shi Xiaobai looked uninterested, Lingcun still carried on mentioning things Shi Xiaobai had to look out for with great patience.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai did not listen to any of this. He was actually considering more important things, such as how did Ye Jiaquan’s fist cause a depression in the wall over empty space? For example, how did Lingcun suddenly appear out of thin air? What sort of technique did he use?

“This Steel Ox is only ranked third in Team Red, and isn’t even in the top five when it comes to the all the rookies in [Annihilation]. This King can’t even understand his fist!”

As Shi Xiaobai recalled the power struggle between the factions described by Lingcun, he immediately felt the stress.

“Looks like Violent Girl did not lie to This King. This King is probably ranked at the bottom of this batch of rookies.”

Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat indignant, but he had no choice but to admit that he was weak. As he glanced at the silver-haired youth and the muscular man beside him, he could not help but think of the words, “maybe Shi Xiaobai has always been by our side”. Immediately, he felt a warm rush in his chest.

“Whatever, whatever. This King shall use a millionth of my effort. A serious Shi Xiaobai even makes This King feel afraid of himself.”

“Wahaha, Laugh out loud! Be excited! Rookies of [Annihilation], your King is here!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his repressed moods swept away. He began to feel great anticipation for the rookie training.

...

...

The steel building Ye Jiaquan used to practice his fist was not too far from the rookie training grounds. After a few minutes of walking, the three of them arrived at their destination. On the way there, they had encountered quite a number of rookies, however, only a handful of people casually greeted Ye Jiaquan, and looked at Shi Xiaobai with thoughts on their mind, while all of them completely ignored the extremely handsome Lingcun without any prior arrangement.

Shi Xiaobai immediately began jeering in his heart how unpopular this silver-haired youth was. However, his mind was quickly attracted by the rookie training grounds.

He saw a vast field, about the size of ten soccer fields, constructed out of steel. Sunlight reflected off the field in a hot intense beam, and there were several large arena rings dispersed around.

Located around the field were five steel buildings. Each building had its own purpose. Some were used for lectures, while others were special training rooms. One of the steel buildings was where the Instructors rested. It was said that there were three instructors for this batch of [Annihilation] rookies in the beginning, but later on, Instructor Hisith felt that he alone was enough, and chased the other two instructors away.

Regarding Hisith's unusual enthusiasm for teaching, [Gaia]'s upper echelons found it strange, but could do nothing about it. As

the other two instructors appeared to have experienced a haunting encounter, they had firmly refused to return.

From Lingcun's depiction, Shi Xiaobai slowly outlined a weird person who liked to play others, while seeking pleasure from the games in life.

However, when Shi Xiaobai entered Hisith's office, and truly met him, he felt that the image in his mind was not weird enough.

The man, named Hisith [1](#), in front of his eyes was beyond the description of weird.

His red hair stood up like flames, and his crescent-shaped eyes squinted in a cheeky and playful look. He wore face paint: a star on his right cheek, and a teardrop on his left cheek. It was impossible to tell his age, and his mouth hung with a sinister-looking smile. He was clearly a man, but his facial features gave an illusionary coquettish look.

When he stood up, he was tall, and had symmetrical muscles. He had long limbs, and wore a tight outfit, with long sleeves and pants. There were several golden rings that tightly bound his waist, making his waist look like a compressed spring. Under the rings' wrapping, his waist looked so thin that it seemed like it could be snapped with a tight grip.

“You are here.”

At this moment, Hisith's office only had the two of them. The first person to break the silence was Hisith. His voice was gentle, and his footsteps were light. His slender figure was filled with a strange repressive feeling. Every step he took seemed to make the ground tremble.

Hisith slowly walked in front of Shi Xiaobai, and a strange breath was released from his mouth as his eyes narrowed into a slit. His coquettish smile bloomed on his face.

“So, what do you intend to do? My beloved little toy?”

Hisith held up two fingers to raise Shi Xiaobai's chin, lifting his head high up. That motion was like a thug teasing a girl.

Shi Xiaobai frowned and immediately wanted to retreat, but he was shocked to discover that his body could not move at all. His limbs did not seem like they were under his control. After using all his strength, he was only able to tremble his muscles slightly.

Hisith focused his eyes to study Shi Xiaobai's face. His eyes sparkled with a strange glint, as if he was admiring his favorite plaything.

From the bottom of Shi Xiaobai's heart, a sense of nausea suffused. He stopped struggling against the invisible bondage his body was experiencing as he said loudly, “This King, Tu Dahei, has missed classes for a few days. Am here for reporting!”

Upon hearing this, Hisith issued a strange laughter as he released his hands and took a few steps back.

“So that’s what it is. Your choice is very interesting, but also very boring. You probably have the presumptuous thought that I would agree to your approach, and even help you conceal your identity. However, my beloved little toy, you missed out something. For me, I wish that the game will carry on proceeding and wish that it would become more dynamic. I like things that are different and out of the blue. I hate being read by anyone, and hate an ending that is obvious.”

As Hisith spoke, he pulled out a brand new deck of poker cards from his breast pocket. The back of the poker cards was a short sword that pierced through a six-pointed star.

Hisith suddenly threw the poker cards into the sky and immediately dozens of poker cards scattered in the sky like falling leaves. However, surprisingly, the poker cards did not flutter to the ground as one would expect. Instead, they were frozen mid air, as if they were fixed in place.

“Come, my beloved little toy, let us play a little game that no one can guess the outcome.”

Hisith charmingly smiled with squinted eyes.

Author’s Note: Mentioning the reasons why Shi Xiaobai is able to conceal his identity.

1. The upper echelons deliberately withheld information (afraid other organizations would poach him).
2. The rookies who participated in the evaluation did not wish to mention anything (deep mental scars).

Hence, the rookies of [Annihilation] only know of Shi Xiaobai's evaluation results (this is publicly released internally), but do not know of Shi Xiaobai's appearance or character.

I know writing it in this way isn't exactly stringent. But everything is for the plot. I do not wish to waste words, dragging out the story, to ensure that everything is made completely perfect, as the story is what is important. I personally think that the past few chapters were a bit too dragged out while I was setting up the plot. Thanks to the two characters, Steel Ox and Lingcun, it was still considered interesting.

Chapter 28: Shi Xiaobai's Intuition

Dozens of poker cards floated in mid-air and although it looked like a messy distribution, there were no two poker cards that overlapped each other. Shi Xiaobai even realized that in his range of vision, all the backs of the poker cards were facing him. It was probably deliberately done by Hisith.

“Make your choice. Choose one card out of these fifty-four poker cards. If it has more than ten points, I will help you conceal your identity. If it is ten or below, I will directly eliminate you from the rookie line up. Make your choice, my beloved little toy.”

Hisith said those words with a sinister smile on his face. He had a savoring expression, but his tone was not to be doubted.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly found his body relaxed. The invisible binding energy had been removed, but once he looked up, his eyes met Hisith's, causing a biting chill to immediately suffuse, as if he had been thrown into a dark forest where danger lurked at every corner.

Shi Xiaobai instinctively felt fear, but he was unusually furious. The words Hisith said, “make your choice”, made him recall that unforgettable sunset, as well as the cold voice that rang in his head.

“Compared to filling in the blanks or short answer questions, This King prefers questions with options, but This King does not like being forced to make a choice. Why should This King choose

from the options you provide? This King refuses. This King chooses—not to choose!” Shi Xiaobai said with a sneer as he looked straight into Hisith’s eyes that were narrowed into a slit. He felt like there was the coldest blade hidden behind those slits. Every moment he looked at them made him lose a bit of his courage, but Shi Xiaobai did not shift his gaze.

“Very good! Very good! Very good!”

Hisith suddenly looked up and issued a harsh and sharp laughter hysterically. It was terrifying. Then he inserted his five fingers into his flaming red hair, his mouth pursed into a sinister arc.

“Shi Xiaobai, O’ Shi Xiaobai, my liking for you is truly increasing. Your choice makes me surprised, so I am very satisfied.”

Hisith put out his tongue to lick his lips. Suddenly, his body seemed to teleport through the densely hovering poker cards without them moving, as Hisith appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai’s pupils contracted as he could not help but draw a gasp. Suddenly he found his body bound by that invisible force once again, there was no way to move his stiff body.

Hisith leaned his face close to Shi Xiaobai, and whispered, like how lovers exchanged whispers, “But the game has already begun. I will not allow you to quit midway. So you still have to make a choice. If you don’t, I will...”

Hisith dragged out the word “will” before suddenly closing his mouth. This dragged out word that suddenly came to an abrupt stop sparked boundless imaginations. Shi Xiaobai could not help but begin thinking. If he insisted on not choosing, what would this depraved person do?

Shi Xiaobai felt his heartbeat increasing rapidly, and his back was beginning to ooze with sweat. The fear that came from the bottom of his soul occupied his mind. The sinister face that was inches away from him looked like the face of a most ferocious wraith.

“Relax, relax. Don’t be nervous.”

Hisith laughed softly as he reached out his right hand, gently caressing Shi Xiaobai’s cheek with a sharp nail .

The cold nail moved across Shi Xiaobai’s face, immediately giving him goosebumps.

“It’s just a little game. This King can join you in this game, is that fine? Hurry up and take your hand away.”

Shi Xiaobai was extremely furious, but he no longer dared to put on a brave front. His intuition told him that the depraved person in front of him was very “dangerous”.

Upon hearing this, Hisith slowly retracted his hand. He had a slight disappointment on his face, as he turned around to take a step. In a blink of an eye, he had returned to the other side, across

the poker cards.

“Choose. Choose the poker card that you think is greater than ten.”

Hisith stressed the rules once again. As he said, this was a game no one could guess the outcome to. Success and failure only depended on luck.

Of course, this game was considerably unfavorable for Shi Xiaobai. Amongst the fifty-four poker cards, the number of cards with faces greater than ten only numbered fourteen.

Shi Xiaobai focused on the floating poker cards but could only see the six-sided star with the short sword face on the cards. He could not tell the difference, much less be able to find the fourteen cards amongst the fifty-four cards. It looked like he needed a certain amount of luck..

“This card!”

In three seconds, Shi Xiaobai had made his choice. He stretched out his hand to point at an unnoticeable card out of the dozens of cards. It was not at a corner, nor was it at a particularly unique location. In fact, it looked extremely ordinary.

However, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes were brimming with confidence. The demeanor of his expression and his tone was extremely determined, as if the choice he made was definitely correct. It

seemed like he was destined to win despite the outcome of this game of luck being completely unknown.

Hisith was standing on the other side of the poker cards, so he could immediately see what card Shi Xiaobai had chosen. His gaze stared intently at the chosen card, as he fell into a long silence.

“You passed, my little friend, Tu Dahei. I look forward to the upcoming rookie training. I will definitely give you ‘my love’.”

After a long while, Hisith finally announced the game’s outcome. His voice was still coquettish, but was now apparently exceptionally cold. When he said the two words “my love”, he even enunciated it with a tone that was absolutely terrifying.

Shi Xiaobai felt the invisible bondage disappear immediately once again. Without another word, he hurried out of the office. He felt that every second he spent with this depraved person was dangerous.

After Shi Xiaobai left, Hisith was still maintaining the same posture. His eyes were still on the poker card Shi Xiaobai chose.

“A one in fifty-four chance. Was it by coincidence or simply inevitable?”

Hisith stretched out his hand to hold the poker card Shi Xiaobai chose. The other fifty-three poker cards suddenly transformed into plumes of blue flames, turning to ash after burning for a moment.

As for the poker card in Hisith's hand, it revealed its front side—it was the highest trump card, “Red Joker”!

“It looks like you indeed possess the Perception of God, and it's the strongest one at that. Interesting, definitely interesting. As a toy, you are truly too extravagant for me.”

“However, the game has only just begun. I will ‘teach’ you well, and I hope you will not disappoint me.”

Hisith placed the “Red Joker” into his breast pocket as a sinister smile suffused on his lips.

...

...

After walking out the office, Shi Xiaobai still felt panic-stricken. He hurried his footsteps, afraid that the hateful, depraved person would chase after him.

“Yet another monster that covets This King's divine body. Thankfully This King was fast in getting away!”

The more he thought, the more he felt fear after the event. However, just thinking of himself being able to choose a poker card that was greater than ten out of fifty-four poker cards made him

happy.

“There is indeed nothing This King can’t do! Isn’t it just a bet on luck? This King has never feared it!”

While Shi Xiaobai was choosing the poker card, he thought of how he had blindly made a shot during the rookie evaluation’s ability test. Immediately, he had felt like he had invincible luck, so he chose without any hesitation.

His intuition told him that the poker card was greater than ten.

“Strange, why does This King keep having the thought that the poker card is the “Red Joker’?”

This bizarre idea flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s mind, but soon vanished.

“Heh heh, there is nothing strange about that. The card chosen by This King is definitely the ‘Red Joker’!”

Shi Xiaobai felt at ease and justified as he accepted his own explanation.

Chapter 29: Do You Need To Go This Extent Just Because Of The Bathroom?

The rookie training grounds had five steel buildings. The largest building was the classroom Instructor Hisith usually taught in.

The internal layout of the classroom was very similar to the room where the Rookie Evaluation Test was held. There were two rows of seats on each side of the room, but the only difference was that the seats slanted, and joined together to form a V shape. In the middle of the V shape where the seats joined, there was a podium that looked like a lecture stand. And near to the podium was a wall that was probably a large LCD screen.

After Shi Xiaobai left Hisith's office, he went along with Lingcun and company to the classroom. At this moment in time, there were only a handful of people scattered around the classroom, but soon, people successively came in, back from their break.

Lingcun would keep entering a conversation with Shi Xiaobai for no reason at all. After having experienced the "torture" by Hisith, he was somewhat annoyed by Lingcun. However, he knew that Lingcun was not to be blamed, as "human nature" was something difficult to guess accurately.

But in any case, his first step of concealing his identity had succeeded. Shi Xiaobai's name was now Tu Dahei.

Many people who entered the classroom noticed a new face in Shi Xiaobai. A few people came forward to inquire, while Lingcun

would take the initiative to explain to them for Shi Xiaobai. People turned thoughtful after hearing this. In fact, a number of people were suspecting if this so-called Tu Dahei was Shi Xiaobai, who had played truant for the past few days. However, since Instructor Hisith had vetted his identity, and they had no idea what Shi Xiaobai looked like, they could only hide their suspicions in their heart.

The scenario of Shi Xiaobai concealing his identity developed as Lingcun expected. There were some frights but no danger.

Afternoon break time ended very quickly as all the rookies returned to the classroom.

“The [Annihilation] rookies in the classroom now has a total of 73 people, 63 male, and 10 female. There are none below the age of ten, while there are fifty-two from the ages of ten to fifteen. There are twenty between the ages of fifteen to twenty, and only one person above the age of twenty.”

Lingcun mentioned a series of numbers that made Shi Xiaobai feel dizzy in the head. He finally summarized, “This batch of [Annihilation] rookies are quite average in quality, except Shi Xiaobai. Everyone else are here just to make up the numbers.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai quietly gave Lingcun a big thumbs up. He liked honest people the most.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed the surroundings and immediately noticed that the rookies sitting on the right side sat in a cluster, and

seemed like a collective whole. It was quite obvious they were rookies from Team Blue. As for the side he was sitting on, there was a divisive split. It was probably the two fractured fractions of Team Red that Lingcun had previously mentioned.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's gaze paused on a particular person. The person did not seem very tall, but looked very fit. He had sharp facial features and a calm expression. He looked like a sharp sword hidden in a scabbard. Shi Xiaobai felt surprised as this person was sitting alone in a corner. There was no one around him and he seemed like a loner, as if he had been ostracized by the two factions.

Lingcun traced Shi Xiaobai's gaze and after seeing that person, he said, "That person's name is Xiang Wu. He is Team Red's third faction."

Shi Xiaobai said in disbelief, "One person?"

How could one person form a faction himself?

Lingcun nodded and then sighed, saying, "Team Red's two factions happen to have fifteen people each. When votes are cast to eliminate someone, it results in a stalemate. As for Xiang Wu, he is the only person that does not belong to the two factions. His single vote can influence the outcome of the vote. But it happens that this person is extremely stubborn and refuses to join any of the two factions, hence he has been isolated."

As an antithetical person who refused to join any group, he had

the power to change the outcome. Clearly, the two major factions in Team Red saw him as a thorn in the flesh.

Lingcun said with a sigh, “The third faction originally had three people. They called themselves the Xiang brothers, and were all pretty strong. As they thought that it was a despicable act of politics, they refused to join any of the two factions. Hence, in the previous two rounds of elimination, the two factions partnered up to eliminate two of them. As for the third round of elimination, if there aren’t any surprises, Xiang Wu will be the one eliminated.”

Ye Jiaquan said with a dull voice, “Me thinks that it is very unfair. Me thinks that the Xiang brothers aren’t wrong. The elimination vote should not be used to collectively target someone.”

Lingcun sighed and said, “If everyone were to vote according to his wishes, the outcome of the vote would be very fair. This ideal is very nice, but reality is very cruel. Under the elimination mechanism set by Instructor Hisith, the person who fails to make the mark will be the first to be eliminated. So for us who are not strong enough, we have no choice on the matter when it comes to joining a group. Our only choice is to decide on joining which group.”

“Song Xiao might be the strongest person in Team Red, but he is extremely authoritarian. People who join his group have to abide by his decisions. It is equivalent to eliminating anyone he wishes. Although Han Feng isn’t any better, he would at the very least, not deliberately deprive the voting rights of his peers. Han Feng’s group will first have an internal vote before the candidate to be

eliminated is decided.”

“Dahei, you must seriously consider it. Currently, you are very similar to the three Xiang brothers. It can be said that your choice can tilt the balance between the two factions. As far as I’m concerned, I would hope that you join Han Feng’s faction.

Shi Xiaobai felt his heart turn slightly heavy hearing this. It was no wonder he noticed so many people giving him strange looks when he walked in. The people that came to ask about his identity had queer looks in the eyes. So it was all because he was currently in hot demand.

“Sigh, This King is always the focus of attention no matter where he goes!”

Shi Xiaobai exclaimed, and could not help but consider Lingcun’s words. Song Xiao and Han Feng were like a dictator and a constitutional monarch respectively. Personally, Shi Xiaobai would lean towards Han Feng.

But Shi Xiaobai could not help but look at that lonely figure.

Under the cruel elimination mechanism, once a group of people huddled together, their voting rights would collate into a distinctive force. The person left out would not be able to resist in the face of this force.

People were selfish. No one wished to be eliminated, so hugging

on to the biggest pillar was their best option. Clearly, Song Xiao and Han Feng were the two relatively biggest pillars.

However, the groups gathered by Song Xiao and Han Feng happened to be fifteen each. As such, their voting strength reached an awkward balance. But as long as they gained another person, the balance would be broken. One side could then slowly devour the other group, ensuring that no one from their side would be eliminated.

The three Xiang brothers were independent from the two factions, so it was clear that they could join any side to ensure immunity from elimination, and even throw the other side into a spiralling abyss. However, the three Xiang brothers would rather be eliminated one by one than choose to join one of the two factions.

Why did they do that? Why were they so stupid? What were they trying to insist on?

Shi Xiaobai looked at Xiang Wu who was sitting alone at a corner. Suddenly, he felt his heart palpitate.

“This King...” Shi Xiaobai stood up.

“I know!”

Lingcun hurriedly stopped him with his words and got up. He stretched out his hand to press down on Shi Xiaobai’s shoulders

and said seriously, “Dahei, I know you don’t want to join any of the two factions. I also know that you wish to help Xiang Wu! I share the same feelings as you, but you need to be aware of one thing. If you were to be left out like Xiang Wu, then the next person to be eliminated is very likely you. Dahei, are you willing to eliminate yourself the moment you arrive?”

“This King...” Shi Xiaobai knitted his eyebrows slightly.

Lingcun cut him off by saying, “Dahei, if you were to join Han Feng’s faction, it is actually the best method to help Xiang Wu. After you join us, Han Feng’s faction would have sixteen people, one more person than Song Xiao’s faction. Then, in the next round, the sixteen of us can vote together to eliminate Song Xiao’s members. As such, we can prevent the fate of Xiang Wu being eliminated!”

“Sigh, This King...” Shi Xiaobai sighed.

Lingcun cut him off once again and said seriously, “Dahei, I know you don’t like to join the factions of others, and even more, you dislike voting out someone by combining forces. You advocate justice and believe in freedom, but, I wish you can seriously consider it. Joining Han Feng’s faction does not mean you are ignoring your conscience, but it is a very rational and mature way of doing things. Not only will it protect yourself from being eliminated, it will also help Xiang Wu.”

“Dahei, whether you and Xiang Wu can stay behind or not all depends on a thought of yours!”

Both of Lingcun's hands were already on Shi Xiaobai's shoulders. His pale blue eyes revealed a sense of anxiety. His handsome face was slightly taut, afraid that Shi Xiaobai would give a capricious answer.

The rookies, who were already paying close attention to Shi Xiaobai, also began to look over. The rookies from Han Feng's faction, who were closest, pricked up their ears. From their conversation, this rookie named Dahei seemed to be on the fence?

“This King—”

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders, saying helplessly, “This King just wanted to go to the bathroom. Is there a need to be so nervous?”

Upon hearing this, Lingcun was dumbfounded. So all the heartfelt advice he gave was all f*cking nonsense!?

Author's Note: The situation regarding the rookie training is basically set up. Wasted quite a few chapters, but I will try my best to make it interesting, but I'm not sure if everyone will still find it boring. But it's alright. Soon, there will be a small climax, and after the small climax, it will be a big climax.

Chapter 30: Another Game?

In fact, Shi Xiaobai wasn't planning on going to the bathroom. Although the reason why he stood up wasn't as Lingcun thought, it was somewhat similar.

He did not want to join Han Feng or Song Xiao's factions. He also did not want to stand up for Xiang Wu. He just had a simple belief that voting should abide to the individual's wishes. Although gaining safety by collectivising was beyond reproach, to use a collectivised force to kill the freedom of an individual was something that did not conform to Shi Xiaobai's kingly ways.

Hence, the reason why Shi Xiaobai stood up was to head to another corner. Since Xiang Wu could become a faction himself, why couldn't he, Shi Xiaobai? He insisted on being isolated from the others!

However, Lingcun had stopped him, and had managed to persuade him.

Shi Xiaobai had forgotten which line made him give up his nearly silly idea, but Shi Xiaobai knew in his heart that the true reason why he abandoned that idea was because of fear—fear of being directly eliminated.

Be it him choosing to conceal his identity, or choosing to use the excuse of “going to the bathroom, by indirectly agreeing to joining Han Feng's faction, it was something that Shi Xiaobai found difficult to accept. It should have been taken for granted that with

his character, he would have roared out with laughter, saying “This King insists on not doing so”.

Shi Xiaobai, who was never afraid of the strong, was extremely afraid of weakness—he was afraid. He had always been a weakling.

Having heard from others mention how much a genius Shi Xiaobai was, or how outstanding Shi Xiaobai’s natural endowment was, Shi Xiaobai was the one who knew better than anyone else. He knew that even if he had entered the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, he did not feel like there was a shred of change. Be it Ye Jiaquan’s fist, or Lingcun’s mysteriousness, or Hisith’s repression, they made Shi Xiaobai deeply feel—he was too weak.

It was not because he was afraid of Ye Jiaquan’s fists, nor had he he yielded to Hisith’s pressure, Shi Xiaobai only desperately worried when the moment of becoming stronger would come and when he would stop being weak.

And the rookie training was by far the closest opportunity for him to become stronger. Shi Xiaobai did not want to let this opportunity slip away. He wanted to hold on to it tightly, whatever it took.

For this, Shi Xiaobai caved. He had concealed his identity and joined Han Feng’s faction. This was the one of the few compromises Shi Xiaobai had made.

After using the bathroom, and returning to his seat, Shi Xiaobai’s heart was heavy. The opportunity of him becoming stronger was

clearly at his fingertips, but for some unknown reason, he could not feel any emotion of joy. It was as if he had lost something in his heart.

Shi Xiaobai fell into silence, but his surroundings turned noisy. All sorts of noises entered his ears. Lingcun's voice frequently resounded in his ear, but Shi Xiaobai felt extremely irritated. It was as if there was a heat flowing through his body, making his every nerve feel uneasy.

Shi Xiaobai couldn't help but glance at the isolated man named Xiang Wu at the corner. He sat there quietly, motionless. As if he was bound by the air, locked in time.

However, Shi Xiaobai saw from his body—freedom.

The freedom to not move was also a freedom!

“It seems, This King is sick.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he slowly closed his eyes. He needed rest, because he was fighting himself.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai's resting time did not last for very long as Hisith

slowly walked into the classroom. The moment he stepped into the classroom, everyone shut their mouths, turning silent. The hustle and bustle immediately melted into silence.

Shi Xiaobai involuntarily opened his eyes, and when his eyes matched Hisith's slightly narrowed eyes, his hair stood on end, just like a frightened cub that jumped up in fright.

Thankfully, Lingcun, who was beside him, held him down by the shoulders in time, allowing Shi Xiaobai to calm down from the sudden repressive feeling Hisith gave him.

“This darn depraved person must have done it on purpose. This King nearly got hit by his Samsara Eye Magic!”

Shi Xiaobai cursed in his heart, and the inhibitions in his heart gradually faded away without him realizing it.

Hisith slowly walked to the podium in the middle. His gentle footsteps sounded extremely clear in the quiet classroom. Everyone's heartbeats seemed to synchronize with each other, as if they were involuntarily being paced by his footsteps.

Punctilious discipline was reflected fully in this classroom.

“Relax, don't be nervous. I'm in quite a good mood today.” Hisith spoke softly.

The moment Hisith spoke, heaving sighs of relief broke out in the

classroom. Shi Xiaobai felt that the tensed Ye Jiaquan beside him also seemed to relax.

What would happen if this depraved person was in a bad mood?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but have such a thought.

“When Instructor Hisith is not in a good mood, he will usually play a ‘game’. As for the contents of the game, you will see it when the time comes. I’ll not talk about it.” Lingcun leaned towards Shi Xiaobai’s ears and used an extremely inaudible voice to tell him. His voice seemed to exude some fear.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned, as a chill rose up from the bottom of his heart. A game that could make everyone so nervous was probably some abnormal game.

Although all the rookies in the classroom had heaved a sigh of relief, they still maintained their silence. Every occasional motion was done extremely gingerly.

“Alright, my beloved toys, let us continue from our morning lesson.”

Hisith clapped his hands and his eyes swept across everyone. The rookies who had been addressed as “toys” did not dare show any look of discontent. They all displayed an attentive posture.

After a pause, Hisith began teaching.

“For the past few days, we have been talking about combat. In fact, combat is nothing more than the interplay between four major systems—offense, defense, evasion, as well as superpower. Those who do not have any Psy-genes, then you actually only have three of the systems. You are naturally born to have one less combat technique than Psykers. However, I can tell you seriously that it is not difficult for Psionites to defeat Psykers. This is because every ‘superpower’ needs to fulfill three elements—function, condition as well as restrictions. If you can discern the weakness in your opponent’s superpower’s conditions and limitations, then the actual thing that determines victory is still the three major systems, offense, defense and evasion. And all three of these systems rely on Psionic Power. In terms of Psionic Ability cultivation, Psykers have no advantage over you!”

Hisith threw out a series of sentences, and finally concluded, “In other words, the three major systems are the only things you can rely on to defeat a Psyker, and also your only remaining dignity and pride! You are different from Psykers who are naturally born with superpowers. You are all the most ordinary out of ordinary people, without any halo surrounding you. You have lost at the starting line the moment you were born. In various competitions in the future, you would suffer a crushing defeat. In the game known as ‘Life’, you were all losers from the very beginning!”

“However, you can turn the tables. As long as you hone a powerful offense, a rigid defense, an agile evasion, then you would have the capital to fight Psykers. And for these things, I will teach them all to you!”

Hisith seemed to transform into another man. That teasing

expression turned serious. The tone in his voice sounded encouraging, he was like a dedicated teacher working hard at teaching his students.

Shi Xiaobai noticed that the rookies beside him were short of breath, as their eyes burned with fighting spirit. Ye Jiaquan even clenched his fists tightly.

Hisith's words had touched them and infected them. His final sentence lit up the desire they buried deep in their hearts.

Shi Xiaobai began to gradually look serious. What Hisith said about “a powerful offense, a rigid defense, an agile evasion”, could he possess them?

“However, the prerequisite of all this—is that you must hold on to the end.”

Hisith's tone changed suddenly, as his eyes narrowed slightly.

“What a pity. This afternoon, another cute toy will be eliminated.”

A coquettish smile appeared on Hisith's face once again as he used a teasing tone to say the word “pity”. It was heart-chilling.

The meaning behind his words made the rookies from Team Red draw a gasp, while the rookies from Team Blue collectively laughed, seemingly deriving pleasure from those words.

This was just the fourth day of rookie training, and today, a third person was to be eliminated?

Shi Xiaobai felt that when Hisith said those words, his gaze had swept past him. That faint amused look made Shi Xiaobai's heart involuntarily palpitate.

“It can't be that he is targeting This King again, right?”

Shi Xiaobai felt a sense of foreboding.

“Oh, right. Today, there is a rookie who returned after missing classes for many days. I happen to have thought of a fun game, and plan to let him participate in it.”

Hisith revealed a sinister smile as he looked towards Shi Xiaobai, saying, “Tu Dahei, come to the podium. Let us play a game...that is slightly more difficult.”

When everyone heard this, they traced Hisith's gaze towards Shi Xiaobai, who looked somewhat ordinary, seated in the row of seats. Immediately, they felt full of pity for him.

Instructor Hisith said a “game”, and not a “little game”, and he had even used the qualifier, “slightly more difficult”.

The rookies who were unfortunate enough to encounter “normal

games” found it impossible to imagine how perverse Instructor Hisith’s “game that is slightly more difficult” would be.

Chapter 31: You Are Actually A Demon, Right?

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless. Only recently had he played an uninteresting card drawing game with Hisith. Shi Xiaobai was not interested in Hisith's game at all, and wanted to keep a distance from the perverse Hisith.

But the depraved instructor did not plan on letting him off. This was not the first time he had targeted him, and now, he had been called to the podium the moment class started.

Feeling the concerned and sympathetic gazes from Ye Jiaquan and Lingcun, Shi Xiaobai frowned.

“Whatever. This King was previously once a God of Games. How can I be scared off by a depraved gamer that is none other than a sham!?”

Thinking of his tiny victory back in Hisith's office, Shi Xiaobai was immediately filled with confidence. Under everyone's watchful eyes, he got up and walked fearlessly to the podium in the middle.

“Dahei looks very confident. Me..feels that Dahei should be able to survive it.” Ye Jiaquan looked at Lingcun and said feebly.

Lingcun sighed and did not respond. His pale blue eyes flashed with seriousness.

When Shi Xiaobai came to Hisith's side, he immediately felt like he had entered an ice cavern, as a cold crept up through his entire body. His body slowly began to stiffen.

Hisith gave Shi Xiaobai a sinister-looking smile and whispered, "Before we play the game, let me ask you. Dahei, do you know what 'Psionic Shield' is?"

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily stunned as he thought for a moment, before he shook his head and said, "No."

When the seated rookies heard this, they gave an incredulous look. A number of people even had a dismissive sneer suffusing at the corner of their lips.

He was an idiot who didn't even know what Psionic Shield was? Did he rely on cronyism to get into [Gaia]? The rookies who suspected Tu Dahei to be Shi Xiaobai immediately had their suspicions lessened greatly.

Hisith had received information of Shi Xiaobai from the organization's upper echelons. The information revealed that Shi Xiaobai had yet to begin Psionic Ability cultivation, so it was naturally possible for him to be unaware of 'Psionic Shield', hence Hisith had questioned him. Shi Xiaobai's answer was within his expectations, but Hisith felt his head ache. This was because to proceed with the game, he needed Shi Xiaobai to be able to understand and grasp "Psionic Shield".

“It looks like I need to tug at a sapling to help it grow.”

With this thought in mind, Hisith turned towards the seated rookies and said, “Wang Lin, explain to him what ‘Psionic Shield’ is.”

With him saying this, a 17–18-year-old youth with short hair stood up from the seats on the right. Under his tight-fit shirt were firm muscles, it was obvious he was strong. Everyone from Team Blue cast their eyes at the youth, filled with awe and trust.

Wang Lin nodded at Hisith before looking at Shi Xiaobai and said calmly, “Psionic Shield is a Psionic Ability produced from one of the four major combat systems, namely defense.”

Wang Lin paused for a while as he pondered over his words before continuing, “The system of defense is divided into physical and psionic defense. Physical defense refers to one’s skin, flesh, bones and mental defenses. It is in the domain of one’s physical cultivation. As for psionic defense, it is a study of how to use Psionic Power as a form of defense. The name Psionic Shield implies using Psionic Power to form a shield so as to block attacks within a defensive range.”

After Wang Lin finished speaking, he stretched his right hand out. Suddenly what seemed like beams or vapor began gathering in front of his palm in the form of white energy. He had produced a white shield that could nearly block everything in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up. He had previously seen the white energy

back when Ye Jiaquan was punching the wall. So that was so-called “Psionic Power”?

“Psionic Shield typically is used to protect against unidirectional attacks. Be it engaging in melee combat with swords and sabers, or long-distance gunfire or bombs, a solid Psionic Shield can block all of them. Typically, a Psionic Shield at the fourth level of Psionic Mortal Realm is able to withstand ordinary bullets, but would be useless against special anti-psionic bullets.”

After Wang Lin was done speaking, he retracted his right hand. Immediately, the white shield began to dissipate. He looked at Hisith, indicating to him that he was done explaining. Seeing Hisith nod his head, he coolly sat down.

“This thing can block bullets!”

Shi Xiaobai’s heartbeat began palpitating as he felt like all the blood in his boiling was about to boil.

Upon seeing this, Hisith’s eyes seemed to flash as he said, “Psionic defense is divided into four stages. The first stage is Psionic Hardening. By using Psionic Power to cause a body part to harden, it can instantly achieve the effect of enhancing the body’s physical defense. The second stage is Psionic Shield. Typically, it is used to block unidirectional attacks.”

“The third stage is Psionic Barrier. It can be said to be an omnidirectional shield. Although its defensive strength is inferior to Psionic Shield, it is suitable for protecting yourself when facing a

rain of bullets, swords or sabers.”

“Finally, the last stage is Psionic Domain. It can achieve the effects of defending a large area. When many people collectively produce a Domain, it can be used to protect cities. Once the degree of hardness reaches a certain level, it will be the main method to defend against missiles or nuclear bombs.”

Hisith explained the four psionic defenses in detail. The rookies in the room already knew this by heart, so they were immediately somewhat puzzled. Why was Instructor Hisith patiently explaining such extremely basic knowledge to this bumpkin?

But Shi Xiaobai’s eyes were almost burning red. What did he hear? Through human means, defend against missiles and nuclear bombs? This... Wasn’t this the power he had always been dreaming of?

“How is it? Do you want to learn Psionic Shield?” Hisith’s voice that contained a spell of bewitchment sounded in Shi Xiaobai’s ears.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was unable to resist the temptation as he hurriedly nodded. “Yes! Not only the shield, This King wants to learn everything!”

“Alright, then I’ll teach you.”

Hisith smiled as he suddenly leaned towards Shi Xiaobai and

whispered into his ear. The rookies pricked up their ears but were unable to hear a single thing. They immediately found things odd.

Producing a Psionic Shield was not something one could do overnight. It was like learning a language. It needed the accumulation of time to achieve that. Instructor Hisith said he wanted to teach this bumpkin, and even whispered something in his ear. Was there some heaven-defying shortcut?

Hisith's whispers did not last more than a minute. Shi Xiaobai nodded his head despite having only a hazy notion of it, but he said with doubt, "Doing that can produce the shield you mentioned? That simple?"

Everyone was stunned hearing this. There was really a shortcut?

Hisith nodded with a smile that didn't look like a smile. "Of course, you will know once you give it a try."

Shi Xiaobai did not doubt him. His passion for power made him immediately execute what Hisith told him.

"Use your heart to feel your body's Psionic Power. Use your mind to control the flow of Psionic Power. Then silently recite the chant..."

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his right hand as Hisith's words flashed in his mind. Suddenly, he felt a warmth rise up from his body. The warmth made him feel comfortable.

But very quickly, this warmth carried on rising in temperature, and slowly became a scalding heat. Pain came from his every nerve, as Shi Xiaobai immediately felt like he had found himself in the middle of flames. It was so painful that he nearly fainted.

“Ah!”

A scream tore out of Shi Xiaobai's mouth, immediately resounding throughout the entire classroom.

The rookies immediately understood what had happened as they immediately drew a gasp. They covered their mouths to prevent themselves from screaming.

Ye Jiaquan's eyes were already red as he said with a trembling voice. “Lingcun, if Me... If Me isn't wrong, Dahei is now using the ‘Body Incineration Curse’, right?”

Lingcun's facial expression had long sunk, as he said with a painful tone, “It is the Body Incineration Curse. It is said to be the most vicious manner of accelerating growth through excessive means. The success rate is less than 10%. If he succeeds, he would be able to at least open up one psionic sacred meridian, but the outcome of failure would be having his body consumed in fire and he would die a painful death.”

“If Dahei can survive the Body Incineration Curse, and open up any psionic sacred meridian, then he can indeed omit the need of a comprehension and accumulation process. He would be able to

directly gain the control of ‘Grasped Basics’ of Psionic Power. This is probably the shortcut Hisith thought of.”

“Damn it! I never expected Hisith to be willing to make such a desperate attempt just so that his game can proceed smoothly. Doesn’t he know that Dahei is actually Shi...No, it’s impossible that he doesn’t know, but why is he doing this? Isn’t he afraid that he will cause Dahei’s death? The success rate of Body Incineration Curse is less than 10%! If Dahei dies, as one of the three powerhouses of [Gaia], won’t he feel the pinch?”

“Or could it be that he doesn’t care about [Gaia]’s rise or fall? That’s right. I should have realized earlier that he was such a madman. I was the one who harmed Dahei. It’s all my fault! Damn it! Damn it! Damn it!”

As Lingcun whispered, he was shouting out in his heart silently. His expression looked painful as he buried his head in his knees, with his entire body trembling.

Shi Xiaobai’s tragic screams continued. His skin was already a scalding hot red color. White smoke was beginning to rise up around him as his body seemed like it was about to spontaneously combust into the most ruthless inferno.

As for Hisith, he was standing by the side turning a blind eye to it, as if he was watching a good show play out in front of him.

Even the most ruthless and merciless rookie could not help but feel a sense of pity seeing this. This bumpkin, Tu Dahei, was truly

wretched. Encountering the depraved madman, Hisith, who wore an outer skin as a Hero, was bad luck accumulated across eight generations. His only chance of survival was that scammy less than 10% chance of success.

Using the Body Incineration Curse either meant being reborn or to be burned to ash. Everything did not depend on one's self, nor willpower, just plain luck!

Time passed by the tick, as Shi Xiaobai's screams turned hoarse. His body seemed like a fixed column. Although he looked like he should have been squirming on the ground, he was standing there screaming. He was like a young tree sapling erected there, experiencing the burning of an inferno.

How long would such torment last?

“Pu!”

Suddenly, the sound of a crisp crack issued from Shi Xiaobai's body. In front of him, a cracked shield, which was so white it looked translucent, bloomed. The red glow on his skin converged immediately as the burning temperatures of the surroundings quickly cooled down. The water mist also dispersed in an instant.

The seated rookies immediately broke into chaos.

“Holy shit, he succeeded?”

“He actually managed to survive the Body Incinerating Curse. This bumpkin’s luck is...heaven-defying!”

“This means he has at least opened up a psionic sacred meridian. Ze Ze. As they say, foolish people can have dumb luck!”

“You guys, enough. He was tortured to the point of death, can’t you just be more sparing with your words?”

“That is a sacred meridian won at the risk of his life. You can’t not be convinced!”

“Should...should this bumpkin bear a grudge or thank Instructor Hisith?”

“.....”

Whispers in the classroom erupted. They had witnessed a rare Body Incinerating Curse, and even rarer was that the extremely weak bumpkin had managed to succeed!

Shi Xiaobai was still gasping violently as sweat covered his entire body. His eyes could no longer open, and his body looked like it would topple with a simple nudge, yet for some reason, he still stood upright.

After enduring such cruel torture, at the moment of his relief, he must have felt like falling to the ground and lay unconscious, right?

Why was he still standing?

“Very good! Very good! Very good!”

Hisith’s voice that seemed bordering on madness cracked the mystery.

Everyone immediately shut their mouths as they felt their hearts filled with fear. Shi Xiaobai was unable to fall, because Hisith did not want him to fall.

Hisith had forced him to stand there, so he could only keep his exhausted body silently standing there.

“Enough, enough, it’s really enough!” The seated Lingcun was roaring in his heart, as he looked furiously at Hisith.

Was it enough?

For Hisith, this was clearly not enough. This was because everything he did for Shi Xiaobai was to allow the game he designed to proceed smoothly. His game had only just begun.

“Since Dahei has learned Psionic Shield, let the games begin!”

Hisith relentlessly mentioned his original but consistent goal. Everyone could not bear watching this any further. Tu Dahei,

should it be said that you had great luck to open up a psionic sacred meridian, or should it be said that you had terrible luck to encounter the perverse Hisith?

“As for the game rules, all of you are to attack Tu Dahei’s Psionic Shield. Only by shattering Tu Dahei’s shield in one strike will it be considered a pass. If you can’t shatter it, then you will be eliminated from [Gaia] directly!”

A sinister smile suffused from the corners of Hisith’s lips. “Then, let the games begin. I already can’t wait for it!”

Everyone was immediately dumbfounded. What f*cking game was this?

They had heard that this bumpkin was at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, and he had just learned how to use Psionic Power. The Psionic Shield he produced was in such a sorry state, and was so thin like there was nothing. It was impossible for them not to be able to break it, right?

The crux of the matter was that they would be eliminated if they failed to break it, so all of them would definitely muster all their strength!

This was no doubt a form of “abuse”. No, there were 72 rookies in the classroom excluding Tu Dahei. It was 72 rounds of abuse!

After having nearly died from physical torment, he would next

be faced with 72 terrible counts of defeat. This game was indeed extremely “fun”.

“Instructor Hisith, you are actually a demon, right?”

This was the most intense thought in everyone’s minds.

Chapter 32: The Weakest Rookie

Although Shi Xiaobai was standing, he was trembling over all and drenched with sweat. His face was extremely pale, and his eyes seemed to be rolling upwards. Everyone knew that if Hisith hadn't prevented him from collapsing, he would have long passed out.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's condition was probably so bad that he found it difficult to take half a step, what more power a Psionic Shield to withstand the attacks of 72 rookies one after another? Why did Hisith want to play such a heartless and boring "game"?

A few rookies, who knew Hisith's stained record, were confused. Hisith always felt disdain for boring toys and games, so why was he doing the opposite now?

Hisith gave his answer.

A poker card appeared out of thin air, in the middle of two of his fingers. As he fanned his wrist and threw it out gently, the poker card with strange iridescent sparkles flew onto Shi Xiaobai's chest. As everyone looked on, it sank into Shi Xiaobai's body and disappeared.

At the instant the poker card disappeared, a red beam blasted out from Shi Xiaobai's back. A gigantic illuminated projection formed behind him, fading in and out of existence. It was a gigantic poker card—Eight of Hearts.

A seated rookie suddenly screamed!

“Underworld Poker!?”

“Eight of Hearts. That’s too.. too exorbitant!”

“Poker Hisith, Underworld King of the Mortal World!”

“...”

People successively stood up from the seats as they widened their eyes, refusing to blink. They were afraid to miss this rare scene. The looks they cast at the poker card-shaped projection was filled with fear.

“What is Underworld Poker?” Ye Jiaquan scratched his head as he asked Lingcun.

“Underworld Poker is Instructor Hisith’s A Class superpower. It’s known as the Poker from the Underworld. Some people say that Hisith’s poker cards are actually the Underworld.”

Lingcun had an odd expression as his voice contained a tinge of disbelief. He said, “Every Underworld Poker Instructor Hisith has is extremely precious. This is because Underworld Poker is constructed from the souls of the dead. Be it calamity fiends, astral beasts, aliens, alternate dimensional beings, mutated creatures or even humans, their souls are the ingredients Instructor Hisith uses to create Underworld Poker. Hence, Instructor Hisith is a true soul

reaper, a spokesperson of the Underworld. As he is so powerful, he has been dubbed ‘Underworld King of the Mortal World’.”

“Use souls as ingredients to construct poker cards? That..That is actually possible?” Ye Jiaquan found it absolutely mind-boggling.

“Superpower also means the “ability to let your imagination go wild’. There are only things that cannot be imagined, nothing is impossible. This is the main reason why Psykers are so powerful. However, superpowers have their three elements, function, conditions and limitations. Instructor Hisith’s Underworld Poker must have weaknesses both in conditions and limitations, but that is Instructor Hisith’s greatest secret and I’m afraid no one knows.

Lingcun gulped his saliva to moisten his throat as he continued, “It is said that Instructor Hisith’s Underworld Poker has four functions. I remember that Hearts represent ‘healing’. Instructor Hisith is now using the healing Hearts on Tu Dahei. The higher the value of the face of the card, the better the effects. The Eight of Hearts is considered above average and rather precious. Silly Ye, if we use your soul as a standard of measure, a hundred of you won’t even be enough to produce one Eight of Hearts!”

“A hundred of Me’s souls won’t be enough!?” Ye Jiaquan stared in disbelief.

“Why is Instructor Hisith willing to spend his valuable Underworld Poker to heal Dahei? Why?”

Lingcun’s eyebrows deeply wrinkled. Be it tricking Shi Xiaobai

into using the Body Incineration Curse to aid his growth through excessive means, or using the Underworld Poker to forcefully heal Shi Xiaobai, it was all for allowing the seemingly boring game to proceed smoothly. Was the game so important to Hisith?

“Could Instructor Hisith feel pleasure in seeing Shi Xiaobai being utterly defeated 72 times?”

Underworld King Hisith treated humans as toys, and life as a game. He treated the world as a theme park. All his actions and judgment should have been categorized as “interesting” and “boring”.

Love the interesting, trample on the boring was the only principle Hisith had.

And what Hisith was currently doing clearly proved something—Shi Xiaobai and the upcoming games were to him, relatively interesting, worthy of his love.

“Sigh, I shouldn’t have persuaded him to join rookie training. For him, [Gaia] is not a necessary choice, and wouldn’t even be considered an excellent option. But for my own selfish motives, I lured him into concealing his identity, sending a sheep into the tiger’s mouth. I have harmed him.”

Lingcun blamed himself in his heart as his fists clenched tightly. He habitually bit his thumbnail with his teeth as he tried to think of numerous methods to crack the situation, but he rejected each and every one of them, eventually become severely frustrated.

Hisith was too strong for him. In front of absolute strength, no strategy or trick was useful.

...

...

Hisith was not only the three powerhouses of [Gaia]. He was famous in China, and even internationally. When he suddenly volunteered to be a rookie instructor, it had caused quite a sensation in [Gaia] internally.

Although Hisith was eccentric, or even could be said to be perverse, his strength was beyond doubt. And when he became serious at teaching, the rookies benefited greatly from him. As such, even though they had witnessed Hisith's "normal games" several times, they still felt more joy than sorrow.

But at this moment, they were completely at a loss. Wasn't this "game that is slightly more difficult" a bit too perverse?

Some meticulous rookies noticed something strange. The poker card projection was essentially a soul! When the poker card's energy was drained, the souls imprisoned by Hisith in the poker card would vanish, disappearing completely.

And the bumpkin was currently absorbing the soul energy, derived from the valuable "Eight of Hearts". Why was Instructor

Hisith giving him so much “love”? A few rookies with dark minds could no longer suppress their jealous emotions.

Everyone had disparate thoughts, as the “Healing Heart” on the platform was coming to an end.

The projection of the poker card suddenly transformed into a pale red rain of light that fell on Shi Xiaobai. As droplets of energy infused themselves into his white, tender skin, a pink fog began to immediately rise up around Shi Xiaobai’s surroundings. His sticky sweat droplets evaporated while he was bathed in the pink fog, and his pained and twisted face gradually looked relieved. His tightly clenched teeth gradually relaxed and the light in his eyes slowly returned.

The healing effects of “Eight of Hearts” were rather staggering. Within moments, Shi Xiaobai’s pain and fatigue was completely eliminated. His physical strength, mental strength and psionic power were all restored.

Just as the Underworld Poker’s soul was about to dissipate, everyone in the room could hear a roar that reached into their souls. The roar was filled with anger, resentment and indignation.

At the same moment, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes suddenly widened. An angry roar came out of his throat, resounding the entire classroom.

“You perverse person, what did you do to This King!?”

When everyone heard this, they were stunned with opened mouths. How did this bumpkin still dare to curse Instructor Hisith? And why was he calling himself “This King”? Doesn’t he know how dangerous his present situation was?

Instructor Hisith was one of the three powerhouses who could ignore the organization’s discipline. Even if he killed this bumpkin right there and then, or even turning his soul into an Underworld Poker, those members of the upper echelon of the organization, who loved having the words “justice” hang by their mouths, would probably just wryly smile and say ‘can’t you take it easy?’, and not mete out any punishment.

This bumpkin was simply courting death himself!

...

After using the Body Incineration Curse, Shi Xiaobai had experienced an excruciating pain throughout his body, and he fell into a trance, so how could he hear the voices around him? Of course he did not know what the Body Incineration Curse was, or else how would he have been so easily tricked by Hisith?

So in fact, Shi Xiaobai did not know that he had just taken a trip to Death’s door, nor did he know that the Hisith beside him was not only a game maniac, but also a cruel demon. Similarly, he did not know that he was about to face 72 rounds of ‘sparring’ that he had no chance of winning.

Shi Xiaobai only knew that after using Hisith’s imparted method,

he had experienced great pain. Later on, the pain gradually subsided, but his brain kept producing heart-wrenching screams, as wave after wave of resentment struck his soul, causing him to nearly have a mental breakdown.

After a long period of suffering, he finally came to and saw Hisith immediately. Instantly, he recalled that all that had happened to him was a result of attempting Hisith's method, so having found the culprit, he did not hesitate to rail out angrily.

Shi Xiaobai stared at Hisith with eyes filled with anger.

Air seemed to solidify, and a repressive atmosphere immediately emanated the entire room. Everyone could not help but hold their breaths, as to their horror, they saw Instructor Hisith's gloomy expression. It was like the amassing of dark clouds before a thunderstorm.

This bumpkin will die a horrible death, right?

Just as everyone was having such thoughts, Hisith suddenly laughed. A coquettish smile suffused the corner of his lips as it turned into a charming smile.

"I was helping you open up a psionic sacred meridian."

Hisith's eyes narrowed slightly as he gently said, "The human body has eight psionic sacred meridians. Opening up any single one of them gives rise to a magical effect. What I just did was to

help you open up at least one psionic sacred meridian. Opening up a psionic sacred meridians allows your control of Psionic Power to reach the ‘Grasped Basics’ realm. It will eliminate the requirement of a long period of accumulation.”

“Tu Dahei, you can now use Psionic Shield.”

Hisith’s gentle voice made him look like a kind and amiable instructor, as though he was not angered because of Shi Xiaobai’s cursing. Instead, he graciously tolerated his insolence.

Everyone immediately found it odd. What Instructor Hisith said was not wrong, but why did he deliberately skip the matter regarding the Body Incineration Curse? This bumpkin’s psionic sacred meridian was not opened up by Instructor Hisith, but obtained by having the bumpkin risk his life. He had won using heaven-defying luck!

What did Hisith do? He had maintained a mild, prim and proper look while producing such a shameless lie, and for what?

Shi Xiaobai neither knew that he had used the Body Incineration Curse or that Hisith had lied to him, nor did he know anything about the psionic sacred meridian, but he understood the last thing Hisith said.

“This King can already use Psionic Shield?”

That was a method that could withstand bullets. He could

already use it?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up, but very quickly, he began frowning and looked with renewed wariness and suspicions at Hisith.

“Then why was This King's divine body engulfed by an Eternal Calamity Inferno? Why were there Underworld Wraiths who infiltrated and wailed in This King's mind? What did you do?” Shi Xiaobai asked angrily after a moment of silence.

With that said, everyone was dumbfounded. What did that bumpkin just say? Eternal Calamity Inferno? Underworld Wraiths?

Hisith was startled for half a second before the smile on his lips grew more intense. The way he looked at Shi Xiaobai turned even gentler. He said softly, “The gaining of strength is usually associated with the birth of pain. Tu Dahei, if you can obtain eternal strength for a moment of pain, is there a need for you to complain?”

Hisith's expression seemed to say “you cheaped out and you still want to act innocent?”

Hisith's expression was truly vivid. Numerous rookies hurriedly covered their mouths, afraid they would burst out with laughter. Was Instructor Hisith pulling a fast one on a fool?

However, when Shi Xiaobai heard Hisith's words, he went into

deep contemplation, with his gaze turning heavy. Moments later, Shi Xiaobai suddenly reached out his right hand, and instantly, a broken Psionic Shield, which was so white that it looked transparent, appeared in front of him. However, it was so thin that it resembled a cicada's wing.

This motion that he had never rehearsed before had become nearly instinctive. It was as if a simple thought of fantasizing something would spew out of his palms, materialized into reality.

Was this power?

This was power!

Shi Xiaobai answered his own question, and immediately felt clarity in his heart. All the resentment he had, disappeared the next moment as a intense fighting spirit burned!

“If power can be exchanged with pain, This King is willing to suffer the agony of purgatory!”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and retracted his right hand. He looked at Hisith and said, “This King was wrong about you.”

Everyone nearly fell backwards as they were rendered extremely speechless. This bumpkin's stupidity was peerless! They could not bear it, but did not make a single move. Instructor Hisith clearly had a scheme and he was enjoying it. If anyone dared to interrupt Hisith's fun, that person would probably end up in a miserable

state.

At this moment, Hisith was immersed in his world of games!

“Although you have obtained strength, this strength is unstable. You temporarily have control over Psionic Power, but you need to think of a way to consolidate it.”

A light smile suffused from Hisith’s mouth. It looked extremely coquettish and charming as he told Shi Xiaobai another lie.

People, who had a psionic sacred meridian opened up, would have their Psionic Ability cultivation speed accelerated. It was also very beneficial to one’s physical cultivation. It would also push one’s control of Psionic Power to another stage, and unsurprisingly, it would be an eternal lifting. The words “temporarily” and “unstable” Hisith said was something even a three-year-old would not fall for!

Everyone cast their eyes on Shi Xiaobai, thinking that this bumpkin couldn’t be that ignorant, right?

“Ah? Then what should be done? How can it be consolidated?”

Shi Xiaobai’s reaction made everyone at a loss, they did not know how to react as not only did he believe, he even turned anxious about it.

A strange glint flashed in Hisith’s eyes as he beamed even more.

The way he looked at Shi Xiaobai was so gentle as though he was looking at a loved one. It gave Shi Xiaobai goosebumps.

“Very simple,” Hisith gently said. “By constantly destroying before establishment. Only then will it stand firmly. Dahei, the game I prepared for you happens to allow you to consolidate the energy that might disperse at any time.”

Shi Xiaobai knitted his eyebrows and said in a wary manner, “What game?”

Hisith’s grin turned sinister as he reached out his hand to point at the seated rookies. He said with a bewitching tone, “The 72 rookies here will be your training partners. Each and everyone of them will strike your Psionic Shield, breaking your Psionic Shield one after another!”

“Tu Dahei, even if you fail again and again, even if your dignity is trampled one after another, you must endure through it. Clench your teeth to hold on, because from multiple times of ‘destruction’, you will find that one opportunity at ‘establishment’. Infinite destruction before establishment. This way, you will be able to obtain power!”

“Tu Dahei, do you desire power?”

Hisith’s hands opened up, as if he was holding an invisible treasure in his hands. He was inviting Shi Xiaobai to hold it tight. His fiery words contained an irresistible magic, and the way he depicted “destruction before establishment” made people excited.

If the rookies in the room did not know better, they would probably have been deceived. However, reality was cruel. Hisith's guise was just targeted at Shi Xiaobai alone, but in their eyes, he was fully exposed. It made people feel sick!

However this false disguise clearly deceived the "ignorant" Shi Xiaobai, and had even touched him.

Did Shi Xiaobai desire power?

"No, This King wants justice!"

Shi Xiaobai smiled coldly, but it then turned into a wry smile. "But justice requires power to maintain it."

Shi Xiaobai spent only a second thinking, but he was able to come to a conclusion. He turned towards the seated rookies and shouted loudly, "Then, sorry for troubling all of you!"

Shi Xiaobai accepted Hisith's game, and even believed that the 72 rookies present were "training partners" who would help him.

Everyone sighed in their hearts. This bumpkin had fallen for it after all.

Even though opening up a psionic sacred meridian was enough to push his control of Psionic Power to the realm of "Grasped Basics",

for him to produce a perfect Psionic Shield required the next realm of “Familiarized Proficiency”. That was a realm that required years of accumulation.

The Psionic Shield he produced was not only broken. It was so thin that it neared transparency. Even a 7–8 year old student could easily shatter it, what more them, who had passed [Gaia]’s rookie evaluation.

The bumpkin would indeed continuously experience “destruction”, but it was impossible to have “establishment”. It was something they had accomplished over thousands of times of practice, so how could this bumpkin achieve it within 72 times?

There was no doubt that he would suffer the bitter taste of failure 72 times! And the taste of defeat would slowly be augmented into a sense of oppression. With the last straw, the bumpkin would completely collapse. It could range from him losing his confidence to never recovering.

“This is what Hisith does best. He first gives the game participant immense hope, then he would shred the hope bit by bit, causing despair to slowly emerge out of the layers of hope.”

The seated Lingcun muttered to himself. He looked miserable as the unacceptable situation that was infinitely nearing on reality began to appear in his mind.

“Be it the price paid for the situation Hisith designed, or the amount of effort placed into it, Shi Xiaobai has already reached the

level of ‘favorite’ in his heart. And a ‘favorite’ toy will be completely ‘played to brokenness’. This is the very core of Hisith’s games.”

“Hisith wants to completely destroy Shi Xiaobai! Then the game is definitely not that simple. He still has a trick up his hands!”

Lingcun’s pupils constricted as his heart skipped a beat. He looked at the stage where Shi Xiaobai was filled with fighting spirit, and Hisith who was beaming. He bit at his thumbnail, as his handsome face looked twisted, mind overloaded from thinking.

“Quick think. There must be a way, there must be some way. There must be a solution I didn’t think of. Hurry. Quick think! I’ll give you all my brain cells, so hurry up and think of a solution!”

Lingcun’s eyes were red as his teeth clamped harder.

“Kacha!”

The sound of his thumbnail being broken sounded.

At the same moment, Hisith’s excited voice resounded, instantly drowning out Lingcun’s thoughts.

“Then let the game begin! In the first wave of attack, let us begin with the weakest weakling to start the gongs of war!”

Hisith reached into his pocket, taking out a small notebook. He flipped through it rapidly as he murmured, “Let me look for it. Let me see what name the weakest little toy amongst this batch of [Annihilation] rookies has.”

After flipping for a moment, he finally stopped at a particular page. A joyful smile suffused along the corner of his lips.

“I found it. This batch’s weakest rookie. His name is—Chen Lingcun.”

Chapter 33: True Weakness

When Instructor Hisith read Chen Lingcun's name, other than Ye Jiaquan and Shi Xiaobai receiving a shock, the others revealed a confused look.

“Who is Chen Lingcun?”

“Eh? Why do I not have any impression of this name?”

“Isn't the weakest rookie Mi Xiaoqi?”

“...”

The rookies began to engage in whispers. They were surprised to discover that their memories did not have the slightest impression of a person named “Chen Lingcun”.

The strongest and weakest were always the focal of attention. On the path of Psionic Ability cultivation, the figure that walked in the forefront was always the one idolized and the target to chase after. For example, Team Red's Shi Xiaobai, who had played truant for several days, was such a person. His dual S monstrous talent and Perception of God had been deified by the rookies in their conversations. Everyone in the room knew of him.

And the person at the back of the pack was normally one they would be familiar with. Every time they encountered a setback, when they were exhausted from it, they would see the person in

front opening up a despairing gap. And at that moment, if they were to turn backwards to look at the trailing figure at the back, they would see that there were weaklings weaker than them. They could then feel a lamentable joy, a tiny bit of comfort, and even gain the strength to hold on.

The weakest person was the source of their self-comfort, so they were naturally the focus of attention!

But, who was Chen Lingcun?

The rookies racked their brains but were still unable to gain any information regarding this name. They suddenly realized that they had missed out something or had forgotten something.

When Instructor Hisith called out the three words “Chen Lingcun” a third time, a silver-haired youth stood up. His hands were in his pocket and his head was lowered. He walked out of the crowd.

When certain people walked into your field of vision, your eyes would be glued to them. The silver-haired youth, who was walking out, was such a person. Even though his head was lowered, his handsome looks still made people hold their breaths, unable to shift their gazes away.

“Ah? How can there be such a handsome hunk? It’s been so many days, and yet I didn’t notice him?” A boy-crazy girl was already shooting hearts out of her eyes.

“What a handsome elder brother. Strange, why don’t I have any impression of him at all?” A ten-year-old girl cocked her head and wondered.

“Heh heh, it serves him right to be the weakest for looking so handsome.” A particular ugly boy cursed in his heart.

“Oh? I have such a person in my faction?” The head of one of Team Red’s faction, Han Feng, frowned.

Under the doubtful and surprised gazes of everyone, Lingcun walked to the stage, and stood meters away from Shi Xiaobai, just across him. He revealed a wry smile.

“Very good! Very good! Very good!”

Hisith squinted his eyes as he stared at Lingcun for a moment before suddenly laughing maniacally. He inserted his fingers into his fiery red hair and began to tremble.

“I don’t have any information about you in my memory. Even I missed your existence. It looks like you are similar to another interesting guy. Your looks are near perfect, but your presence is nearly zero. This extremely fun contradiction is truly interesting!”

Hisith looked at Lingcun with fiery eyes.

“You know that guy!?”

Lingcun suddenly raised his head to look at Hisith, his breath shortening. His pale blue eyes revealed a redness, as he gnashed his teeth, saying, “Where is that guy now?”

Hisith was slightly surprised as he began thinking.

“So that’s how it is. It seems that you and that interesting guy come from the same place, so that’s why you have the same characteristics. Heh, I can see from your eyes’ hate. The desire to kill him is so intense and urgent. Oh, I like your gaze. It reminds me of a particularly happy moment in time.”

Hisith grinned. “You are pretty lucky. I do know that guy who looks somewhat similar to you, and similarly, I know where he is presently.”

Upon hearing this, Lingcun’s breath went stagnant. His pale blue eyes were suddenly filled with a layer of crimson. But as though he thought of something, the crimson color faded away suddenly. His aberration state only lasted for half a second before he returned to normal. Following that, he took a deep breath, calming down gradually.

“As long as you tell me where he is, I’ll fulfill any condition you want.”

Lingcun raised his head to look into Hisith’s eyes. His calm words were filled with rough emotion as well as resolve that was beyond doubt.

“I have seen enough ‘fun’ from you. As long as you show the value as a toy, I will satisfy your every desire.”

Hisith licked his lips with his tongue. “Perfect, I have thought of a game ‘that is slightly difficult’. If you can survive the game, I’ll tell you everything you want to know, including everything about that man that nearly had zero presence.”

The rookies present, who were still at a loss, were immediately aghast when they heard this conversation. “Surviving” was the passing criteria of the game?

“Regardless of what game it is, I’ll accept them all. We can even begin now!” Lingcun answered without hesitation.

“Very good. I’m truly beginning to like you even more.”

Hisith’s pleasant face suddenly turned cold as there was a sudden turn in his words. He said, “Although I am very satisfied with the ‘fun’ you bring, I am still filled with doubt about you being qualified to join my game. That’s because you are too weak.”

Hisith lowered his head to look at the tiny notebook in his hand. He smiled lightly. “You are truly deserving of being this batch’s weakest rookie.”

“Come, my beloved toys. Listen well and know what true weakness is.”

Hisith turned to face the seated rookies and began to read out the text in his notebook.

“Chen Lingcun, Mind Expanse, F Class. Psy-genes, none.”

“Ability test, F Class. Obtained only one point.”

“Psionic Ability Realm: Psionic Mortal, first level.”

“Known offensive skill: None.”

“Known defensive skill: None.”

“Known movement technique: None.”

“Evaluation, 3 points. Rating, F Class.”

Hisith announced Lingcun’s personal information line by line, without sparing his feelings. As Lingcun’s pathetic natural endowment evaluation was revealed, how “weak” Lingcun was was immediately laid bare for all to see.

There was half a second of dead silence before mocking laughter and jeers erupted from the seats. Even the faces of those female rookies, who were previously shooting hearts with their eyes, turned cold.

“Heh heh. What trash-like numbers.”

“Pui! To think I was slightly moved. Who knew he was such trash. What a waste of a nice piece of skin.”

“Mi Xiaoqi is so much stronger than him. He is indeed worthy of being this batch’s weakest [Annihilation] rookie. Heh, he is probably the weakest rookie in all of [Gaia].”

“How did he get into [Gaia] when he’s so weak. Did he take the back door?”

“Look at how smooth and tender his skin and flesh is. Maybe he took the back door through some old freak from the upper echelons?”

“Maybe he is kept by one of those old women high up the chains of command.”

“ ... ”

There was unbridled vicious mockery. Hisith’s smiling look seemed to encourage everyone to say even more vicious words. Rookies, who were just subconsciously mocking him, seemed to get the meaning behind Hisith’s smile. Slowly, they began to pour out more mean remarks.

Deplorable words such as weakling, gigolo, taking the back door and various other profanities poured out in limitless fashion. Instantly, the entire classroom was flooded by invectives.

Hisith had a brimming smile, and looked as though he was enjoying it tremendously.

Lingcun was silent, his face calm. However, the hands in his pockets were clenched tightly before relaxing. He clenched them again, and relaxed them again...

Suddenly, a voice filled with anger exploded in series amidst the invective voices!

“Shut up! Shut up! Shut up! All of you shut the hell up for This King!”

Shi Xiaobai’s had a furious glare as he pointed to everyone seated. The words “shut up” spewed out from his throat like a volcano erupting.

“Shut up! Shut up! Shut up...”

The din did not stop immediately, but as the maniac screams continued, it gradually faded away, no longer having any strength in them.

And at that moment, the mockery and invectives also seemed to lose its “fun” and meaning.

One rookie after another involuntarily shut their mouths.

When the final rookie stopped laughing, only that single youth was still screaming in the classroom.

The youth's voice was slightly hoarse and was nearly cracking, but it was still stirring.

“Finally, silence!”

Only when Shi Xiaobai realized that his voice was the only remaining sound in the classroom did he stop shouting with satisfaction.

He coughed, as though he was prepared to say something.

Everyone could not help but hold their breaths in wait. This bumpkin was like a madman. What did he want to say after making them turn silent?

“Why can't This King understand the reason for your laughter?”

Shi Xiaobai faced everybody's stares and righteously spoke, “Trash? Weakling? That is just by your own standards. From the way This King looks at it, it's utter baloney!”

“Have you seen true trash? Have you seen true weaklings? Do

you understand what weakness is?”

“No, none of you have any idea what true weakness is!”

Shi Xiaobai’s enraged look shocked everyone. The words he said were incomprehensible. What was he trying to express?

“Don’t you want to play a game? Come on! This King will keep you company to the end! This King will show you what true weakness is!”

Shi Xiaobai sneered as he pointed his thumb at himself.

“This King is the true weakling and trash!”

Author’s Note: This King does not do cookie-cutter plots. Yes!

Chapter 34 - Please Shatter It!

In the eyes of the majority of the rookies, Tu Dahei was a bumpkin who did not even know about Psionic Shield. Although he got lucky and survived the Body Incineration Curse, allowing him to open up a psionic sacred meridian, his Psionic Ability control had just reached “Grasped Basics”. The Psionic Shield he produced, was at best, at the primary school level.

Although Chen Lingcun was the rookie with the poorest evaluation this batch, Tu Dahei was likely the one with the weakest strength.

Hence, when Shi Xiaobai pointed to himself saying “This King is the true weakling and trash”, the rookies realized amidst laughter that in this room, it was indeed true that this bumpkin was the most qualified person to say so.

However, what was the point of you saying it so righteously and awe-inspiring? Why did it seem like proving that your weakness was something glorious? You told us to shut up just to say those dumb words that played to the gallery?

A number of rookies felt as though they had been fooled. The tiny bit of pity for him immediately disappeared, giving rise to baffling anger.

There was also a number of rookies, who despite finding it funny, felt a sense of admiration. For this bumpkin to deprecate himself in this manner, it was clearly to help Chen Lingcun resolve the

situation. To be able to deprecate oneself for a friend was not something any ordinary person could do.

A very small number of rookies turned solemn. Their eyes looked as though they were pondering over his words, such as Xiang Wu, the strongest rookie, Wang Lin and the honest Ye Jiaquan. They spontaneously had a strange thought—Tu Dahei was not simple.

“The most lamentable thing for weaklings is not their weak strength, but that they refuse to admit that they are weak. Although he claims to be a weakling and trash, is he supposed to be considered dumb, or a master that looks like a fool?” A smile suffused on Xiang Wu’s lips.

Hisith similarly had a smile on his face. His joy was effusive, but he remained silent. No one could guess what was on his mind.

As for the handsome silver-haired youth onstage, he was still the focus of attention. Most of the people’s gazes landed on him. This bumpkin was willing to deprecate himself for him, so what would be his reaction?

Lingcun’s reaction was beyond everyone’s expectation.

“Pfft!”

He laughed. His laughter was like a silver bottle shattering.

“Ha..Ha...Ha....”

His laughter did not stop. It was as though he was trying to curb his laughing but failed. It was staccato as he continued laughing. His laughter was beyond description, it gave people the feeling that it was like a silver chime, soothing to the ears. However, it was also like a silver needle scratching a wall with an ear-piercing screech.

Tears rolled out of Lingcun's eyes as he laughed. He took a great deal of effort to stop his laughing, and by then, his breaths sounded like chokes, but the smile on his face was clearly filled with joy.

Lingcun knew Tu Dahei was Shi Xiaobai, and he definitely knew Shi Xiaobai had monstrous talent. When he first met Shi Xiaobai, he thought that Shi Xiaobai was a person who failed to show restraint, thinking that he was like a common genius who was arrogant. Hence, he had intentionally said the words, "Shi Xiaobai is still a weakling", so as to remind Shi Xiaobai that he was still a weakling.

However, he did not expect that Shi Xiaobai knew this better than anyone. Furthermore, Lingcun did not expect Shi Xiaobai to say it without qualms, as though he had a clear conscience.

"Phew, I always thought I was very clever, but compared to you, I'm truly too dumb."

Lingcun felt respect for Shi Xiaobai and he was touched by him. All of this was reflected in the way he looked at Shi Xiaobai. He said softly, "Dahei, you are stronger than anyone."

“No, This King is very weak!”

Shi Xiaobai smiled and stretched out his right hand. In front of him, a broken white shield that was extremely thin and nearly transparent appeared.

“Come, I’ll show you how weak This King is!”

The white shield looked extremely fragile, as though a touch would shatter it.

“I can’t do that.”

Lingcun shook his head gently. It was unknown if he meant that he was powerless at shattering it, or he was unwilling to shatter it.

“If you want to know where that man is, you have to do it.”

Hisith, who had been silent all this while, suddenly spoke. He had a heavily jesting tone. “I don’t like toys without ‘fun’.”

Lingcun’s expression changed. Hisith’s words struck the weakest spot in his heart. His will to resist, which just rose up, was immediately shattered.

“I...”

Lingcun looked at the weak shield once again. Shattering it was very simple, but also very difficult. Although Shi Xiaobai did not mind being viewed as a weakling, he did not want to personally shatter what seemed like weak dignity. However, if he were to resist Hisith's will, that would be a most irrational act. Besides, he had to know where that man was.

What was he to do?

Suddenly, a voice broke Lingcun's line of thought.

"I always knew I'm a weakling, but I do not know how weak I am. I have always been running, running away from the fact that I'm powerless."

Lingcun was stunned. The person, who spoke those words, was Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, he looked serious and stern. Everyone was stunned. This was the first time this bumpkin did not address himself as "This King" in front of them. The way he spoke looked as though he was a different person.

"I do not know what Psionic Shield is, but I know it is true strength, a strength I have always desired."

Shi Xiaobai looked at the broken white shield in front of him.

"I desire, desire, desire, desire, desire...desire to possess true strength."

Numerous words of “desire” came out of his mouth, as though he wanted to let everyone clearly understand how much he desired it.

“So, what I’m in eager to know is how great a difference I am from all of you. Because only then, my desire will be real.”

What did it mean for a desire to be real? It was that the desired object would possess realism. For Shi Xiaobai, he still did not know the shape and form of the power he desired.

“Shatter it. Tell me how weak I am. If you are the weakest one here, then, prove to me that I’m weaker than the weakest.”

Shi Xiaobai pointed to his Shield and looked at Chen Lingcun, his eyes flickering with anticipation.

“Let me witness how weak your strength that is mocked by everyone. Let me experience how powerful that weak strength is to me!”

“Shatter all that fake illusions. Tell me the harsh reality. Only then will I know what strength is, and what the thing I desire is. For that, I am willing to pay the price.”

“Please shatter all my weakness and hesitation!”

“Please shatter it!”

The moment Shi Xiaobai finished his words, Chen Lingcun's fist finally came smashing over.

The fist was very slow, and looked weak and powerless. The white energy around his fist was so thin that it looked transparent. It gently smashed into Shi Xiaobai's shield, like a soft tofu colliding into another tofu.

That punch was infuriatingly weak.

However, Shi Xiaobai's shield shattered. There was no "boom" explosion, but a crack that appeared like a frozen surface of water. The cracks slowly emanated, as a crisp sound sounded, "Pu" it shattered. The white shield turned into numerous tiny fragments, melting in the air.

There was nothing astounding about this punch, in fact, it was somewhat ludicrous. However, no one produced any derisive laughter. A strange repression seemed to fill the entire room.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he saw his shield shatter so easily. He lowered his head gently.

"Sorry, thank you."

Lingcun sighed as his fist turned into a soft palm that patted Shi Xiaobai gently on his shoulder. He turned to leave the platform. As he passed Hisith, he coldly said, "I will look for you. No matter the

game, it's fine by me.”

“Also, if your goal is to shatter Dahei's dignity and hope, or that you want to personally wipe away the luster of a gem, then from the very beginning, you have already lost this meaningless game!”

After Lingcun finished speaking, he returned to the crowd. Everyone's eyes followed him, but at a certain moment, their eyes suddenly glazed over. Other than Hisith and Ye Jiaquan, the others moved their gazes away from Lingcun. Their minds vaguely remembered that a very weak person had shattered Tu Dahei's shield, however, as for who it was, what his name was or how he looked, none of them could remember.

It was as though someone with an intense presence had disappeared from their memories.

The rookies focused their eyes back on the platform. The bumpkin's head was still lowered, so his expression could not be seen clearly. Although they had forgotten a particularly important person, they still remembered that the bumpkin's Psionic Shield had been shattered by the pathetic strength of a weakling who had the poorest evaluation.

He must have received a terrible setback, right?

“So, now I am the weakest weakling, right?”

Shi Xiaobai had his head down, his voice trembling.

“Yes, my beloved toy. You are really the weakest here. You have proven what is true weakness. You have let everyone witness what a weakling and trash truly looks like. You did a terrific job.”

Hisith’s voice was filled with fiery praise, but this made everyone draw a gasp. They felt a shattered coldness rise up their hearts.

Was it so joyful for Instructor Hisith to trample on dignity that was already stamped to the ground?

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai raised his head. When his expression landed in everyone’s eyes, everyone was stunned.

Shi Xiaobai was laughing. A smile that came from the bottom of his heart bloomed on his delicate face. His eyes were sparkling like stars, and the corners of his mouth was gently curved upwards.

Why did he have such an expression?

“Since This King is already the weakest weakling, then what are the ones who can’t shatter This King’s shield?”

Shi Xiaobai faced the seated rookies as he roared with laughter. “There are still 71 more opportunities. This King will definitely achieve ‘destruction before establishment’, and eventually defend against your attacks!”

“Tremble and be filled with despair, foolish mortals. This King will show you who is the true weakling!”

Chapter 35: The Game Has Just Begun

If Shi Xiaobai was the weakest rookie in [Annihilation], then wouldn't the person who failed to shatter Shi Xiaobai's Psionic Shield mean that that person was weaker than the weakest?

The rookies subconsciously overlooked this possibility. Now that it was mentioned by Shi Xiaobai, although they still scoffed at it, they had no choice but to attach importance to it. Their gazes also turned more serious.

Clearly, Shi Xiaobai had sought death, pushing himself into an extremely difficult situation.

Hisith seemed to gain joy seeing such a situation, but even felt that it was not enough. He decided to give this matter a serious push.

"I will judge the damage levels of your psionic offense before producing a new ranking in each team."

The moment Hisith said this, the looks on the seated rookies changed. Even those with lazy expressions turned serious.

Hisith's game was frequently related to the team's internal ranking. The people ranked nearer the top typically had a better advantage. No one wanted to lose out in Hisith's game because Hisith showed no mercy to failed "toys".

And at this moment, Hisith wanted to rank them based on the damage levels of the psionic offense. This was no doubt a chance for the rookies ranked at the back, while the rookies ranked at the top couldn't be careless.

Hisith was forcing the rookies to use all their strength.

Shi Xiaobai's declaration that sought death and Hisith's suddenly announced rule pushed a new development in this boring game. Now, it was not a "sparring" session, but Shi Xiaobai becoming the touchstone for everyone else.

Seeing that the time was ripe, Hisith flipped to the first page of the small notebook.

"The game continues. Next, Song Nan."

...

Shi Xiaobai was trying hard to suppress the pangs of anger in his heart. When the rookies derided Lingcun, he was truly infuriated. Although he had not known Lingcun for long, Lingcun was still a passionate fan of his.

Shi Xiaobai naturally would not sit idle seeing his fan being derided, hence he chose the simplest and most brainless method.

All of you mocked Lingcun as a weakling?

Then, This King will let you have a taste of what it means to be mocked as a “weakling”.

Shi Xiaobai strengthened his resolve. Although he did not know if he could accomplish “destruction before establishment”, he was not afraid of “destruction”. Wasn’t desiring “establishment” already enough?

At this moment, a slightly plump girl came in front of Shi Xiaobai.

“Song Nan. Nice to meet you!” Song Nan’s voice woke Shi Xiaobai from his reverie.

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his right hand as energy surged out. The white shield appeared once again. It still looked as broken as ever, and so thin that it looked transparent.

“Ha!”

Song Nan took a deep breath as her plump hand pierced forward like a spear. Shi Xiaobai saw two fingers stretched out from the plump hand, and at the moment she stabbed over, a sharp white beam shot out, striking the white shield.

“Peng!”

A hole opened up in the white shield instantly before it exploded into fragments, disappearing into nothingness. However, the white beam did not stop, it grazed past Shi Xiaobai's face, nearly striking him.

At the moment his shield shattered, Shi Xiaobai felt a pain in his chest. It was as if all the blood in his body was flowing in the opposite direction, making it hard for him to breathe. He entered a daze due to the pain in his mind. When he snapped out of it, he immediately felt a lingering fear as he took a few arduous deep breaths.

“Sorry!”

Song Nan gave a reluctant look as she reminded him. “It's best you prop the shield to the side of your body. A few rookies are proficient at ‘Psionic Penetration’ like me. If you aren't careful and get hit by it, you might...”

Song Nan did not finish her sentence. She sighed deeply and turned to look at Hisith. Seeing Hisith write something on the tiny notebook, she guessed that it was her results. She was perturbed because she had not held back at all and nearly failed to control the direction. She did not know how her results were, or if her ranking would rise.

Hisith waved his hand, indicating for Song Nan to leave, as he flipped to the second page of his little notebook.

“Next, Hua Pengju.”

A youth with dyed hair stood up. Smiling at the people beside him, he rubbed his fist, as though he was eager to try.

As for Shi Xiaobai, his chest was rising and falling erratically. It was as though he had not recovered from the recent pain.

“The more thoroughly shattered the Psionic Shield, the more burden it would cause the caster. If Song Nan’s strike at her full strength is enough to cause Shi Xiaobai pain, then if it was Wang Lin, Song Xiao or Xiang Wu’s full strength, would Shi Xiaobai be able to withstand it?” The seated Lingcun’s eyes were filled with worry.

At this moment, the youth with the dyed hair was standing in front of Shi Xiaobai.

“What? You already can’t take it? Hurry, don’t you want to experience ‘destruction before establishment’? Where’s your shield?” The youth noticed that Shi Xiaobai was still gasping and began denigrating him.

“How can This King not be able to take it!” Shi Xiaobai clenched his teeth and produced the white shield. For this time, Shi Xiaobai heeded Song Nan’s advice, and propped up the shield to his side, slightly further away from his body.

“Oh? Don’t you know that the closer the Psionic Shield is to the body, the thicker it would be? Why, by placing it so far, are you giving up? Or are you cowering? Don’t you want to prove who is

the true weakling? Do you dare to have a bit of courage? Can you be more like a man?”

The youth disparaged, with a look of contempt.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned as a cold beam flashed in his eyes. He dispersed the shield and produced a new shield by the side of his body. This time, the shield was nearly stuck to his body. Shi Xiaobai could faintly sense that there was a difference in the thickness between the two shields.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's heart leaped, as if he felt danger approach him. He turned around and his pupils involuntarily constricted. The youth with dyed hair had suddenly appeared by his side, his fist mere inches away!

This punch was too sudden. Shi Xiaobai did not have time to react, as the fist with white energy circling it hit the weak shield!

“Boom!”

The shield shattered but the fist did not stop, slamming heavily into Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. Immediately, a white light exploded like white fireworks, magnificently blooming from Shi Xiaobai's shoulder.

Shi Xiaobai was instantly sent flying. After flying a few meters backwards, he slammed into the hard steel ground, issuing a heavy thud. Shi Xiaobai felt as though there was a surging energy in his

body that was going to burst out of his body.

“Wa!” Shi Xiaobai spat out a mouthful of hot blood.

“Tch, true trash that can’t even take a beating.” The youth sneered with disdain. He turned to look at Hisith and gave a flattering look as he watched Hisith write something into the small notebook.

The expressions of the people in the seats turned slightly ugly. This youth with dyed hair was named Hua Pengju. He was always a prick amongst the rookies. Although he was quite strong, he had a terrible character. He was infamous, and only a few people with similar bad characters like him mixed with him. What Hua Pengju did clearly disgusted the crowd.

“Not bad, as a toy, you are sufficiently ‘fun’.”

Hisith’s praise caused the rookies, who wanted to denounce Hua Pengju, to shut their mouths. Hua Pengju looked overjoyed as he began laughing out loud.

And by the side, Shi Xiaobai was half-kneeling. He constantly coughed and occasionally spat out blood. His body was trembling intensely.

Hisith took a glance at Shi Xiaobai and gave a sinister smile. Raising his hand to make a light throw, a poker card that appeared out of nowhere hit Shi Xiaobai. It melted into his body as a red

light burst out from behind Shi Xiaobai, turning into the phantom image of a “Three of Hearts”.

“Stand up, my beloved little toy. The game has just begun.”

Hisith happily flipped to the third page on his small notebook.

“Next, Ye Jiaquan.”

Chapter 36: Ye Jiaquan's Ye Family Punch

The poker card, “Three of Hearts” caused everyone’s breathing to stagnate, but wonder rose once again in their hearts. Why was Hisith willing to waste two precious Underworld Poker consecutively to “torture” Tu Dahei?

With Hisith’s strength, he could have easily set up a Psionic Barrier around Tu Dahei’s body, protecting him from receiving any injuries from the afterwinds of an attack. But why did Hisith want to let Tu Dahei experience pain, even at the cost of wasting his Underworld Poker? If the first “Eight of Hearts” was enough to let the game proceed, then a second “Three of Hearts” looked like it was purely to abuse Tu Dahei.

Could Hisith and Tu Dahei have some grudge, and this so-called game was purely a form of revenge and torture?

The seated Lingcun suddenly thought of something, his eyes flashing as though he figured it out.

“No, revenge and torture would not make Hisith feel pleasure. Only interesting toys and games can make Hisith feel happy. Maybe I have been misled from the beginning. It is very likely that Hisith doesn’t want to ‘destroy’ Shi Xiaobai, but to ‘accelerate’ the ripening of the fruit. He wants his beloved toy to mature faster. Only then, will he be able to enjoy more interesting games. He has seen immense ‘fun’ in Shi Xiaobai, so he wants to personally dig out the ‘fun’!”

The luster in Lingcun's eyes brightened, but soon, his eyebrows frowned slightly.

“If Hisith's goal is to make Shi Xiaobai grow rapidly through ‘torture’, then it means he sees the possibility for Shi Xiaobai to be able to have ‘destruction before establishment’. However, even if Shi Xiaobai is a Psionic Ability cultivation genius, he would not be able to reach the ‘Familiarized Proficiency’ realm in 72 rounds of ‘destruction’. Yet, he is attempting to do so. It can't be that he has seen the chances of success in Shi Xiaobai's body, right?”

“Could it be that he has discovered some secret on Shi Xiaobai? That secret gives Shi Xiaobai the possibility of having ‘destruction before establishment’?”

Lingcun felt like he was nearing the truth, but he was missing the most critical piece of information. That information was hidden at an undetectable depth, so if he wanted to grasp the information, he needed to infer the true reason for Hisith to do these series of strange actions.

“Silly Ye, use all your strength with the Ye Family Fist. Remember to open up a distance.”

After making up his mind, Lingcun tugged at Ye Jiaquan, who was about to walk to the platform, and said those words.

“Ah?”

Ye Jiaquan's eyes looked vacant, but after looking into Lingcun's resolute eyes for a few seconds, he nodded and said. "Me will follow what you said."

...

...

As he was being healed by the "Three of Hearts", Shi Xiaobai quickly recovered from his injuries. After he stood up, a puzzled look flashed in his eyes. After having his shield shattered thrice, Shi Xiaobai began to realize that something was wrong with the shield he had propped up. Every time he used the Psionic Power, he would feel a strange obstruction.

If the Psionic Power that surged out was described like water flow, then the obstruction was like a rock that was blocking the water flow when it reached the end of the pipe. It could only squeeze out through cracks.

"Is this the Psionic Ability control that perverse instructor mentioned?"

Shi Xiaobai clenched his fists tightly as a faint smile involuntarily appeared on his face. "This is the realistic feeling of power!"

Ye Jiaquan, who had just finished walking down from the stairs, noticed Shi Xiaobai was smiling. After a momentary daze, he could not help but reveal an honest smile.

“Dahei does not seem depressed at all. That’s great.” Ye Jiaquan thought in his mind. He scratched his head and said, “Me was told by Lingcun not to hold back. Although Me does not know what his plans are, but Me knows that Lingcun is always right, so Me will follow what he said.”

“However, Me will not hurt you. Prop your Psionic Shield further away. Although the shield is harder the closer it is to your body, the defensive effects might not be the best. Psionic Charge and Psionic Blast have a certain amount of penetrating power. Me thinks that the best distance for a shield is beyond the limits of the afterwinds.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised hearing this. He could not help but ask, “What are Psionic Charge and Psionic Blast?”

“Ah?” Ye Jiaquan was momentarily. He scratched his head again as he patiently said, “Most psionic offensive skills are formed or derived from the five basic combat skills or combinations. The five basic offensive skills are Psionic Charge, Psionic Blast, Psionic Wavelet, Psionic Slash and Psionic Penetration. Just now, Song Nan used a variation of Psionic Penetration, while Hua Pengju used Psionic Blast.”

Shi Xiaobai recalled Song Nan’s sharp white beam that penetrated the shield and Hua Pengju’s white fireworks that bloomed the moment his shoulder was hit. Immediately, he understood the meaning of Psionic Penetration and Psionic Blast.

At this moment, someone in the seats shouted, “Are the two of you catching up on old times? Do you know that there is a bunch of people waiting behind?”

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and realized it was the youth with dyed hair. This rascal was truly like a ghost that lingered on.

“Come on, Steel Wall Shaking Powerful Ox, let This King witness your punch!”

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his right hand and propped up a white shield about a meter away from him. It was still as broken and transparent.

“Alright!”

Ye Jiaquan nodded his head heavily as he slowly bent his body. His fists were placed in front of his chest. Immediately, a powerful stance rose up. His honest expression disappeared and his tiny eyes burned with flaring beams.

“The psionic offensive skill Me uses is Me’s Ye family’s special fist technique—Ye Family Fist!”

The Ye family had a fist technique known as Ye Family Fist (Ye Jiaquan), and similarly had a son whose name was Ye Jiaquan.

“Ha!”

With a loud roar, Ye Jiaquan punched out!

This punch infused all the glory of his family!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils constricted slightly. This punch seemed to combine into the dozens of punches that happened at the back of the steel building in his memory. The white glow around the fist, the waves that surged out like ripples was both familiar and unfamiliar. It was as though the secret behind the Ye Family Fist finally revealed a tip of the iceberg.

“This King understands!”

Shi Xiaobai managed to finally see the true face of this white glow. It was spinning Psionic Power! No, it was not only spinning. The Psionic Power had a regular spiraling pattern in the form of wavelets!

Ye Jiaquan's fist stopped one meter in front of the shield, but the white spiraling beam of light continued on forward, smashing into the broken white shield. The white shield exploded immediately as fist wind blew up Shi Xiaobai's clothes and hair violently.

Ye Jiaquan had used all his strength, but his fist had stopped one meter in front of the shield; hence, what hit the shield was just Ye Jiaquan's afterwind.

The shield shattered, but Shi Xiaobai was not in great pain.

Instead he fell into an intriguing state of comprehension. The fist from before was constantly replayed in his brain. The white spiraling beam, the Psionic Power in the shape of ripples all seemed to tell him something in his mind.

“Phew!”

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and stretched out his right hand. Another broken white shield appeared in front of him.

Suddenly, dense ripples began to appear on the broken shield, like circular wavelets that could be seen on a water surface.

Someone in the seats suddenly exclaimed.

“Wavelet Shield!?”

“How can that be possible? Isn’t it an E Class defensive skill? How can having only Psionic Ability control at ‘Grasped Basics’ be able to produce Wavelet Shield?”

“That... How did this bumpkin do it?”

“...”

The white shield still looked thin and nearly transparent. It looked wretched, but ring after ring of ripples indicated that it was a “Wavelet Shield”, an E Class defensive skill. Any offensive skill,

defensive skill or movement technique above F Class required “Familiarized Proficiency” level of Psionic Ability control. However, from the thickness and level of perfection of the shield, Shi Xiaobai’s Psionic Ability control was clearly at the “Grasped Basics” level. What was going on?

Everyone fell into deep thought, even Hisith was not spared.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the undulating ripples on the shield as his eyes began to burn. A smile appeared on his lips.

“This is power!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai’s desire in his heart intensified. He turned around to realize that Hisith was in a daze. He spoke loudly, urging him, “Hurry up and announce the next one. This King is unable to endure the thirst!”

Chapter 37: The Absolute Choice That Forcefully Changes The Outcome

Hearing Shi Xiaobai's urging, Hisith was momentarily stunned. Immediately following that, he revealed an odd smile. He flipped the little notebook to the fourth page, and announced, "Next, Xiang Wu."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned hearing this. As he dissolved the shield in front of him, he looked to the corner in the left. The man named Xiang Wu was in his opinion, an independent and free person, a person worthy of respect.

Xiang Wu wasn't tall. His chiseled facial features made him look heroic. He wore a white top and black bottom, a samurai outfit. When he walked, he was like a hidden blade in a scabbard.

"This person is very strong." Shi Xiaobai had such a thought.

"Xiang Wu. Nice to meet you." Xiang Wu came in front of Shi Xiaobai and bowed with his hands folded in front of him slightly.

Shi Xiaobai nodded seriously. He propped up his Psionic Shield once again. The spiraling ripples emanated out from the middle of shield, like a water surface that formed concentric ripples.

Xiang Wu quietly looked at the Wavelet Shield, and after a moment of silence, he suddenly asked, "Your Wavelet Shield, was it just figured out or have you been practicing it for a long time?"

When everyone heard this, their eyes lit up. This question was in fact the greatest question they had on their minds. Did this bumpkin truly just learn Wavelet Shield suddenly?

The ability to use psionic offensive skills, defensive skills and movement techniques depended on one's Psionic Ability control as well as familiarity level of the skill. According to Tu Dahei's "Grasped Basics" level of Psionic Ability control, unless he had practiced numerous times, allowing his Wavelet Shield's familiarity level to reach "Familiarized Proficiency", it was impossible for him to use Wavelet Shield.

However, if Tu Dahei truly knew Wavelet Shield, then why did he say that he did not know what Psionic Shield was in the beginning? Was he lying from the beginning?

"Shi Xiaobai would not lie on matters like this. He had just learned it. It's clear that his Wavelet Shield's familiarity level has only just reached Grasped Basics, but yet he can produce Wavelet Shield. Why is that so...could it be..."

An inconceivable guess flashed past Lingcun's mind as the way he looked at Shi Xiaobai turned to astonishment.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai replied in high spirits, "This King managed to touch the truth from Steel Ox's first. The sleeping Power of Salz, the Kind of the Gods in This King's body had its initial stages of awakening, so what's so strange about being able to use the divine power of wavelets?"

A dark shade clouded over everyone immediately, believing that this bumpkin was beyond hope. Even if he could produce a Wavelet Shield, that broken Wavelet Shield was still unable to withstand a single hit. Yet, he was still speaking nonsense. Wasn't the few defeats from before insufficient to teach him a lesson?

"I see."

Xiang Wu's reaction was unsuspected. After he heard Shi Xiaobai's response, he pondered for a moment, and after some hesitation, said, "Try and see if you can transform this Psionic Shield into a white ball the size of a soccer ball."

Everyone found Xiang Wu's request ridiculous. To change the shape of Psionic Shield, one needed at least 'Familiarized Proficiency' level of Psionic Ability control!

However, a scene that made them stare tongue-tied happened. They saw Shi Xiaobai acknowledge with a terse response. Then, the Psionic Shield in front of him began spinning, and while it spun, the white energy that was like a whirlpool, began to condense in its core. Seconds later, it transformed into a round white ball.

"Holy shit! Psionic Transformation?"

"This bumpkin's Psionic Ability control has already reached 'Familiarized Proficiency'?"

“No, it’s not ‘Familiarized Proficiency’. Look at the speed at which the shape changes. I estimate that he is almost about to break through to the ‘Exemplary Mastery’ stage!”

“Look carefully at the white ball. All the Psionic Power is compressed together, and yet it hasn’t repelled after such a long period of time. How stable must your control be to be able to achieve that?”

“ ... ”

The seated rookies were stunned as they called out with an inconceivable tone.

“Eh? Why are these foolish mortals making such a big fuss. Could it be that This King has done something impressive? Could it be that This King isn’t that weak?”

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt like he had underestimated himself. When he heard Xiang Wu’s request, he was initially at a loss. He did not know what to do, but his mind began to flash a thought of changing the Psionic Shield to a ball, and it resulted in the Psionic Shield really condensing to form a ball!

He didn’t expect that transforming the Psionic Shield to a white ball was so easy for him!

“Isn’t it just producing a ball? This King shall try others!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had his confidence restored. He suddenly stared at the white ball. His brain began churning, and at this moment, he felt like he held dictatorship over the white ball!

Hence, a scene that shocked everyone, that even Hisith was left staring in bewilderment, happened.

The white ball turned into a white pole seconds later!

The pole turned into a spear seconds later!

The spear turned into a scimitar moments later!

The scimitar turned into an axe moments later!

The axe turned into a hammer moments later!

The hammer turned into a sickle moments later!

The sickle turned into...

...

The white Psionic Power did all sorts of transformations and its speed wasn't fast, but was done with regularity and thoroughness. Furthermore, the weapons he produced looked extremely realistic,

as though they were specially sculpted out from white clay.

Everyone could not help but quieten down. As they focused on the constantly changing white Psionic Power, they felt like they had to be dreaming.

After a long period, Shi Xiaobai finally stopped, as he sighed heavily.

“Hai, a castle is too hard. This King can’t produce it.”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice was filled with regret.

At this moment, everyone was petrified.

...

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

A light round of applause broke the dead silence. It came from Hisith.

“My beloved little toy, you have really given me such a pleasant surprise. Just four rounds of ‘destruction’ and you have already completed ‘destruction before establishment’. You went from Grasped Basics to Familiarized Proficiency. I can’t find any adjectives to praise your monstrous ‘perception’. You are truly very interesting!”

Hisith's ecstatic voice revealed the truth.

The rookies, who had thought of this possibility but kept rejecting it, immediately went into a frenzy when they heard Hisith's confirmation!

“Undergoing destruction four times to complete one realm's breakthrough. Am I f*cking dreaming?”

“It's too inconceivable. Tempering thousands of times to undergo destruction before establishment. I always thought it was a legend, never expecting that someone could gain true insight from four rounds of ‘destruction’ to obtain ‘establishment’. That perception is truly perverse!”

“That...Even the legendary Shi Xiaobai wouldn't be able to do that, right?”

“Yea, Tu Dahei might be more of a genius than Shi Xiaobai!”

“Eh? Tu Dahei? Shi Xiaobai? Why do I feel like that there's something strange about that?”

“Strange+1”

“...”

Everyone could not link the freak that managed to achieve “destruction before establishment” after four rounds of “destruction” and the bumpkin that was full of nonsense. They could only constantly sigh, be awed, be shocked and use words to vent the astonishment in their hearts.

While bathing in the praises and exclamations, Shi Xiaobai surprisingly did not reveal a smug expression. He only quietly adjusted the Psionic Shield in front of him. Shi Xiaobai already understood that he could control the white Psionic Power in any way he wished. If that was the case, then it was obvious he could produce a perfectly transmuted Psionic Shield!

Shi Xiaobai was not disappointed. With a thought from his mind, the Psionic Shield in front of him transmuted from a broken and thin state. Although it had shrunk over all, the thickness had increased by more than 100%. The perfect surface was no longer filled with holes. Ripple after ripple emanated from the middle.

This was a nearly perfect Wavelet Shield!

“Come on! Shatter it! Let me have a deeper understanding of what true power is!”

Shi Xiaobai placed the shield in front of him and suddenly roared at Xiang Wu!

His voice made the rowdy rookies gradually quietened down.

Upon hearing this, Xiang Wu gave a knowing smile and took a step forward. He raised his right hand, and forming his hands into the shape of a blade, he slashed forwards!

His hand blade slashed out a white blade beam, shooting out with a flash, and struck the Wavelet Shield in front of Shi Xiaobai in a straight line!

The blade beam disappeared into the concentric ripples like a rock dropping into a lake. With a “Pu” sound, it vanished.

But in the next second, the shield became two halves. It did not crack open or fracture, but just naturally split into two. It was like a tiny sharp blade sliding through a thin piece of paper, producing a smooth cut instantly.

Shi Xiaobai stared in a daze at the Wavelet Shield that shattered only after splitting into two. He felt the difference between his strength and Xiang Wu, and gradually, a smile suffused on his face. A hot beam of light flashed in his eyes!

“This is the power I desire!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai finally managed to grasp the realistic feeling of what he desired. He also understood how much he would be willing to pay for it.

“The strength of offensive skills, defensive skills and movement techniques is determined not only by Psionic Ability control or the

familiarity in the skill. How much Psionic Power that can be used is the key.”

Xiang Wu sighed, “Tu Dahei, your Psionic Ability control has already surpassed mine. Your familiarity with Wavelet Shield is something that far surpasses mine, but you are only at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, while I’m at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. The strength of our Psionic Power is not on the same level. This is the main reason why I can use Psionic Slash to split your shield into two.”

“Tu Dahei, if your Psionic Ability realm was the same as mine, you would have been the victor.”

After a deep bow from Xiang Wu, he turned to return to his seat. That was his corner where he was at ease. No one disturbed him there. Although it was a bit lonely, he was free.

Shi Xiaobai looked at Xiang Wu’s back and clenched his fist tightly. He turned to Hisith and said with a deep voice, “Next!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had endless desire for even stronger power. His blood was boiling and his heart was palpitating intensely. Even his breathing produced hot air.

“No, no, no. The game is over!”

Hisith gave a sinister smile. “My beloved little toy, this game’s completion criteria is ‘destruction before establishment’. You have

already done it, so this game is over. You won with a perfect outcome!”

Hisith’s declaration that the game had ended exceeded everyone’s expectations, but it was also understandable.

“Tu Dahei, well done!”

It was unknown who suddenly shouted, but suddenly, applause, like a torrential downpour, befell onto the classroom.

Applause, cheers, whistles, screams...filled the entire classroom.

“This sort of ending sure isn’t too bad!”

Although Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat regretful that he could not continue helping the other rookies “spar”, seeing everyone cheer for his “victory” made him suddenly feel that such an outcome wasn’t too bad.

Just as Shi Xiaobai had agreed to this outcome, everyone’s voices disappeared suddenly. Everyone’s motions halted, as though everything had frozen.

Then, a fiery voice resounded in his mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The black text that had not appeared in a while slowly materialized in front of him.

[Choice 1: Ask Hisith for his underwear. Must be done within a minute.]

[Choice 2: Ask Hisith for a first kiss. Must be done within a minute.]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “mischief-style choice” where only the choice needs to be performed. No reward.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

Translator’s Note: The familiarity of any skill that has been revealed up to now are from weakest to strongest:

1. **G**rasped Basics
2. **F**amiliarized Proficiency
3. **E**xemplary Mastery

Note that for ease of remembering, I have named them in a way that the first letter ranks the skill in descending order. G < F < E... The rest will be revealed soon.

Chapter 38: Quick Hand Over Your Underwear

The din carried on as numerous rookies began leaping in joy. After all, most rookies were at the first or second level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. When it came to Shi Xiaobai's Wavelet Shield, only those rookies at or above the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm could be sure that they could shatter it. So now that Shi Xiaobai had won Hisith's game, many people heaved a sigh of relief.

Chen Lingcun also heaved a sigh of relief, but at the same time, he felt a strange sense of foreboding. In his opinion, the entire matter seemed to have many suspicious holes in it. For the game to end so suddenly made these holes seem even more suspicious.

“If Hisith's true motive is to force Shi Xiaobai to grow stronger, then Shi Xiaobai should be rather important in his eyes. He shouldn't be a toy that Hisith will discard wantonly, so wouldn't using a method such as ‘Body Incineration Curse’ make him look too eager for success? How did Hisith have such confidence?”

“Shi Xiaobai managed to complete ‘destruction before establishment’ after four rounds of ‘destruction’. Does such unprecedented perception truly exist? Or is there a hidden truth? Hisith seemed to believe that Shi Xiaobai could complete ‘destruction before establishment’ given 72 opportunities, but even four times was beyond his expectations. Then why didn't he carry on probing further? Instead he stopped, and ended the game?”

“The series of actions Hisith did clearly isn’t to help Shi Xiaobai grow stronger. There should be a hidden motive. It seems Hisith has seen something in Shi Xiaobai that has interested him. He wants to understand it deeper, preventing it from hiding, so he was trying incessantly to force it out.”

“If Hisith really has a deeper motive, then why did he stop? Is it because he is full from the side dishes and wants to leave the main dish for later? Or does he think that it’s no longer suitable to carry on forcing it?”

Chen Lingcun bit at his thumbnail, question after question flashing in his mind. Maybe he was overthinking it, but he kept having a nagging feeling that things were not so simple. Hisith did not like perfect endings. The game he prepared for Shi Xiaobai should not be that simple.

However, Shi Xiaobai had finally managed to survive it all. In less than hour, not only had he opened up a psionic sacred meridian, his Psionic Ability control had reached ‘Familiarized Proficiency’. His defensive skill, Wavelet Shield’s proficiency level reached ‘Grasped Basics’. This was something others took years to achieve!

Chen Lingcun was truly happy for Shi Xiaobai. He, who was always a restrained person, could not help but cheer along with everyone else. He could not conceal the smile on his face, as he laughed like a child.

Suddenly, he saw Shi Xiaobai turn towards Hisith and seemingly said something. Chen Lingcun involuntarily closed his mouth.

Everyone noticed something abnormal had happened as they all closed their mouths and pricked up their ears.

Was this bumpkin going to give a game completion speech?

“Hehe, Underworld King Hisith, This King can smell the aura of an Evil Cursed God from your body. Do you know that you are now in grave danger?” Shi Xiaobai said as he took a whiff around Hisith’s body.

When everyone heard this, they felt at a loss. Hisith was in grave danger? What sort of worldly joke is that!

Hisith was also momentarily stunned. He did not feel irritated by Shi Xiaobai’s “interesting” actions, so he smiled and said, “Oh? What danger?”

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and held it in for a moment.

“Through a space-time medium, Evil God Ssabis placed a hex on an item on your body, in the scheming hope that through contact with your skin, the hex will penetrate your body. If you do not throw this item quickly, you will suffer the pain of this Evil God’s hex. You will be doomed for all eternity!”

Shi Xiaobai deliberately lowered his voice as if he were telling ghost stories at a campfire. His serious demeanor seemed to emphasize that what he said was true, and then he sternly said,

“But don’t worry. This King possess the Elf King’s bloodline, and with the purest energy in this world, will be able to cleanse off every foul object. So, you must quickly give that cursed item to This King. This King will do his best to save you!”

“What item is it?” Hisith said with a smile, but there was no emotion in it.

Everyone pricked their ears even more. This bumpkin sure liked to exaggerate. Wasn’t it just getting something from Hisith? What did he want from Hisith?

“Underwear!”

Shi Xiaobai answered with dead sobriety, as he pointed his fingers at Hisith’s pants!

Everyone stared with widened eyes.

Shi Xiaobai knitted his eyebrows together and while still pointing at Hisith’s pants, he bellowed, “Hurry up and give your underwear to This King! The Seed of the Evil God’s aura is already emanating, his hex will soon cross the boundary of space and time, and descend onto your body. If that hex were to mix with your blood, This King will be helpless!”

“Hurry, hurry up and hand over your underwear!”

Shi Xiaobai’s face looked extremely anxious. His terrified look

made it as though something terrible would happen immediately.

The classroom fell into silence as a strange heavy atmosphere fell onto the classroom. Hisith's smile stiffened, and slowly disappeared. A cold aura began emanating from his body, and from afar, it looked like his body was at freezing point, as though he was frozen.

All the rookies in the classroom were dumbfounded by Shi Xiaobai's actions!

Wasn't underwear the most taboo of topics for Instructor Hisith?

Heavens, this bumpkin is doing it on purpose, right?

...

...

"Content of choice completed. Absolute Choice finished."

The fiery voice rang in his head as Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief. When he received the Absolute Choice, he had resisted performing the choice three times, and after a minute, he caused time to flow backwards. Finally, Shi Xiaobai could only resign himself to destiny.

Compared to asking Hisith for a first kiss, Shi Xiaobai felt that

asking for his underwear was relatively acceptable.

Thankfully this Absolute Choice was an execution type choice. He just needed to ask Hisith for his underwear, regardless of him succeeding or not. The Absolute Choice was completed when Shi Xiaobai said “hand over your underwear” loudly.

Shi Xiaobai deeply detested the “mischief-style choice”. It was fine if the choice’s content was odd, but there was no reward!

“Days without rewards is insufferable for This King!”

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart, but suddenly he realized that the classroom had fallen into a strange silence. A cold aura seemed to creep up to him as he couldn’t help but raise his head.

He saw Hisith’s face cold. His narrowed eyes were filled with killing intent as though he was looking at a fish that was about to die.

“This K...I was just making a joke...”

Shi Xiaobai felt a sense of trepidation suffuse from his heart. When he tried retreating, he realized he could not move at all.

“Joke? Heh heh, then let me play a joke with you.”

Hisith’s cold voice squeezed out from his mouth. As he spoke, he

waved his hand, and a black barrier burst out with him in the middle of it. It enveloped the entire platform, with only himself and Shi Xiaobai in it.

Light could only diffuse into the black barrier, so it turned extremely dark.

“In this sealed domain, we can see outside, but people outside can’t see us. So, you do not need to worry that others will disturb us. Oh, by the way, your screams will not leave this domain. Heh heh~”

Hisith sneered as his right hand flipped. Four poker cards appeared out of thin air in the middle of his fingers.

“My poker cards’ suit, ‘Clubs’ happen to have the power of hexes. Now it is my turn to play a tiny joke on you.”

Shi Xiaobai was beyond tears as he cursed in his heart how this perverse guy did not have a sense of humor.

Hisith chose one of the four poker cards and said, “The hex in this Seven of Clubs can make the target experience the pain of ten thousand snake bites. Don’t worry, although it’s a bit painful, you will not die. So enjoy it well, my playful toy!”

Hisith gave a wicked smile as he threw out the Underworld Poker from his hand, making it fly straight at Shi Xiaobai.

The poker card did not seem to fly very fast, and was in fact very slow. However, with Shi Xiaobai's body being restrained by an unknown force, he could not move at all. He could only watch helplessly as the poker card approached him...

“Sigh.”

Suddenly, a sigh sounded, and at the same moment, a figure appeared out of thin air, in front of Shi Xiaobai. The finger reached out two fingers and caught Hisith's poker card.

“You are finally willing to appear?”

Hisith looked at the figure in front of Shi Xiaobai as his eyes narrowed. He sneered, “But I never expected that it was you.”

Author's Note: Triggering a hidden plot!

Chapter 39: That Poker Card

“I never expected it was you, One-Pun.”

Hisith smiled coldly with a tinge of disbelief.

The figure that suddenly appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai wore a white cape over a yellow tight-suit. His facial features were soft, and the top of his head was smooth, there was not a single strand of hair. It was the Hero, Baldy One-Pun, who had previously saved Shi Xiaobai from the hands of Sahadun!

After pinching the poker card, One-Pun gently threw it back into Hisith's hand. He sighed as he said, “You have been making things difficult for this child, wasn't it just to force me out? Now, are you satisfied?”

Hisith fell silent for a moment, but did not answer One-Pun. Instead, he asked, “Since you are the person who appeared, were you the one who cast a ‘Realm Seal’ on this little toy?”

One-Pun did not answer. He turned to take a glance at Shi Xiaobai who had a lingering fear. He suddenly took a step forward, and a black barrier emanated out from his body, enclosing Hisith and himself within. This black barrier was enclosed by Hisith's barrier, so there was a barrier within a barrier.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt that intangible suppressive feeling disappear. His body regained its freedom.

“This King just heard the word ‘Seal’. Do they already know that This King was sealed by the Evil Gods of the various worlds?”

Shi Xiaobai felt curious, but he quickly ignored his curiosity. He studied his surroundings and realized he was in the middle of two barriers. The black barrier was like a special glass that allowed him to see outside, but people on the outside could not see in.

Shi Xiaobai could see the rookies outside the bigger barrier talking, and was also able to hear their noisy discussion, but he could not see or hear One-Pun and Hisith inside the smaller barrier. Hisith’s barrier isolated the three of them from the rookies, while One-Pun’s barrier isolated Shi Xiaobai from the two of them.

Shi Xiaobai attempted punching the black shield but felt like he was smashing into steel. Having felt the pain, he could only depressingly give up his struggle. Out of boredom, he sat on the steel tiles on the ground, and began producing Psionic Power. He began controlling the Psionic Power’s shape.

“This King will definitely produce a castle!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes burned with intense fighting spirit!

...

...

The reason why One-Pun enclosed himself with Hisith in the small barrier was naturally because he did not want Shi Xiaobai to hear the conversation they would be having.

“The ‘Realm Seal’ was set up by me, so as to protect him.” One-Pun calmly answered Hisith’s question.

“Heh heh, I understand. That naughty little toy took just ten days to go from an ordinary mortal to the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Such cultivation speed already overturns humanity’s understanding. It would be difficult not to attract the attention of others. To protect him, you sealed his cultivation realm to the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. That is indeed the best method.”

Hisith threw up his hand and said, “Although I’m similarly curious as to what sort of Cogitation method he used to achieve such a crazy cultivation speed, but the ‘interest’ he gives me far exceeds my curiosity. That’s why I did not disturb your plan, and just helped him slightly so that he can grow faster.”

One-Pun coldly said, “You tricked him in using ‘Body Incineration Curse’, and you call that slightly?”

Hisith frowned slightly and said, “You used ‘Divine Elf Water’ on him, so the flames of the ‘Body Incineration Curse’ naturally won’t burn him to death. Since he won’t die even if he fails, why not make the bet? From the outcome, you should thank me.”

One-Pun had a cold expression and did not say a word. If he ignored the process and just looked at the outcome, Hisith's method of accelerating growth through excessive means was indeed a success.

Hisith suddenly thought of something as he frowned, saying, "I thought that in this world, only Riko Minamiya will be treated specially by you. I never expected you to go through so much effort to set up a 'Realm Seal' on this little toy. You even wasted a drop of the sacred level item, 'Divine Elf Water'."

One-Pun fell silent as he said seriously, "According to the Elves' Pontifex Maximus' prophecy, the fourth Apocalypse will happen in the next forty years. When that happens, this child will become one of the hopes of all humanity. Since he is in [Gaia], we should be protecting him with all we got, so that he can mature smoothly."

"So that's the case. Since it has to do with the survival of humanity and world peace, it is understandable why you pay so much attention to him. Don't worry, he is now one of my beloved toys, so I will definitely protect him well."

Hisith smiled sinisterly. "However, a toy that maddens its owner has to be taught a good lesson. On this, I will not take a step back."

One-Pun said coldly, "Is your so-called lesson using a cruel hex like the 'Heart Devouring Snake Storm'? This child is only thirteen years old. He would not be able to withstand such a hex, and his mind might even collapse. You will be destroying him."

Hisith shrugged his shoulders and said, “What you said makes sense. I was a bit rash in my fit of anger. Since Seven of Clubs is too much, why not Three of Clubs?”

One-Pun shook his head and said, “Since I have appeared, I will not let you fool around. That child’s heart is simple. For his first day here, he probably doesn’t know about your taboos and definitely did not say that word deliberately. Since his act was purely unintentional, spare him, would you?”

“What if I say no?” Hisith’s eyes turned cold as a chilling aura emanated from his body. Inside the barrier, it became a world of ice and snow.

“I will stop you.” One-Pun slowly pulled out the blade from the scabbard by his waist. The blade’s edge revealed a cold luster.

“Then I’ll see you try!” Hisith roared out coldly. Inside the barrier, with a “Pu” sound, hundreds of poker cards appeared, hovering in mid air. It filled the entire barrier, surrounding One-Pun completely.

One-Pun sighed and unsheathed his blade. As he held it in his hand, his stance caused his white cape to flutter high up. The dull and lifeless eyes turned sharp, emitting a cold beam.

The numerous poker cards hovering mid air was about to move, while One-Pun’s blade seemed like it would slash forwards.

“Ding! Ding! Ding!”

Suddenly, an alerting sound spontaneously chimed from their bodies. One-Pun and Hisith raised their right arms immediately and looked at something that looked like a watch. At the same time, their expressions changed.

“An A Class calamity!?”

“Meteor shower!?”

The two of them shouted two different things, but it seemed like they were referring to the same thing. They raised their heads and glanced at each other. A wry smile appeared between the two of them.

“It looks like we do not have time for this.”

Hisith shrugged his shoulders as all the poker cards immediately disappeared. He said, “The A Class meteor shower calamity will take three hours to hit Southern Gold City. As S Class Heroes, we have to be there. We can still barely make it in time if we rush there now.”

One-Pun nodded and sheathed his blade. At the same time, he removed the black barrier and after hesitating, he said, “You go first.”

Hisith fell silent for a moment and took at a glance at Shi Xiaobai,

who was squatting on the ground, attempting to produce a castle. He had a look of indignation in his eyes, but with a wave of his hand, he removed the black barrier he set up. Following that, he rushed out of the door with a speed like the wind, disappearing from sight.

With the barriers removed, the rookies were surprised to see One-Pun's figure. They immediately screamed.

“His Excellency, One-Pun!?”

“Holy shit, isn't this that...invincible One-Pun?”

“Heavens, I actually got to see my idol with my own eyes!”

“One of the three powerhouses of Gaia, ranked alongside Hisith, an S Class Hero! It's said that no one dares fight him!”

“I entered Gaia so that I could one day be able to meet His Excellency One-Pun. I never expected my dream to be realized so soon!”

“...”

When One-Pun heard those flattering words, his face went dull. After he stood there for a few minutes in silence, confirming that Hisith did not return, he nodded at the seated rookies. With a wave of his hand, he bade farewell, and rushed out the door at an extremely fast speed. Just like Hisith, he disappeared from

everyone's vision.

Everyone was stunned as they began to engage in conversation, discussing what had happened vividly.

“This King succeeded!”

Suddenly, a pleasant yelp sounded from the platform, instantly attracting everyone's attention. They saw the squatting Shi Xiaobai suddenly stand up. He turned to look at everyone, and in his hands, there was a pure white object. Looking carefully, it was an exquisite-looking castle.

“This King's castle, completed!” Shi Xiaobai's bright smile shimmered like the stars.

Everyone was dumbfounded. How the f*ck did he do that?

That's not right, why are you so f*cking calm, sitting there playing with yourself?

At this moment, a poker card fell from the top of the building. It gently landed on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder.

Chapter 40: Why Are You Dealing Your Cards So Erratically!?

After One-Pun ran out of the room, he encountered someone blocking his path moments after he ran through Steel City.

“Hisith?”

One-Pun stopped in front of Hisith, and was surprised that Hisith, who had left several minutes earlier than him, was standing there. He immediately wanted to ask why Hisith had stopped, but suddenly realized something. His expression changed as he wanted to run back.

“It’s too late.” Hisith spoke softly.

Upon hearing this, One-Pun stopped and sighed heavily, “Why do you go to such ends?”

Hisith gave a sinister smile and said, “No one can stop me from the things I want to do. I know that your second Superpower, ‘God’s Guardian’ allows you to instantly teleport to the protectee. Although I do not know the condition or price of using it, the limitation and weakness is very obvious—your ‘God’s Guardian’ definitely has a time restriction!”

“You used ‘God’s Guardian’ once just now, so it’s unlikely you can use it again. As for my poker card, it has already landed. Regardless of how fast your movement technique is, it will be too

late.”

One-Pun remained silent, Hisith was mostly right. He did not have the ability to prevent whatever Hisith left behind.

“Don’t worry, it’s just a Three of Clubs hex. It will let that naughty little toy endure a little bit of pain, and teach him to remember. It won’t give him an insufferable existence. Too much protection won’t do. Suffering is the mother of growth.”

Hisith said with a happy expression before he turned around. “‘Meteor storm’ is an A Class calamity. Getting there earlier might save a cute toy or two.”

“You just want to search for more souls.”

One-Pun sighed, and with a struggling expression, he eventually followed Hisith.

...

...

The poker card that suddenly fell from the ceiling onto Shi Xiaobai’s shoulder melted into his body instantaneously. A phantom Three of Clubs image bloomed behind Shi Xiaobai, with dozens of shadowy wraiths appearing mid air. They immediately surged into Shi Xiaobai’s body.

“Ah!”

As pain instantly swamped his senses, Shi Xiaobai immediately shouted in pain. As his mind was consumed by pain, the shadowy figures that entered his bodies wrecked havoc in his body, as if every bone of his was being suppressed, and every inch of his skin was being pricked by a needle, while every nerve was being torn apart.

“Dahei!”

Lingcun shouted in alarm as he charged to the platform, while everyone watched blankly with bewilderment. Ye Jiaquan’s muscular body also followed closely behind.

“Stop, human.”

Suddenly a cold, lacerating voice sounded from the door. Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan stopped abruptly and turned their heads towards the door. There, they saw a ‘person’ covered in layers of white bandages. That ‘person’ looked extremely similar in shape when compared to humans, but the flesh that it revealed was purplish-red, and behind his back was a giant pair of bat wings.

Just that ‘person’ standing there made people shudder with fear.

“Calamity fiend!?”

“No, he’s one of the seven servants of Instructor Hisith, the bat, Mos.”

“Instructor Hisith’s Diamond suit can summon calamity fiends. Apparently this Mos, is the Nine of Diamonds.”

“What does Instructor Hisith want, having used the Three of Clubs hex on Tu Dahei and then summoning his Nine of Diamonds calamity fiend servant?

“ ... ”

Hisith was one of the few S Class Heroes in China. There was a lot of information regarding him on the Internet. After the rookies knew that their instructor was Hisith, they immediately found the information and learned them by heart. At this moment, when they saw the calamity fiend in bandages and bat wings, they immediately figured that it was Hisith’s poker card servant, Mos.

Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan also identified Mos’ identity. They were locked on by Mos’ killing intent and as intangible fear enveloped them, they felt their bodies turn extremely stiff. Cold sweat covered their backs as they did not dare make a single move.

“Go back.” Mos barked coldly at the two of them. Immediately, he flapped his wings and flew to the platform. In moments, he landed beside Shi Xiaobai who was scrunched up on the floor in pain. He looked coldly at the tiny figure trembling and struggling below him.

Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan's eyes betrayed their internal struggle, but they knew that they were helpless against the calamity fiend, Mos, who they knew was a murderous beast. They gave Shi Xiaobai a deep and meaningful glance before returning to their seats, hearts filled with indignation.

"Instructor Hisith thinks highly of Dahei. It should be fine." Lingcun comforted Ye Jiaquan, but his facial expression was still extremely heavy. Although he did not need to worry about Shi Xiaobai's life, it was likely that Shi Xiaobai would suffer intense pain.

A cold aura emitted from Mos' back. Everyone could not repress the fear from seeing this. Instantly, there was silence. Only Shi Xiaobai's tragic cries were left resounding in the classroom. Those who heard his screams felt like they could experience the pain he was going through.

Mos' eyes were cold and emotionless, and naturally he had no sense of pity in his heart. He only watched quietly at the human in front of him who was scrunched up on the ground, squirming in pain.

The people found it unbearable, but they were helpless. They were powerless against Mos. Even if they could resist him, the suffering Tu Dahei did not have deep ties with them. No one would do anything substantial for another rookie they didn't even really know.

After an unknown period of time, a shadowy figure flew out of Shi Xiaobai's body, disappearing into thin air. After that, one

shadow after another left Shi Xiaobai's body. Slowly, Shi Xiaobai's screaming came to a stop. His twisted body also slowly calmed down. His eyes were tightly shut, as if he had gone unconscious.

At this moment, Mos drew out a poker card from his underarm and threw it at Shi Xiaobai. A Three of Hearts poker card phantom image immediately floated above Shi Xiaobai's body. As the pink sparkles fell on him, bathing his fatigued body, Shi Xiaobai began to murmur.

Another Underworld Poker? What was Instructor Hisith planning on doing?

Everyone was confused. Why was Instructor Hisith torturing Tu Dahei again and again, then exorbitantly spending a Hearts-faced poker card to cure him. Why was he doing this?

“Master says that the game shall continue.” A hoarse voice came out of Mos' mouth.

Everyone was momentarily stunned and could not come round to immediately. They saw Mos suddenly take out a small notebook from his underarm, which was apparently the small notebook Hisith previously used to call out names.

Mos coldly flipped the notebook to its fifth page and read out the name.

“Next, Song Xiao.”

So it was referring to the game that targeted Tu Dahei from before!

All the rookies were enlightened as they turned their heads to look at a youth with long hair. That youth's name was Song Xiao, the strongest person in Team Red. He was at the peak of the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. In this batch of [Annihilation] rookies, he was only slightly weaker than Wang Lin who was at the fourth level.

Tu Dahei's Psionic Shield could not even withstand Xiang Wu's attack, much less Song Xiao who was stronger than Xiang Wu. Was Instructor Hisith trying to make Tu Dahei have a taste of failure again?

"Hisith probably knows Shi Xiaobai is not only unafraid of failure, and is a genius who grows faster the more he fails. He is clearly doing this to help Shi Xiaobai grow, but Shi Xiaobai touched on Hisith's taboo topic, so why is he doing something that can help Shi Xiaobai?"

Lingcun instantly noticed that something did not make sense. For some reason, he felt a sense of foreboding.

...

...

After experiencing the torture of the Three of Clubs, Shi Xiaobai fainted from the pain. When he was healed by the Three of Hearts, his fatigue and pain quickly disappeared. Soon he awoke, catching Mos' words.

“The game continues?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned as he slowly got up. He felt delighted instead of feeling worried. Just as Lingcun thought, he was a person who was never feared failure.

“Back when This King played League of Legends, to climb from the ranks of Bronze to Platinum, more than a hundred ordinary matches needed to be played before succeeding. Just having rose to Platinum V, the strength of the strongest was already obtained! It's just failure, so why would This King fear it!?”

Shi Xiaobai quickly put the painful experience he felt behind him. His eyes were filled with anticipation as he looked forward to being defeated, and from that become stronger, to possess true strength.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Suddenly, a fiery voice resounded in his mind. Everything in front of his eyes, as well as his body, froze. Time came to a standstill at that very moment.

“Again!?” Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded.

The black text appeared as usual, gradually materializing in front of his eyes.

[Choice 1: In one hour, earn 100,000 China currency. The criteria of the 'earnings' has to be cash (Reward: D-level)]

[Choice 2: In one hour, collect 100 people's autographs (Reward: F-level)]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice's mission will yield a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

Chapter 41: At That Moment, He Crumbled!

Song Xiao was not a genius, but he worked harder than anyone else; hence, at his present age of twenty, his Psionic Ability realm had reached the peak of the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. However, compared to peers his own age, he was considered average.

He had lived in the shadows of geniuses since he was young. His parents would constantly use a random neighbor or relative to compare with him, and everytime, it ended up with a despairing outcome. They would nag at him, and even beat or scold him.

And when he was schooling, the cute girls always circled the geniuses with Psy-genes. Delinquent upperclassmen would often stop him at an alley, and after a round of derision and abuse, they would rob him of all his allowance.

Song Xiao believed that he was destined to lead a life full of hardship under the shadows of geniuses and the strong, until he grasped a fleeting opportunity.

He had drugged a friend, who had received a recommendation ticket, and ruthlessly chopped his friend's hands off, making him lose his opportunity. Then he personally sent his girlfriend to the bed of an ugly member of the upper echelons, allowing him to finally obtain a recommendation to become a [Gaia] rookie, one he had always dreamed of!

Later on, he managed to pass the Rookie Evaluation Test, but his

final evaluation was a pathetic E Class, but bliss had finally arrived. Song Xiao even believed that he had entered Heaven!

This Heaven-like place was the rookie training ground. The people here were all a bunch of kids below the age of twenty! Then, with him at the peak of the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, his strength allowed him to rank second amongst all these kids! In the team he was allocated to by Hisith, his strength was ranked first!

Although the title of captain for Team Red had been taken by a freak genius, Shi Xiaobai, that kid actually played truant. Song Xiao immediately believed that Shi Xiaobai was afraid of the elimination mechanism, 'Protect the Captain'. He believed Shi Xiaobai was afraid of losing his dignity and had hidden himself cowardly.

Due to Shi Xiaobai missing classes, Team Red did not have a leader, as such, Song Xiao did not let down this God-given opportunity. As the strongest person in Team Red, he began to gather cronies, such as the youth with dyed hair, Hua Pengju. Then, they used force to intimidate timid rookies into joining their group, in an attempt to become Team Red's true leader.

Han Feng's rebellion and the three Xiang brothers' obstinate temper made Song Xiao's plan suffer, but he soon came up with a new plan. As a partner, he invited Han Feng to vote the three Xiang brothers with him, and on this, Han Feng shared the same stance as him.

In fact, the reason why Song Xiao agreed to eliminate the three

Xiang brothers first was because of his bullying, one person from Han Feng's faction chose to mutiny, hence, his voting strength was actually stronger than Han Feng's. As long as he eliminated the unstable elements—the three Xiang brothers—first, he could freely let the traitor be exposed. He could then erode off Han Feng's faction, and become Team Red's true 'Captain'!

His plan was very perfect, and just as he thought it was going to succeed, Tu Dahei appeared!

This bumpkin, who only spouted stupid nonsense, had completely disrupted his plans. The scenario should have been Team Red losing to Team Blue in the third competition, then the traitor in Han Feng's faction would suddenly make his betrayal and eliminate one person from Han Feng's faction. When that happened, he was destined to be the final victor.

However, Tu Dahei's appearance not only increased Han Feng's faction by one person, Instructor Hisith's game had also changed.

72 people were to take turns to attack Tu Dahei's Psionic Shield, and those who failed to shatter it were eliminated. What the f*ck did that mean? Did this mean his plan was going to be delayed, or that there might even be unforeseen events!?

Song Xiao was furious, wishing he could give Tu Dahei a brutal beating. So when Hisith announced Hua Pengju's name, he immediately ordered Hua Pengju to humiliate Tu Dahei thoroughly. Hua Pengju did not disappoint him. His punch that bordered on a sneak attack caused Tu Dahei to spit out blood. The various invectives hurled at Tu Dahei pleased Song Xiao greatly.

He enjoyed the pleasure of humiliating the weak.

What followed next made Song Xiao extremely angry.

The bumpkin had managed to complete “destruction before establishment” after four attempts, and even achieved an epiphany with the E Class defensive skill, Wavelet Shield. This talent and perception was something Song Xiao never possessed. It was something he couldn’t obtain no matter how much he desired it; it was always his greatest desire, and also what he hated the most!

At that instant, his eyes made Tu Dahei’s figure overlap with those geniuses who had previously repressed him. In a breathless state, Song Xiao began to form a deep hatred for Tu Dahei, and even began to suspect that Tu Dahei was Shi Xiaobai. Hence, he piled the hatred for Shi Xiaobai—having the position of Captain taken away from him—onto Tu Dahei as well.

Song Xiao was jealous, angry and hateful. He frantically wished he could trample on Tu Dahei’s dignity himself. He wanted to stomp on him, and use the most vicious invectives to deride him, so as to comfort his indignant soul.

However, what disappointed him was Hisith’s announcement that the game had ended. It made him lose his chance.

But a situation that delighted him appeared. That bumpkin actually courted death by asking Hisith for his underwear!

At that moment, he felt like he could see the scene of Tu Dahei being tormented by Hisith, in a state worse than death. However, reality played a cruel joke on him once again. The mysterious One-Pun suddenly appeared, and seemed to save Tu Dahei.

What did this bumpkin do to deserve this? He was clearly dumber than anyone, and he looked like a fool, so why did he have such monstrous talent? Why did he receive what seemed like torture from Hisith, but was actually a form of tempering? Why could he get His Excellency, One-Pun to protect him?

Based on what? Why was such a lucky person not him, Song Xiao?

Why was it that from the moment he was born, he would lament over his darkness, overshadowed by the hallowed geniuses? Why did he get swallowed by the darkness of jealousy, consumed by the flames of hate?

Song Xiao had completely lost his mind, roaring constantly in his heart. He looked hatefully at the thin figure on the platform. Seeing that exquisite white castle, he told himself that he wanted to destroy everything, he had to destroy Tu Dahei!

The Heavens seemed to hear his innermost desire. When the cursed poker card fell onto Tu Dahei's body, Tu Dahei's soul-wrenching scream was like the most beautiful chimes from Heaven's bells. It made him feel like he had received the pleasure of an orgasm.

Following that, the bat, Mos came. He announced the continuation of the game, and even immediately mentioned his name.

When he heard from Mos' mouth read "Song Xiao", all the flames of hatred and anger rushed to his heart. His face melted into a cruel smile as he rushed onto the platform—unable to hold himself back—to stand in front of Tu Dahei.

That bumpkin seemed to be somewhat distracted, which immediately made Song Xiao even angrier. He sneered, "You think you are a genius? No, you are only a weakling, do you understand? With you being only at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, you are a pathetic weakling, trash that I can trample on easily!"

Song Xiao cursed, immediately feeling pleasure in his heart. Seeing the bumpkin frown made him even happier. Just as he wanted to carry on insulting the bumpkin, he saw the bumpkin prop up a Wavelet Shield.

The Wavelet Shield seemed to be much thicker than previously. The wavelets on the shield also seemed to undulate at a higher frequency. Song Xiao even had the impression that the shield looked very, very hard.

"It must be an illusion!"

With this thought in mind, Song Xiao heard Tu Dahei's voice. "Come on, shatter This King's shield!"

His anger reached its boiling point at that very moment!

“Not only will I shatter your shield, I will also shatter your dignity, and even shatter your life and future!”

Song Xiao roared in his heart, and using all his strength, along with the strength of a terrifying Psionic Blast, he punched the Wavelet Shield!

“Boom!”

A huge explosion sounded, as Song Xiao felt joy. He wanted to cast his glance towards the shattered shield he destroyed, as well as the gloomy expression of Tu Dahei after he experienced failure.

Song Xiao’s pupils suddenly constricted as he realized that the Wavelet Shield he punched at remained intact. There was not a single crack, nor did it produce a single wave!

“Impossible!!!”

Song Xiao lost his mind immediately as he suddenly punched again. An explosive sound echoed again, but the Wavelet Shield remained intact. The concentric wavelets kept undulating, as if they were mocking his useless fist.

“Ah! Ah! Ah!”

“Impossible! Impossible! Impossible!”

Song Xiao bawled as he kept waving his fists, using all his strength to hit the Wavelet Shield that did not produce a crack at all. The more he felt despair, the more angry, hateful and crazy he became!

“Heh heh.”

A sneer sounded as Mos lifted his leg to kick Song Xiao in the stomach. Song Xiao immediately flew out and after flipping several times, he crashed into the steel floor, spitting out a mouthful of hot blood.

However, Song Xiao immediately struggled to stand up again. His red eyes looked at the frail figure, as well as the still undulating wavelets. It looked like a perfect shield.

He had failed to shatter it. This didn't make sense!

Suddenly, Song Xiao noticed something and was completely stunned. Tu Dahei's Psionic Power was supposed to be at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but why was his Ripple Shield's thickness like that from the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm? Could it be that Tu Dahei had already reached the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!?

What the hell was going on?

“Song Xiao, eliminated.” Suddenly, Mos’ hoarse voice rang out heartlessly.

Song Xiao was stunned and immediately recalled Hisith’s rule—those who failed to break Tu Dahei’s shield were to be eliminated!

If he were to be eliminated from the rookie lineup, it meant he would lose everything. He had betrayed his friend and girlfriend. Everything he had gained in exchange for his soul and morals would be completely lost!

He was no longer the Song Xiao that could act unbridled in Team Red. He would have to return to cruel society. He was just a Psionite with mediocre natural endowment. He had no status in life or power. He would endure endless mockery and contemptuous looks, leading a miserable and sad life.

“No, I don’t want that!”

Song Xiao screamed, but immediately felt his scream choke on him. He turned silent because Mos’ killing aura had locked onto him. Song Xiao was sure that if he carried on wailing, that inhumane calamity fiend would mercilessly cut his head off. This was because he was no longer [Gaia]’s rookie; he was just an ordinary person without the slightest importance.

Song Xiao, who realized the harsh reality, forcefully repressed the indignation in himself. He used the vilest gaze to look at the figure on stage.

“Sigh.”

A heavy sigh suddenly came out of that bumpkin’s mouth, as he heard Tu Dahei say sulkily, “You kept saying those tough words, making This King think that you were very strong, but it ends up that you are so weak. You are so weak that you can’t even break This King’s shield!”

“Forget it, forget it. Since you want the title of the weakest so much, This King shall not contend with you for it. This King shall announce that from this very moment, the person with the title of weakest person is you!”

Although it was clear that there was a trace of pity on Tu Dahei’s expression, it was as though the pity was because he truly did not want to hand over the title of ‘weakest person’.

At that moment, Song Xiao’s heart crumbled!

Author’s Note: I hope everyone will like this chapter. Even if you don’t like it, don’t beat me!

Chapter 42: The Precursor Before One Person Takes All

When Song Xiao's explosive punch hit Shi Xiaobai's Wavelet Shield, but only caused it to slightly vibrate, with not a single crack, everyone was dumbfounded. They even forgot to breathe for a moment.

When Song Xiao frantically hit the shield but failed to shatter it, they could only gulp with great difficulty.

When Shi Xiaobai lamented about giving the title of "weakest person" to Song Xiao, the truth dawned on them. Everything was not a dream. The bumpkin in front of them was still that dumb bumpkin, while the extremely hard shield and the defeated Song Xiao was reality.

At this moment, everyone erupted into chaos!

"Song Xiao, who is ranked second in strength, has lost. This... This..."

"Holy shit, Song Xiao lost so badly. Don't tell me Tu Dahei has been posing as a pig all this while in order to eat a tiger!?"

"Heh heh, this Tu Dahei is clearly above or at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He has been concealing it all along."

“We were fooled by Song Xiao’s Psionic Ability realm. All he has is an F Class Psionic Blast. At the same realm, it’s natural he can’t shatter the E Class Wavelet Shield.”

“Eh, I was still suspecting that Tu Dahei is actually Shi Xiaobai. Now, it seems like I was overthinking it. No matter how powerful Shi Xiaobai is, it’s impossible he can reach the third level of the Psionic Mortal realm in ten days.”

“Why do I feel that Tu Dahei is actually a scheming bastard acting the fool. When Instructor Hisith was around, he was so weak, but once Instructor Hisith left, he immediately turned awesome! Did you hear his derision? The weakest person. Haha, I guess Song Xiao probably passed out from anger.”

“Scheming bastard+1!”

“Scheming bastard+10086!”

“Well, why do I think Tu Dahei isn’t faking it. Look at his expression, it’s as though he really thinks Song Xiao is very weak...”

“...”

The rookies erupted into a din, and used their words to vent their disbelieving emotions as well as the feeling of having been “duped”.

In a corner, Xiang Wu looked at Shi Xiaobai's Wavelet Shield that had thickened by several layers. His eyes were burning with fighting spirit. He knew that he too could not shatter that shield at this moment, but he still wanted to give it a go.

The strongest Wang Lin, who had short hair, remained silent as always. His expression was calm, but similarly, an undetectable fighting spirit flashed in his eyes.

Ye Jiaquan's face was filled with a honest and happy smile. He whispered, "Dahei, so strong! But Me still thinks Shi Xiaobai is stronger!"

Lingcun was the only person in the entire room that knew Tu Dahei was Shi Xiaobai. The shock he received was the greatest. Shi Xiaobai had actually managed to use ten days to go from an ordinary mortal to the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. This was already beyond common sense.

But with the emergence of this critical news, it made the messy speculation in Lingcun's mind turn clear. All his doubts received a critical explanation. The truth slowly unweaved itself in Lingcun's brain, emerging bit by bit.

"Since Shi Xiaobai possesses S Class Mind Expanse, to obtain such heaven-defying cultivation speed, it has to do with his heaven-defying Cogitation technique. If people with ulterior motives know of this matter, they would definitely covet Shi Xiaobai's Cogitation technique as well as do some unlawful act. In order to protect Shi Xiaobai, someone had set up a 'Realm Seal' on his body."

“Instructor Hisith must have seen through the ‘Realm Seal’, which was why he became so interested in Shi Xiaobai. There were likely two goals in the series of actions after this. One of them is to let Shi Xiaobai grow faster, and secondly, it is to force the person, who set up the ‘Realm Seal’, out from behind the scenes.”

“The person behind the scenes clearly was One-Pun, who appeared during the crisis just now. After One-Pun appeared, the two of them had to end their standoff due to some urgent matters. One-Pun waited for several minutes after Hisith left before he felt relieved to leave, but he did not expect Hisith to have left a contingency plan.”

“Hisith’s contingency plan had two motives. One of them looked like it was torturing Shi Xiaobai, but it was actually to release the seal on his body. And the second motive was to let the game continue. The two matters, when combined, actually only had one motive. He wanted to make the ‘Realm Seal’ set up by One-Pun be for nothing, allowing Shi Xiaobai to reveal his true strength in the game, exposing himself to risk.”

“Even if the upper echelons of [Gaia] have kept information of Shi Xiaobai confidential, it is impossible for it to be airtight. The news of Shi Xiaobai reaching the third level of the Psionic Mortal realm in ten days will definitely fall into the ears of others. In that case, Shi Xiaobai will be coveted by other organizations. Hisith has pushed Shi Xiaobai into the most dangerous of situations because of his anger.”

“No, Hisith’s intent is far from that. He forced Shi Xiaobai into

such a dangerous situation to force One-Pun to use ‘God’s Guardian’. With the function of the superpower, ‘God’s Guardian’ being so powerful, it must have numerous limitations and conditions, such as cooldown time, or a limitation like the number of times it can be used on the same target. Hisith was likely trying to expend One-Pun’s ‘God’s Guardian’ completely!”

“What terrifying intent, what a vicious heart! Shi Xiaobai can only try to maintain his fake identity as Tu Dahei, and reduce the dissemination of information. Finally, he will have to rely on the protection of [Gaia]. [Gaia]’s emphasis on Shi Xiaobai would likely move a step higher, and the protection would likely strengthen.”

“Sigh, Shi Xiaobai O’ Shi Xiaobai, you really exceed my expectations every time, but yet you are always so worrisome.”

Lingcun’s eyes flashed with a faint red glow as he heavily sighed. Immediately, he began to think of how he could help Shi Xiaobai pass any upcoming challenges.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not know that he was already at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, so when he said those words to Song Xiao, it was actually not mockery, but the truth. Previously, when his shield was easily shattered by four people consecutively, Shi Xiaobai could not help but consider himself very, very weak.

Yet when this youth with long hair smashed into shield so many times without even causing it to shake, it was like he was super weak!

However, when he heard the crowd's noisy conversation, Shi Xiaobai finally realized the truth. It was not because his opponent was too weak, but because he was too strong!

“Is This King really that strong?”

Shi Xiaobai still found it unbelievable. He hurriedly rushed to Song Xiao, who was on the ground, and asked him, “Weakest person, did you go easy? Or are you sick? Or is it because you really want the title of ‘weakest person’?”

When Song Xiao heard this, a sense of hate rushed to his head, causing him to immediately spit out a mouthful of blood and then pass out.

Shi Xiaobai, who did not receive an answer, was slightly disappointed. He began studying his Wavelet Shield and immediately realized that the amount of Psionic Power he had was a lot more than before. Furthermore, the obstructive feeling whenever he released his Psionic Power had disappeared. That obstructive feeling had nothing to do with Psionic Ability control, but it limited the amount of Psionic Power he could produce!

“Right, seal!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. He immediately recalled the word One-Pun and Hisith mentioned vaguely and was enlightened immediately.

“So that's the case. One of the 81 seals set by the Evil Gods of the various worlds on This King has been finally been dispelled! Wahaha, This King is no longer the weakest person. This King has finally taken the first step on his conquering path!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai, who thought that he had realized the truth, was in high-spirits. He had recovered all his confidence!

At this moment, Mos' cold voice sounded again, blanketing everyone's voice, causing the venue to turn silent.

“The game carries on. Next, Gao Song.”

Shi Xiaobai and everyone else were stunned before they recovered instantly. Hisith's game rules did not state that the game was over after one person was eliminated! Although Hisith had previously said that one toy would leave today, he did not clearly state that a person's elimination meant the end of the game.

Clearly, in Mos' point of view, the number of people eliminated was not something he cared for. This inhumane calamity fiend clearly would not accommodate the rookies. He would carry out the game rules to the end.

This game would not stop!

However, how could any of the rookies, other than Wang Lin, be capable of shattering it? It was a shield that even Song Xiao was helpless against!

Damn it, if this carried on, wouldn't Tu Dahei be eliminating all the remaining rookies?

Everyone immediately looked with pitiable eyes at Shi Xiaobai, who was on the platform, but all they saw was Shi Xiaobai rubbing his fists, as though he was full of anticipation.

Shi Xiaobai sensed the strange looks of everyone as he shouted, "Come on, This King will definitely not go easy!"

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai, who had been looked down with contempt as the weakest person, became the largest giant in the entire room!

That day would likely become an unforgettable tragic memory for [Annihilation].

Author's Note: This arc is finally coming to an end! But Shi Xiaobai's story has only just begun!

Chapter 43: Naagin's Devotees!

A depressed atmosphere brewed in the room. It came from the cold aura that came from Mos and from the burning fighting spirit in Shi Xiaobai's eyes.

This bumpkin was not going to go easy!

The rookies could not help but have this idea flash across their minds. Immediately, they felt like weeping but had no tears. With Instructor Hisith's status in [Gaia], he could basically do anything to rookies such as them. Even if the upper echelons tried their best to negotiate with Hisith, only those rookies with higher evaluations would be retained.

If nothing unexpected happened, a large number of people would be eliminated ruthlessly by Shi Xiaobai!

At this moment, the person named Gao Song, who was called out by Mos was one of those rookies in a precarious situation. His Psionic Ability realm was only at the first level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He was ranked in the bottom five amongst the rookies, so how could he shatter Shi Xiaobai's Wavelet Shield!?

"Gao Song!"

Mos impatient voice sounded once again. Cold killing intent emanated, causing many timid rookies to begin trembling.

“Here!”

The moment Mos finished his words, a slightly plump 12–13 year old boy stood up forcefully. His body was trembling and his facial expression looked uglier than crying.

Although Gao Song did not wish to be eliminated, he was more afraid of disobeying Mos, which would enrage Mos further. So he quickly stumbled onto the platform.

When Gao Song reached the platform, he saw Shi Xiaobai prop up a Wavelet Shield at him. The extremely hard looking shield had wavelets undulating, making Gao Song feel a deep sense of despair.

How was he going to shatter it!?

Gao Song’s expression, which looked like he was about to weep, was like a bullied lass’. That expression looked quite funny when placed on his rotund face, but the number of rookies, who laughed because of that, were few in number. All of them could not help but feel a sense of dread.

Sensing Mos’ cold stare, Gao Song did not dare hesitate. He knew that there was no way he could avoid the fate of elimination. He gritted his teeth immediately, hoping to give his all at the Wavelet Shield. Although he knew that nothing would happen even if he engaged in a fight to the end, he still had to “end” spectacularly!

“Wait!”

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's voice resounded. Gao Song was stupefied as he opened his eyes. He saw Shi Xiaobai place his right hand by his ear, as if he was listening to something.

“Shh!”

Shi Xiaobai placed his left hand's finger on his lips, gesturing for silence. In a listening pose, he constantly nodded. He kept producing murmuring strange sounds of “Oh”, “Ah”, “OK”, “Huh”. It was as though he saw an invisible person, who was speaking to him, and he was listening and conversing in response.

Everyone was stunned speechless, unsure of what Shi Xiaobai was doing. Gao Song could only stare at Shi Xiaobai in a daze. Mos' stare was cold, but it did not seem like he had any intention of stopping Shi Xiaobai.

Not long after, Shi Xiaobai dropped both his arms and raised his right hand's finger and pointed at Gao Song. “Youth, do you know that you are very lucky?”

Gao Song was stunned, having no idea what Shi Xiaobai meant.

He heard Shi Xiaobai say solemnly, “The God, Naagin1 used His divine powers to talk to This King through the distance of a thousand worlds. He told This King that you, a lucky boy, has the excellent potential to be His pious devotee!”

Gao Song still gave a blank look, but Shi Xiaobai suddenly sighed. “This King and the God, Naagin have deep ties of friendship, so I have to consider His feelings. It looks like I need to go easy on you, changing the fate of your elimination!”

Everyone could not help but roll their eyes when they heard this. What God Naagin, what devotee, can you make it any more ridiculous? Forget it, you are the best now, so do whatever you please!

When Gao Song heard this, he was overjoyed. He said with a trembling voice, “You, you will really go easy?”

This was like seeing a silver lining! But why did he keep feeling that things were not so simple?

Indeed, he saw Shi Xiaobai suddenly sneer, “But you need to become a pious devotee of God Naagin!”

Gao Song swallowed a mouthful of saliva and asked, “How do I become a devotee?”

Why did this conversation sound so much like a cult’s recruitment for followers?

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes sized up Gao Song, before stopping at the lower half of Gao Song’s body. He pointed at Gao Song’s trousers and said loudly, “Of course, you need to give your faith!”

When everyone heard Shi Xiaobai's words, they realized where Shi Xiaobai's eyes were aimed at. Immediately they felt a dark shade cloud over them. This bastard...

With a mournful face, Gao Song asked with tears nearly pouring out, "Und...Underwear?"

This underwear freak even dared to ask Instructor Hisith for his underwear, so how could he spare this little fatty? Gao Song immediately felt mixed feelings. His face turned red, wishing he could just close his eyes and tide this through.

"Of course it's not underwear!"

Shi Xiaobai sighed deeply and gave a look that seemed to think that Gao Song was an intractable person. He said, "Naagin, wants you to put up your money! Do you understand? Quick place your cash, oh, that's not the right choice of words... Hurry up and profess your faith!"

So it turned out Shi Xiaobai was not targeting the underwear but the cash in his trousers' pocket!

Gao Song was stunned. He never expected Shi Xiaobai to spout a bunch of "dumb nonsense" just to extort him for cash! What a joke. If spending money prevented elimination, he would agree to it a hundred times!

Seeing Gao Song in a daze and silent, Shi Xiaobai immediately

said coldly, “Quick hand over all your cash, or don’t blame This King for turning ruthless!”

“Elimination or cash, make your choice, youth!”

...

...

Shi Xiaobai was currently a bit nervous. When the ‘daily-style choice’ appeared, he realized that [Choice 1: In one hour, earn 100,000 China currency. The criteria of the ‘earning’ has to be cash] had a D level reward, while the other choice was an F level reward. Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before resolutely choosing the first option.

Although he only had one chance, and would receive a punishment of the same level if he failed, and that earning 100,000 China currency in an hour wasn’t easy, Shi Xiaobai...still chose the first choice. There was only one reason—instinct!

Alright, it was also because of the illusion that the D level reward gave him.

However, Shi Xiaobai firmly trusted his instinct and chose the first choice. And without disappointing himself, he quickly thought of a method to earn cash. And it was now the most crucial moment!

Would this boy, Gao Song, hand his cash over!? Would such cash be able to meet the condition of ‘earning’? All of these determined Shi Xiaobai’s success!

Shi Xiaobai held his breath!

Gao Song finally reacted and hurriedly took out his wallet from his pocket. He took out all the cash in his wallet and placed it in Shi Xiaobai’s hand, proclaiming loudly, “I want to be a devotee!”

“Earned 300 China currency. Still 99,700 short of completing the choice.”

The moment Shi Xiaobai received the cash, the familiar voice rang in his head. He was immediately satisfied and pointed to his shield. “Very good. God Naagin will protect you. Come and shatter it!”

Gao Song nodded crazily as he used all his strength to punch at the Wavelet Shield. The moment his fist touched it, the shield shattered.

The dazed audience was immediately at a loss whether to laugh or cry. This “dirty” transaction was completed in such a manner?

“Next, Hua Pengfei!”

Mos’ cold voice sounded at this moment. Everyone was shocked as they realized Mos had remained silent all this while. They

looked in surprise because the bat, Mos had a deadpan expression, but he did not plan on stopping Shi Xiaobai's misdeeds.

What was going on? Why wasn't Mos interfering with Tu Dahei's shameless cheating?

"The reason is very simple. Hisith's rules did not state that Shi Xiaobai can't go easy, and Mos is just going in accordance with the rules. Furthermore, as a calamity fiend, Mos' values are different from humans. Dahei's despicable act of extortion might instead be appreciated by Mos." Lingcun explained to Ye Jiaquan, as a faint cheerful smile hung on his face.

...

Hua Pengfei and Hua Pengju were brothers. At this moment, when Hua Pengfei heard his name, he immediately felt disturbed. He blamed his brother for acting "disrespectful" to Tu Dahei, and was wondering how he could "beg" for Tu Dahei's mercy.

After Hua Pengfei came in front of Shi Xiaobai, he immediately took out his wallet and said with eager eyes, "Can this little brother 'put up money' to become the God's devotee?"

Shi Xiaobai immediately sneered and said, "Don't think that This King doesn't know that you are associates with that Can't Get It Up [2](#)! That Can't Get It Up sneaked up on This King, so you are unlikely to be any better. The God Naagin only accepts kind devotees!"

Hua Pengfei was almost about to cry. He took out a wad of cash and pleaded, “Although this little brother only has 3000 cash, but this little brother can go draw more out. Name your price, this little brother will definitely not say a thing!”

Hua Pengju was ready to give everything to prevent elimination!

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily stunned as he silently calculated the difference between 3000 and 300.

“Sufficient faith can be exchanged for the God’s forgiveness. Whatever, This King shall forgive you!”

Shi Xiaobai beamed and pointed to the wad of cash and said loudly, “Then, hand your faith over!”

...

...

That day became a painful memory for Division [Annihilation]. Because of this day, a long-haired youth named Song Xiao was eliminated and forgotten.

But that day became an unforgettable memory for that batch of rookies. Other than the few people at the beginning, and Wang Lin, who barely managed to break Shi Xiaobai’s shield, everyone else emptied their pockets.

And a long, long time later, whenever they saw Shi Xiaobai's figure on the television, or heard Shi Xiaobai's name on various news, they would recall this shameless Tu Dahei, who only wanted cash, and immediately be filled with mixed emotions.

O' time, it whitens so many hairs, blackens so much fungi, aging so many faces, ruining so many beauties, but what sort of changes would it do to Shi Xiaobai in the coming years?

Author's Note: This chapter is the end of this arc. I hope everyone liked it. A new arc will begin immediately. The world will slowly be opened up. Shi Xiaobai's story is about to truly begin!

Chapter 44: She Comes From The Darkness, Bringing The Light!

Dim light shone into a gigantic room. The corner of the room was dotted by shadows as four figures, which could barely be made out, sat at different corners. They were spaced out from each other, but there a hint of confrontation pervading between them.

The shadows shrouded their looks, but the fleeting dim light illuminated their body contours. One of them was thin like a stick, another as fat as a pig, one was graceful and another with a strong build.

These four completely different people not only differed in looks and figure. They seemed to have great differences in will and beliefs. In this silent atmosphere, the strife and the colliding repression was choking.

“Bang!”

Suddenly, a tightly closed door was pushed open. A plume of light crept through the open door. It did not illuminate the corners, but revealed clearly the person who had opened the door.

The person who entered was an elder who wore a wizard's hat and held an old wooden staff. White beard hung down to chest level, as strands of white hair protruded out from the hat. That wrinkled face and white hair easily masked the gray robe draped on the person's body. It was hard to tell if the person was male or

female, or which old man or old woman this person was.

“Gaia!” The four people at each corner stood up and bowed respectfully. They shouted out in unison, as if addressing the elder.

“Oh, so you are all here. Then, let us begin.” The elder’s voice was hoarse, but again it was hard to discern that person’s gender.

After the elder finished speaking, with a wave of his wooden staff, the steel door closed automatically, emitting a loud clear slam. The originally dark room turned dim again as the elder walked to the middle of the room. The four people at each corner sat down spontaneously.

“I believe all of you have placed a ‘surveillant’ beside Shi Xiaobai, so there is no need to add much description to the reason why I called for all of you. What should be done is the focus of our discussions.”

The elder looked towards the top left corner and said, “[Annihilation], Shi Xiaobai is a rookie that your Division is in charge of. Tell us something first.”

The muscular and strong figure by the top left corner stood up and said in a deep voice, “Shi Xiaobai’s monstrous talent has already been coveted by other organizations. If the news of him rising to the third level in ten days is leaked, it could lead to disaster. Thankfully, when Shi Xiaobai was exposed, you had personally requested Her Excellency, Kali, to kill all the ‘surveillants’ hidden in [Gaia]. Since Her Excellency, Kali, has

acted, we can be sure that the news hasn't leaked out of [Gaia].

“And most thankfully, Shi Xiaobai cleverly chose to hide his identity. His current identity to others is ‘Tu Dahei’. We have long ago made an information blockade on him, so the only ones who know of Shi Xiaobai’s looks are the twelve people during the Rookie Evaluation Test. I believe everyone here has informed those few people not to divulge any information about Shi Xiaobai.”

“In that case, Shi Xiaobai can simply use his identity as ‘Tu Dahei’ as a cover. We just need to think of a way to wipe away any traces of suspicion that happened today, and when it is finally completely safe, we can let Shi Xiaobai restore his true identity.”

“Hence, my suggestion is to let Shi Xiaobai continue on his identity as ‘Tu Dahei’. That is all.”

After [Annihilation] finished speaking, he sat down consciously.

After the elder pondered for a few moments, the elder turned to the bottom right corner and said, “[Creation], what do you think?”

The graceful figure at the bottom right corner stood up, immediately causing a fresh fragrance to fill the room. A charming voice sounded, “I believe it is time to find a mentor for this child.”

The elder’s hand paused slightly after hearing this. He said, “In accordance with established practices, Psykers would be assigned

an exclusive mentor, but it usually happens at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Only after the mentee's superpower is awakened, and what category the superpower is confirmed, would a mentor be chosen. Why do you think that we should select one now?"

[Creation] laughed with an extremely charming sound that made one's heart waver. "With that child's talent, regardless of his superpower, there will definitely be people scrambling to be his mentor. There won't be a chance to care who is more suitable. And coincidence has it that us four Division Ministers are here, so why don't we take this opportunity to decide on the child's mentor. Let's take this period of time when One-Pun and Hisith are rushing to Southern Gold City to make it a done deal?"

"This..."

The elder hesitated for a moment before whispering, "This might be inappropriate. If One-Pun or Hisith is willing to be that child's mentor, we should strongly support it. After all, in terms of strength, across the entire [Gaia], or even across the entire world, these two Excellencies are one of the strongest."

"Heh heh, Gaia, you silly old fool!"

The top left corner's thin person suddenly issued a sharp laugh. In a dark voice, the person said, "Why did [Gaia] go from first-tier

Hero organization to second-tier? Wasn't it all thanks to these so-called three powerhouses? Those three are indeed strong, but they never take the initiative to contribute to the organization. They may be a member of [Gaia] officially, but it is just in name. If the three of them were willing to dedicate more effort, [Gaia] may not become one of the top first-tier Hero organizations, but at least we wouldn't fall from first-tier."

"Shi Xiaobai is a precious talent [Gaia] painstakingly unearthed. If those three powerhouses were to become his mentor, what happens if Shi Xiaobai grows up to share the same virtues as them? Wouldn't the organization be wasting all sorts of resources just to get an empty name? Then another fourth powerhouse who is '[Gaia] in name but doesn't do anything' will be born!"

The moment that person finished speaking, the fat person on the bottom right corner immediately echoed, "This time, I agree with [Chaos] and [Creation]'s point of view. Now is a golden opportunity. One-Pun and Hisith are in Southern Gold City, while Kali never bothers about such things. If we take this opportunity to assign an exclusive mentor for Shi Xiaobai, and using a little touch of emotions, then it would be a done deal. When the time comes, One-Pun and Hisith would likely not ask for a rebuff. Those two are extremely proud people, so there's no way they will be shameless enough to vie for students!"

After hearing the three people's discussion, the elder hesitated for a moment before sighing, "Although I am unwilling to admit it, the three of them indeed do not have their minds on [Gaia]. Even the request for Kali's help this time took me a lot of persuasion. I even gave her the 'Heart of the Ocean' before she agreed. Whatever. For [Gaia]'s future, I'm willing to lose my face. Let us

choose Shi Xiaobai's exclusive mentor right here and now!"

The moment the elder finished speaking, a powerful voice from [Annihilation] sounded, "Shi Xiaobai is [Annihilation]'s rookie, so it is just natural that I will be his dedicated mentor."

"I don't think so."

[Creation] immediately objected as she said with a chuckle, "Don't you forget that Shi Xiaobai is a little pervert. He even lusted over a young girl like Riko. With my charm, it would take moments to make him fall deeply in love. To make the child have a complete sense of belonging to [Gaia]. Letting me become his exclusive mentor is the best solution!"

"Heh heh!"

[Chaos] sneered, "If you were made the child's mentor, his Psionic Ability realm might not improve, but his skills in bed will. In a few days, he will become a slave for sex, his guts and perseverance would be immersed amongst women!"

[Order] said solemnly, "I am the most suitable mentor. [Annihilation] is too righteous, while [Chaos] is too vile. [Creation] is just a sex fiend. I am the best choice to nurture the child with all the treasures I have!"

“Pui! As a fat pig, you will nurture Shi Xiaobai into a dirty and cheap swine!” [Creation], who was derided as a ‘sex fiend’, returned with an invective.

“Righteousness is what the child need to nurture the most.” [Annihilation] said with a deep voice.

“To survive in this vile society, being scheming and vicious is what the child needs to learn the most.” [Chaos] rebutted as well.

The four of them desired to become Shi Xiaobai’s exclusive mentor, and originally had differences that made them appear like fire and water, so there was no way they could persuade each other. Immediately, they began quarreling.

“Regardless of the case, this child is in my Division, so he should be my student!”

“Heh heh, I am the best choice.”

“Tsk, I will make that child become a die-hard for [Gaia].”

“I have the best resources for nurturing!”

“ ... ”

The four people's back-and-forth statements became monologues. As the four voices mixed together, none of them wanted to be overshadowed by the other, hence, their voices grew louder. Soon, it became like a quarrel between neighbors, as endless invectives were exchanged, interspersed with screaming and bellowing.

The elder stood quietly in the middle of the room. He neither interrupted them, nor had the intention to stop them. He was only silent, with no visible emotions. However, the elder had already made up his mind. The child, named Shi Xiaobai, would become his student.

At this moment, he would let the four people argue, and let them come to a natural stop after they were exhausted. As [Gaia]'s Gaia, at the four people's most exhausted moment, he would give the unquestionable command, and would surely win the right.

“That child is worth it for me to lose my old face.”

The elder thought as he patiently waited, like a sly old fox hunting rabbits.

The ruckus continued on as though it was going to tear down the room, with no end to it.

Giggle

Suddenly, a bell-like giggle that sounded pleasant to the ears filled the room from all directions. It was as though it came from the sky and also from the ground. It seemed to pass through the walls and also the windows. The giggle was everywhere, but no one knew where it came from.

However, there was one thing for sure. When the giggle sounded, the ruckus came to an abrupt end.

At the same time, that melodious voice sounded once again.

“The Vessel of the Darkness.”

“Removing a mask to reveal the ugly face of self-seeking interest.”

“Cutting off from the righteous Light.”

“Yet thirsting the glory from bathing in the Light.”

“How funny, how pitiful, how sad, but so what?”

“Foolish humans, you are all completely negligible.”

“You would just be a pile of white and gray in a hundred years.”

“And the immortal me shall hide in the darkness, mocking your

inferiority.”

“At this moment, let the Light illuminate your filth!”

The melodious sound descended lightly upon them as light surged in from every direction. With infinite beams of light blooming, the dark room was entirely lit up, leaving nowhere for the five figures in the room to hide.

At the same moment, a petite figure appeared out of the light...

Author’s Note: This chapter wasn’t easy to write, but I think I still handled it well. The final monologue was made up by me. Hue Hue!

Translator’s Note: If it isn’t obvious, being antonyms, [Annihilation] and [Creation] are strongly against each other, while [Chaos] and [Order] make up the other opposing pair. All the Divisions are clearly not friendly with each other.

Chapter 45: Kali

That petite figure came out from the light, not in a metaphorical way, but literally walking out of the light. It was as if the brilliant light was an invisible door. She had stepped through from the other end, and immediately entered this room.

The bright but not dazzling light illuminated the entire room, as the five people who were accustomed to the darkness squinted their eyes. Their facial expressions looked nervous when their eyes landed on the figure, minds deeply reflecting over the monologue.

When the petite figured walked out the of the light, she did not land on the ground. Her feet were a few centimeters off the ground, floating quietly midair.

A black, gothic-style full length skirt wrapped around her petite figure, while her skin looked so delicate as though it would be torn apart by a cold wind. Dark purple hair reached down her waist, as a red headband was tied into a butterfly knot. From far, they looked like a pair of standing cat ears. An ahoge stuck out her hair, adding a hint of moe to her¹.

The petite figure looked like she was a 12–13-year-old girl. Her facial features were delicate like a pixie's, and for some reason, she wore a white eyepatch over her left eye. Only her blue right eye could be seen, it looked as clear as a crystal. The eye was calm, but seemed to contain the mountains and rivers, as though a sea of stars filled it. It added a sacred flair to her beautiful looks².

“Her Excellency, Kali!”

The first person to react was Chaos. Following that, the other three people at each corner politely greeted her. Finally, the white-haired elder also lowered his head slightly, greeting the girl “Her Excellency, Kali”.

Kali frowned slightly and coldly harrumphed, “If the chatter of elves is the sweet, ringing chimes of Heaven, then your ravings are the most ear-piercing noise. I could not force my noble ears to carry on listening to your silly argument, so I came out to say a few words, and also let the Light dispel the nauseating atmosphere in this room.”

The five people’s expressions changed. Chaos’ squinting eyes were wavering constantly, as if thinking of an explanation for the disrespectful words they had just said. Although they secretly complained over the three powerhouses’ conduct, they had to still dutifully show their respect. If the three powerhouses were to depart [Gaia], then [Gaia], which was already heading downhill, might be devoured by other organizations.

These three people did not give any glory to [Gaia], but were important pillars of support for [Gaia] to continue surviving. Gaia was expendable, the four Division Ministers were expendable, but not a single one of the three powerhouses could leave!

“Esteemed Her Excellency, Kali...” Chaos, who was the best smooth talking and was often appointed to negotiate with other organizations, quickly thought of an excuse.

“Stop!”

Kali immediately prevented Chaos from proceeding with her sophistry, as she said coldly, “I came from the Darkness, not to hear you speak. Quietly listen to me is what you need to do the most.”

The five people’s expression changed slightly as they lowered their heads. They tried their best to maintain a respectful expression, but they also carefully hid the anger in their eyes.

“You don’t have to be worried that I will be angered by certain words you said, because what you said were true. This organization is expendable in my opinion, and its nonexistence would be even better. If not for the ice coffin that I slept for a millennium was buried under this Steel City, and have some nostalgia for this piece of land, I would have long left for a brighter world.”

Kali sighed slightly and said, “However, since that person was willing to exchange three sacred level items to exchange for my promise a decade ago, I will force myself to be considered a member of [Gaia] before I leave. I do not know nor do I need to know what sort of person Shi Xiaobai is. However, I will put an end to your disputed topic.”

Upon hearing this, the four Division Ministers could not help but look up at the beautiful girl. Although Kali’s interference with their competition to be Shi Xiaobai’s mentor made them

indignant, if they could end the dispute because of her, it was still a good thing. Every one of them could not help but wish that Kali would designate themselves to be Shi Xiaobai's mentor.

Kali turned around to look at the bulky Annihilation, and said, "What is righteousness? If killing one person to save a hundred is righteousness, is killing one loved one to save a hundred strangers righteousness? Everyone's belief in righteousness is eventually different. There is no need for your guidance, time is the best teacher."

Annihilation looked slightly surprised as he fell into deep thought.

Kali turned to look at the thin Chaos and said, "If you insist that machinations and viciousness is the key to living, then you can try. Let's see if you can survive for three seconds in front of me, do you understand? Absolute strength is the most important thing required for survival."

Chaos' heart missed a beat as he felt a coldness rise up his heart. He did not dare retort.

Kali turned to the charming Creation and said, "I have not experienced matters of the heart, so I can't make an evaluation. However, I don't like the smell from your body. It reminds me of a demonic dragon I saw thousands of years ago. It's filled with that salacious smell, and it's nauseating."

Creation's face flushed as she cursed in her heart. Is being a

virgin something to show off for? However, she immediately realized the importance of the matter. Annihilation and Chaos had also already sensed it as all three of them looked up at Order, who was as fat as a pig.

Since the three of them had been dismissed, wouldn't the position of Shi Xiaobai's mentor fall upon Order?

"I don't think Order is suitable to be Shi Xiaobai's mentor, because..." The unsettled Creation immediately wanted to speak out against it.

"Yes."

Kali suddenly gave a light "yes", interrupting Creation's words. At the same time, a pale icy aura suddenly appeared, sweeping straight for Creation. With a scream, Creation struggled for a second before becoming an ice sculpture.

"Yes, I heard your words. Just wait inside that column of ice." Kali spoke softly before turning to the pig-like Order.

Order appeared extremely tensed. He kept rubbing his thighs with his fat hands, as though he wanted to speak but did not dare to. It looked funny.

Kali knitted her eyebrows slightly and said, "Between a human and a swine, I believe that child named Shi Xiaobai would prefer to be the former. I am very disappointed. All four of you are not

suitable as role models. That's because what all of you should do is to find a good mentor to learn from."

The four people were rendered speechless. With the four candidates rejected, who was to become Shi Xiaobai's mentor? So in the end, you were here just to cause trouble!?

Instead, the eyes of the elder, who had been silent, lit up. The opportunity he had been waiting finally came. As long as he thickened his face to recommend himself at this moment, he could obtain the position of mentor.

The elder coughed, about to speak.

"I'll do it." Kali suddenly said softly.

The elder's eyes stared while the other four stared in stunned silence. They had ignored a possibility. As Kali always showed disdain for mixing with humans, and preferred sleeping in the darkest depths, it was impossible she would be willing to be Shi Xiaobai's mentor even if they were willing to give her three sacred items. From what they knew, Kali was the person who was least likely to vie the position of Shi Xiaobai's mentor from them. As such, when they considered the three powerhouses, they immediately excluded her.

But at this moment, what were the words she said?

"I will become his mentor, but I will not teach him anything. Of

course, as a mentor in name, I will protect him, but give him the freedom to grow.”

Kali said softly, “This matter is decided. I’ll be going to meet Shi Xiaobai now. I hope his darkness and light would not make me cringe.”

The moment she finished speaking, countless rays of light gathered in front of her, turning into a rift of light. She ignored everyone else and took a step forward, walking into the light. Immediately, she disappeared from the room. The light also disappeared along with her, as darkness fell back upon the room.

The shadows enshrouded the four people at each corner. The sound of three people wheezing in short bursts could be heard, they were filled with anger. With the sound of ice shattering, a woman screamed with a voice full of hate, while the elder in the middle sighed deeply.

Chapter 46: Meteors And Hero

At dusk, the sky above Steel City was dyed red. A youth was jumping and running around side ways, across the criss-crossing steel roads. His motion looked like a funny crab, and at times when he rubbed shoulders with passers-by, they would give a teasing smile, while others were rendered speechless.

The youth's lateral jumps and movement speed were very fast. His running speed was considerable faster than normal people running at full speed. Every time he leaped, a white mist would appear beneath his feet. The frequency at which he jumped was not fast, and every distance he traversed with a leap was not too far, but for some reason, every time he leaped, it gave people a feeling that the road beneath him had shortened. Just as you thought he was pretending to walk like a crab to tease a laugh from passers-by, the youth would suddenly disappear from your vision.

The youth jumped laterally for an unknown period of time before he finally stopped at an intersection. He cocked his head and vexed for a moment. He walked to an intersection and stood there, as though he was waiting for something or someone.

“This King's Crab Steps is destined to be an existence to stun the world!”

The youth was naturally Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, he had stopped at an intersection and beamed while looking up at the sky.

When Shi Xiaobai earned 100,000 cash from the [Annihilation]

rookies, the fiery voice sounded in his mind. “Congratulations on earning D-level reward: ‘Grasped Basics’ D Class flash motion movement technique, [Crab Steps].”

The moment the fiery voice was done, Shi Xiaobai felt a headache. It was as though many things were squeezed into his brain. By the time the pain disappeared, Shi Xiaobai was surprised to realize that he had grasped the Crab Steps the voice mentioned.

Not long after Hisith’s game ended, the rookies dispersed. Shi Xiaobai had spoken to Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan, and also probed them for information regarding Crab Steps.

According to Lingcun, any offensive skill, defensive skill or movement technique that exceeded F Class was extremely difficult to grasp. It required a long period of study and practice in order to reach the “Grasped Basics” realm. Furthermore, movement techniques were divided into “motion”, “evasion”, as well as a combination of the two, “flash motion”. Crab Steps was a D Class flash motion movement technique, but it looked somewhat funny, so few people cultivated it.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly depressed, but he reluctantly accepted the reward Crab Steps. However, on the way back, Shi Xiaobai could not resist trying out Crab Steps. When he began, he found that he could not stop!

“King of Crabs, a step to traverse a thousand miles. Two steps to cross the heavens. Three steps to transcend life and death! Wahaha!”

Shi Xiaobai let out a boisterous laugh, giving a girl, who walked past, a fright. She thought he was mad and, while holding her up by her skirt, she quickly ran off with fluttering footsteps.

Shi Xiaobai noticed this and refused to give up on this passer-by he had waited so long for. He began using Crab Steps and laterally jumped in a humorous manner and appeared in front of the girl.

Although his actions looked ridiculous, his speed was redoubtable.

...

...

By the time Shi Xiaobai returned to Riko's apartment, it was already dark.

The lights were not switched on, proving that Riko had yet to return. Shi Xiaobai twitched his mouth and felt somewhat unhappy.

“Where's This King exclusive chef? Where are you!?”

Shi Xiaobai looked up and shouted. Although he did not spend much time with Riko, he had tasted Riko's cooking twice. The delicious taste was still fresh on his mind, so he was particularly

longing for Violent Girl, especially when he ate a mouthful of overcooked instant noodles.

Shi Xiaobai hastily finished his dinner with instant noodles and ham, as well as a few slices of cold bread. Then, he eagerly rushed to the living room. On the living room's wall, there was a forty inch LCD panel that made Shi Xiaobai's eyes shimmer.

The remote control was similar to that of Earth's. Shi Xiaobai immediately found the power switch, and pressing it, the LCD TV lit up. At the same time, a serious but depressive sounding female voice came from the television.

“Yet another meteor has landed. This is already the 123rd meteor ever since this meteor shower began. Oh, curses! When will this calamity end!?”

The television screen flickered, and a stunning scene appeared. The camera was slowly moving as it revealed ruined walls and collapsed buildings, a disaster scene filled with devastation on the ground. The picture would occasionally show blood and corpses, but very quickly, people in specific uniforms would stretcher out the corpses as well as the injured.

“Heavens, another meteor is coming!”

The female broadcaster's sorrowful voice sounded once again. The television footage immediately moved to the sky, and there, in the night sky, a blob of light that looked extremely hot, rushed to the ground. The footage was taken from afar, but when the blob of

light landed, it immediately turned huge. The scene shown on television was stirring.

After the blob of light hit the ground, an explosion happened. A huge crater appeared as dust rose up, causing the footage to turn fuzzy. When the dust cleared, it revealed what the light blob was.

It was a steel carapace. When it stood up, it was a gigantic bug bigger than a building. The bug had a scissors shaped silver horns on its head. The camera gave the bug's green eyes a close up shot. There were numerous white worms squirming in its eyes which looked nauseating.

“Phew, this meteor is just an F Class Astral Calamity Beast—Astral Steel Giant Beetle. Nearby Heroes have already arrived. This meteor shouldn't cause much damage.”

The female broadcaster seemed to slightly relax. Following that, there was a switch in scenes. The television's image flashed a few times before fixing on a monster about five storeys tall. The monster had three heads, and the middle head was that of a lion, while the right head was a dragon's head that kept spewing out hot flames. The left head was a goat's head whose eyes flashed a cold beam. It had lion claws for its forelimbs and ox hooves for its hindlimbs. On its back were a pair of bat wings. A huge tail ended with a mouth filled with razor teeth.

“It's a Chimera! Heavens, a B Class Astral Calamity Beast, Chimera. This kind of monster needs a Hero at A Class and above to battle it! Wait, it seems like someone is battling the Chimera!?”

The female broadcaster acutely noticed a strange aberration with the Chimera in the fixed frame. The moment she finished speaking, the camera swung a half circle before coming in front of the Chimera. Below the Chimera, in the midst of the flames spewing out from the dragon head, a green barrier was protecting someone.

The lens zoomed in, and the person's appearance was revealed. He was a middle-aged man dressed in a suit. The man's face was scrunched up as sweat dripped profusely down his face. Shi Xiaobai was sharp to realize that the green barrier was very similar to Psionic Shield. It looked like a green Psionic Barrier, but the man's barrier was flashing, as if it was melting under the flames.

The Chimera's goat head was staring intently at the middle-aged man. Its cold eyes seemed to lock onto the man, preventing the man from escaping. He could only use his Psionic Barrier to withstand the Chimera's flame.

But clearly, the man was quickly losing Psionic Power.

"This is [Eventide]'s C Class Hero, Mr Zeng Ziming. His Psionic Barrier is about to give up soon. Heavens, someone save him!" The tone in the female broadcaster's voice turned anxious.

Shi Xiaobai's turned anxious as well. The blackish-red flames looked extremely hot. If the Barrier shattered, his body would not be able to withstand it.

At this moment, the Chimera's lion head suddenly opened its mouth slowly. A lion like roar sounded like an explosion, as a violent wind blew at the middle-aged man. Dust and debris flew up, and with an indignant grunt, the man's barrier shattered. His body was consumed by the blackish-red flames.

After the flames burned for several seconds, the dragon head slowly closed its mouth. The flames gradually extinguished and the middle-aged man's figure still remained on screen, but there were no flesh or bones left, only crisp ashes. The C Class Hero, Zeng Ziming, turned to ashes under the Chimera's flames.

The female broadcaster turned silent. The repressive atmosphere from the television reached deep into Shi Xiaobai's heart. It made him breathe with great difficulty.

Following that, the camera seemed to slowly move. Every step of the Chimera caused the surroundings to tremble. Its tiger roars, the goat bleating and dragon roar was issued from the three heads, becoming the only sound that existed on screen.

The female broadcaster was silent. The camera also moved away from the Chimera's body, but the screen was still showing the ruined scene of the city the Chimera had ravaged. She and everyone else seemed to be waiting for something or someone.

"Coming!" The female broadcaster's cold voice suddenly sounded. The voice was filled with hatred and anger.

At the same moment, the cameras pulled away, and far into the

distance, a beam of light flew across the cameras, like a shooting rocket.

The camera zoomed in. Zoom, zoom, zoom... The flying rocket-like object finally revealed its true appearance. It was a person.

A flapping white cape, a yellow tight suit and a bald head that reflected light. Those were this person's most obvious characteristics. The camera suddenly moved forward to fixate on the person's eyes. His eyes occupied the entire screen, and the look in his eyes were sharper than a blade, colder than snow.

“He's here, our most beloved Hero, One-Pun man is here!”

The female broadcaster used all her strength to say those words out loud, as though she was trying to conceal the choking in her voice.

Chapter 47: One-Pun Man

As the cameras zoomed out, a thin purple beam of light moved rapidly at the Chimera's heads, like a flying arrow that shot at the three heads. One-Pun's thin body appeared in front of the massive Chimera. It looked like an ant encountering an elephant.

This world's filming technology was very well developed. All sorts of angles were captured perfectly. It constantly switched angles, and gave One-Pun close up shots. As a series of shots kept changing, it looked like it was the calm before a storm. And when the female broadcaster said the words, "He's here, our most beloved Hero, One-Pun man is here", it made one's blood surge.

Shi Xiaobai's breathing sped up as his eyes blazed. One-Pun, who had shot forward from a distance, quickly arrived in front of the Chimera. The Chimera also noticed the arrival of an unexpected enemy. Its three heads looked simultaneously at One-Pun, and then slowly opened its three mouths at the same time. The battle began immediately.

It was very likely going to be a bitter fight.

Shi Xiaobai's heart thumped in palpitation. He looked forward to the beginning of the battle, but was also worried for One-Pun's safety. After all, One-Pun had previously saved his life.

"Go Baldy Superman!"

Shi Xiaobai quietly cheered on One-Pun.

As for the female broadcaster on television, for some reason, she fell into silence. After she said, “he’s here”, she did not speak a word. What was she waiting for this time?

The camera suddenly switched to the three heads of the Chimera, whose three mouths had already opened fully. Its three heads jerked forward suddenly, and blackish-red flames spewed out from the dragon head. A deafening sound blast roared from the lion head, while an invisible mysterious force blew out from the goat’s head at the thin figure that was already heading towards it in mid air.

The debris strewn on the wrecked buildings and roads either flew up or were incinerated. If not, the lion’s roaring sound blast would shatter them into numerous tinier pieces. These three completely different forms of energy, but emanated a similarly terrifying destructive power, blasted straight at One-Pun.

The camera closely followed One-Pun, as his body was covered in a thin layer of purplish glow. He charged straight into the black and red mess where the flames and sound blast converged. His fearless look made Shi Xiaobai involuntarily hold his breath.

“Go on, One-Pun man!” The female broadcaster’s agitated voice suddenly sounded.

Before she finished her words, the flame had engulfed One-Pun completely. A sound blast violently struck him, causing One-Pun’s

momentum to abruptly stop. The camera zoomed in, and the purple figure had bent his back, shrinking before the Chimera's chest amidst the blackish-red flames. He tilted slightly, and clenching his right fist, he gave a posture of being about to punch out.

“Kill it in one punch!” The female broadcaster screamed.

The moment she said that, One-Pun punched out!

This punch was very ordinary. It looked like an ordinary punch when ordinary people fought. Furthermore, it only punched into air.

But this punch destroyed everything!

The first thing that was destroyed was the blackish-red flames. Following that was the Chimera's three heads, then the Chimera's massive body exploded. Following that, it's tail with the mouth also got consumed by the storm created from the punch.

What was destroyed were also the ruined buildings around the Chimera. Instantly, everything turned to smithereens. Dust filled the air, as a ravine appeared behind the Chimera, about dozens of meters wide, but nearly a kilometer long.

This punch made Shi Xiaobai nearly pop his eyes out. He even forgot to breathe.

“One punch, another one punch! This is our One Punch Man, One-Pun!”

The female broadcaster said with a trembling but excited voice, “Have hope everyone. Our Heroes will definitely wipe out all the hateful enemies! Be it a meteor shower, a legion of calamity fiends or extraterrestrials, our favorite Heroes will definitely protect our homeland, protecting all of mankind!”

Was this a Hero? This was what a Hero was!

Shi Xiaobai looked at the television showing the bald superman, who could nonchalantly turn a massive Chimera into dust with a single punch, standing in the middle of the Heaven and Earth. He felt his chest burn, as if something wanted to come out of his throat. A hot liquid was sloshing in his eyes.

The cameras slowly panned, as the screen switched to the land where the Chimera stood. Minced meat and dripping blood depicted the death of the monster. The long and deep ravine portrayed how much devastating power the normal-looking punch had.

After the cameras panned for a moment, it slowly turned towards the figure in midair, who had dissolved his purple glow. The cameras zoomed in, as a solemn and sanctified atmosphere brewed. As the cameras zoomed into him, the look of the Hero’s victory appeared in the eyes of the audience.

Suddenly, One-Pun, who was mid air, lowered his head to look at

his right wrist and then immediately transformed into a purple beam of light, shooting away to the east. He became smaller and smaller on screen, eventually disappearing.

The female broadcaster's voice sounded at the same time. "Emergency alert. It is estimated that in ten minutes, there will a meteor estimated to be above S Class dropping on the east side of Southern Gold City. This meteor might very well be the king of this astral beast meteor shower. The seven S Class Heroes that had come forward to help in an evacuation and rescue mission have all gathered at the meteor's point of impact. Everyone watching before your screens, if you are a powerful Hero, we beg you to come to Southern Gold City. This meteor shower is one of the rarely seen 'Thousand Stars' level. Southern Gold City is in desperate need of your support!"

The television's picture constantly changed. It showed corpses that were there because they failed to evacuate in time, or Heroes escorting citizens of Southern Gold City to safety. There were numerous collapsed buildings and crumbling roads. An Astral Calamity Beast that was as large as a mountain was wreaking havoc in the city, and Heroes who charged over to battle Astral Calamity Beasts. All these scenes seemed to say the same thing.

"Southern Gold City needs you, Heroes!"

The female broadcaster's choking voice sounded along with a melancholic accompaniment. It was very moving.

The moment those words were said, Shi Xiaobai broke into tears. He constantly reached up to wipe the hot flowing tears off his face,

staring intently at the shocking images on television.

Shi Xiaobai seemed to recall some unpleasant memories. As he sobbed, he began to vaguely chant, “Hero, Hero...”

After a long time, Shi Xiaobai seemed to gradually calm down. His sobbing slowly came to a stop. His swollen eyes and wet tears recounted the young boy’s grief.

Suddenly, a melodious voice rang in his ears.

“Youth, do you desire power?”

Shi Xiaobai turned around in surprise, and he saw a girl with dark purple long hair sitting on the sofa beside him. The girl was as beautiful as a pixie, and was smiling cheerfully at him.

Author’s Note: I like Saitama, so I made someone similar. I hope Saitama in my world will receive the recognition of everyone. Please forgive the selfishness of an anime fan. However, this book is not fan fiction. Some characters are from anime, but most of them aren’t. Also there will be changes and differences. At least in this novel, One-Pun is very strong, but not invincible.

Chapter 48: Watching The Meteor Rain Fall Onto Earth With You

On the soft sofa, the girl was only a body distance away from Shi Xiaobai. Her knees were folded to her side. The black gothic-style dress covered her long and slender legs, but could not conceal her moving curves.

Her exquisite body was tilted, leaning on the sofa. One palm was gently holding up her delicate cheek, while her wrist revealed jade-like skin. A revealed blue eye squinted into the shape of a crescent, as she quietly exchanged gazes with Shi Xiaobai. An enchanting smile could be seen on her beautiful face.

If this world truly had fairies, then her smile was so beautiful that it would make fairies sigh.

Time seemed to come to a standstill at this moment. They looked at each other in silence, as black starry eyes and a blue oceanic eye reflected each other's figures in them. The girl was still smiling sweetly, while Shi Xiaobai's breathing gradually began to speed up.

Shi Xiaobai's tear-stained cheeks began to flush, as though he was enduring something. His slightly red eyes flashed a burning desire, while the hot breathing from his nose seemed to give him a strange impulse.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai raised his right hand. His eyes were still staring intently at the girl's eye, but his right hand was already

stretching towards the girl's face. At the same time, his body was leaning slightly forward, as though he was going to press down on the girl.

That look was like an excited teenager trying to touch the face of a girl he admired.

The girl's smile stiffened slightly. There was a shimmer in her eye, but she did not say or do anything to stop him. She quietly watched as Shi Xiaobai's finger approached her face.

Slowly, Shi Xiaobai's fingers touched...the white eyepatch that covered the girl's left eye.

Shi Xiaobai's breathing stagnated as he suddenly used his strength to lift it up. His body suddenly jerked forward as the girl's face became inches away from him, but all he did was stare intently at the girl's revealed left eye.

It was an eye with a golden pupil, emitting dazzling bright light, like the dazzling charm of dawn.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's expression changed drastically. He released his right hand and jumped backwards. He covered his eyes and said in pain. "Eye, eye, This King's eye!"

The white eyepatch fell back over the eye with the golden pupil. The girl's deep blue eye looked at him with a slight look of doubt.

Shi Xiaobai's right hand covered his eyes as he reached out his left hand to point at the girl. He said coldly, "To think your eye can resonate with This King's True Heretic King Eyes. Heh! This King did not guess wrongly. Your eye is a—True Demon King Eye! And you are a pixie witch with the Demon King's bloodline!"

The girl was momentarily stunned. Her face suddenly burst out with a soul-stirring smile. She wagged a finger and said with a laugh, "What an ignorant boy. Eyes that can resonate with a True Heretic King Eye is not only limited to True Demon King Eye. Gigggle What I have is the True God King Eye!"

Shi Xiaobai was stunned, as his gaze immediately turned soft. However, just as he thought of something, his eyes turned sharp again. He said solemnly, "Don't you dare deceive This King. This King can already smell the demonic girl aura that you are deliberately concealing from your body!"

The girl said in a soft voice, "I previously fought in the Darkness with numerous demonic girls over a hundred years. Then I removed the aura from their bodies, so what you smell is the smell of time."

"Smell of time?"

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he ruminated over those words. Moments later, he asked doubtfully, "Are you really not a demonic girl?"

"No." The girl shook her head.

“Then who are you?” Shi Xiaobai asked.

“Who am I? That will be a long story. Do you really want to listen?” The girl asked with a smile.

“Of course!” Shi Xiaobai answered without hesitation.

The girl paused and moved her body to close the gap between them. She said in a mysterious manner, “Ten thousand years ago, I was a pixie that guarded the World Tree, leading a carefree life. Then because of the first apocalypse, the World Tree lost its life, and before it withered, it chose me to be the inheritor of its power. Back then, I was a pixie, as well as a World Tree.”

“9300 years ago, I traversed the world, killing numerous villains, and destroyed quite a number of righteous people. I was sick of the human world, so I went to the Light. There I saw so-called God Kings and leader of gods. I kicked a God King off his throne and took over the God King’s eye. I was a God Queen then.”

“9000 years ago, I got sick of the worship received by gods, so I left the Light and headed to the Darkness. There I met a Demon King and the demonic girls he bred. I spent a hundred years to convert all the demonic girls in the Darkness into pixies. I then banished the Demon King to an endless abyss. Back then, I was the Queen of the dark pixies.”

“8500 years ago, I realized that there were numerous civilizations other than the Darkness and the Light, hence I left the Darkness

and wandered the thousands of worlds. Back then, I was a lonely traveler.”

“8000 years ago, I got tired. In a world called ‘Heaven’, I settled down. ‘Bird people’ with white wings on their backs lived in Heaven. They called themselves angels, so back then, I was a hermitic angel.”

“7000 years ago...”

...

...

More than ten minutes later, the girl finally finished describing her numerous identities. It was unknown if she had fabricated them or was just speaking nonsense, but finally she sighed and said, “A thousand years ago, I returned to the world of the humans. I slept deep underground for a thousand years before waking up ten years ago. So now, I’m a human, my name is Kali.”

Shi Xiaobai was listening with his eyes glistening. He said, having enjoyed the entire process, “It’s so interesting!”

Kali quietly looked at Shi Xiaobai and could not help but giggle. “Youth, you truly believed that?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned and pointed to himself and said, “Intuition tells This King that you are not lying. This King doesn’t

believe you, but believes in his intuition.”

Kali burst into laughter as she could not help but reach out to touch Shi Xiaobai’s head. She said gently, “If I met you earlier, maybe I wouldn’t have been bored for 10,000 years.”

Shi Xiaobai, who had his head touched, suddenly felt a strange feeling. He hastily retreated backwards, evading Kali’s “demonic talons”. He reached out to smoothen his hair that Kali had messed up and sneered, “Don’t you think of stealing This King’s invisible crown!

Giggle

Kali laughed heartily once again. Her bell-like voice was pleasant to the ears, like the chimes from Heaven.

Shi Xiaobai’s gaze slowly turned soft as the corners of his mouth suffused a smile.

Why was she laughing so happily?

Shi Xiaobai found it strange. Could her laughter have some magic in them?

Kali laughed for a long while before she gradually stopped. Her expression gradually calmed down as she looked at Shi Xiaobai and said in all seriousness, “Your Light makes people feel fondness, your Darkness makes people cherish tenderly. You are a true and

pure, a flawless existence.”

“You believed my every word, and even truly believe in every word you say. You are different from those tragic people who have the power of fantasy, but doubt their fantasies. You believe that you are a weak King, you believe that weakness is temporary. You believe you possess the True Heretic King Eyes and believe that you wear an invisible crown. You firmly believe your every imagination.”

“You are the most interesting human I have ever met, so I am willing to fulfill your greatest desire.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He looked at the pixieish girl with purple hair and was momentarily unsure as to what to say.

Kali stood up from the sofa and walked in front of Shi Xiaobai. She looked down into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes and asked softly, “Then, let’s go back to the original question. Youth, do you desire power?”

Shi Xiaobai looked up and stared into the blue eye. From the beginning, the question he had been evading came at him again, forcing him into deep thought.

Did he desire power?

Probably?

But..what he desired, was it truly power?

The realistic feeling he desired during the rookie training, was that truly power?

Shi Xiaobai wanted to answer, “Yes, it is power!”

But his intuition told him, “No, not necessarily.” What he desired was not necessarily power, what he desired was not only power!

“I don’t know.”

Shi Xiaobai gave his answer. His voice sounded a bit dry and hoarse, and seemed to have a touch of fear.

“I know you do not know. You do not know what you truly desire. You don’t even know what is power.”

Kali chuckled and suddenly stretched her hand out towards Shi Xiaobai and said, “Then, I’ll help you seek out the answer.”

Seek out the answer?

Shi Xiaobai’s breathing stagnated as he looked at the hand Kali stretched out.

That white, slender hand looked like it was so soft that there were no bones in them.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment before stretching out his right hand to grab Kali's hand. He experienced a sense of warmth and softness, but suddenly the Light and Darkness appeared at the spot their hands touched. A black hole filled with light devoured them from their contact point.

Shi Xiaobai was alarmed and hurriedly wanted to release his right hand, but realized that his hand was being held tightly. He had no way of retracting his hand. He looked up to see Kali's eye. That eye was as soft as the morning sunlight.

His intuition told him that this girl would not harm him, so Shi Xiaobai stopped struggling.

The black hole that was filled with light slowly expanded and soon engulfed half their bodies.

"It just happens that there's a meteor shower tonight. I'll accompany you stargazing." Kali said as the black hole's light engulfed them completely.

Author's Note: To be honest, Kali's eyepatch and golden pupil, as well as one syllable of her name is inspired from Takanashi Rikka. Nothing else will be the same. Of course, her personality is also different, after all, everyone leads different lives, so the situations they encounter are different.

Chapter 49: The Kind Dan Liang

In the western zone of Southern Gold City, on a road dimpled with potholes, there was a file of people hurrying down it in fear. Not far from them were the roars and howlings from Astral Calamity Beasts, occasionally mixed with the tragic screams of humans.

Occasionally, a meteor would streak across the dark night sky and explode along the horizons. Every time it happened, the escaping people would begin to tremble in fear, worried that a meteor would, at any second, crash into their location.

This group of people numbered about twenty. Other than the first three people—who wore normal attires—the remaining were jostling forward, shoulder to shoulder, wearing prisoner clothes.

“Brother Dan, you are too kind. These people are death row convicts, even those self-proclaimed righteous prison wardens have abandoned them. Why should we waste our time saving them? We might as well find some F Class astral beasts to earn some Hero points,” grumbled a man. The person took the left spot amongst the trio and was a youth with blond hair. He deliberately chose not to suppress his voice, as such, his heartless words could be clearly heard by the convicts towards the front. The expressions on those convicts immediately turned ugly. They were not angry, but were terrified and worried.

“Death row convicts are still people. Before their executions, their lives are to be respected in a similar fashion. We are Heroes. Saving people in danger is our responsibility. Delain, let’s not

touch on this matter any further.” The stocky man walking in the middle said with a face of righteousness.

“Hehe, Dan Liang is right. The three of us are Heroes, so how can we be compared to those prison wardens who perennially abuse convicts.” A girl on the right, who wore heavy makeup, said as she clung closely to Dan Liang. Her well developed chest would occasionally rub against Dan Liang’s arm.

Delain curled his mouth and had an unpleasant expression, but he did not speak again.

Due to the meteor bombardment, the surroundings had been heated to an extremely high temperature. Everywhere in the vicinity of a few hundred meters of the hit zone was affected. As such, no plane dared to circle around in mid air. Most Southern Gold City residents had successfully evacuated during the three hour notice they were given, hence, the number of search and rescue operators were few. However, there were always a number of people who could not evacuate in time, for example, these convicts who had been abandoned by prison wardens. Typically, these unlucky people were saved by Heroes.

The trio had formed a team to kill weaker Astral Calamity Beasts to earn Hero points because a meteor shower was the best opportunity to increase their Hero rankings. As long as they were not down on their luck, where high level meteors landed around them, they wouldn’t be in any danger. This was because although Astral Calamity Beasts were brutal, they would not chase after distant targets. Typically, they would only destroy their surroundings.

The C Class Hero that the Chimera burned to death was unlucky to be at where the Chimera landed and had failed to escape in time.

Delain originally thought that his trip here to “help” Southern Gold City would give him the opportunity to kill some F Class astral beasts and earn Hero points, but he never expected that the kindhearted Dan Liang even wanted to rescue a group of death row convicts.

Every increment in one’s Hero ranking increased one’s nation-provided monthly salary. Delain could not tolerate wasting time saving death row convicts who deserved dying.

The Hero rankings were like a flowing stream downwards. If nothing was done, there was only flowing backwards, never forward. A few Heroes ranked beneath him might gain enough points to surpass him just by killing a few Astral Steel Giant Beetles.

Just thinking of this possibility made Delain indignant and angry, but reason told him that he could not lose all decorum and leave by himself. This was because the stocky man in the middle was a Psyker. If Delain wanted to kill astral beasts at E Class or above, he would need Dan Liang’s strength.

...

Due to the roads having been destroyed and blockades caused by collapsed buildings, the group of people did not move forward at a

fast pace. In order to avoid the Astral Calamity Beasts that were wreaking havoc, they often had to take detours.

The convicts had been imprisoned for too long, so most of them were malnourished. As they ran, many of them gasped for their breaths. However, in order to survive, they could only grit their teeth and run after the person in front of them.

At this moment, another meteor crashed to the ground. It streaked across the night sky with a beautiful beam of light, but that beauty meant the arrival of an ugly and evil astral beast on this piece of land.

The convicts looked up simultaneously at the sky and after confirming that the meteor landed far away, they heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, they became more nervous, afraid that the three Heroes in front of them would abandon them. They were also afraid that the next meteor would destroy their fantasies of survival.

The more they wanted to live, the more they were afraid of death.

“Don’t worry, we won’t leave you behind.”

Dan Liang suddenly turned backwards and smiled. He said loudly to the convicts, “Because we are Heroes.”

Under the night sky, his smile was as bright as the stars. His

voice like a gentle wind, soothing to the heart.

The convicts lowered their heads, not because they were touched, but to hide the disdain in their eyes—Hero? Won't leave us behind? Heh heh, those are all pretentious words!

In the face of death and fear, any form of righteousness and kindness could be twisted or shattered. The evil nature of humans would overwhelm one's conscience. Rationality and innate knowledge could be wantonly abandoned for survival. Even the lives of other people would be cheap commodities that were easily abandoned.

These convicts had long been immersed in evil. As they had done the act of murder, they knew that madness happened when death approached. They did not have any hopes regarding Dan Liang's promise. However, since they were at their mercy, they could not openly show their disdain or retort back.

At that moment, lowering their heads and staying silent was the best option.

Dan Liang sighed and no longer spoke.

After walking into an alley, Dan Liang signaled for everyone to stop. He then leaped up to a tall building nearby that had not collapsed. He looked around to get an understanding of the situation and after surveying his surroundings for a while, he found the safest route of advancement. He then led everyone forward.

“Dan Liang, these death row convicts are of bad character. They did not appreciate the words you said, and even showed looks of disdain. What’s the point of working so hard to save them? Is this even worth it!?”

The girl beside Dan Liang noticed the expressions of the convicts and felt displeased. She began to doubt Dan Liang’s actions, but she was not as direct as Delain. She deliberately lowered her voice, so that only the three of them could hear it.

Delain immediately echoed her words. “Brother Dan is too kind, but at times, kindness is not correct, and might not be righteous. These death row convicts have murdered before. They are not worth our efforts to save them.”

Upon hearing this, Dan Liang fell silent for a moment before saying, “We are Heroes. Isn’t it the most basic thing for Heroes to save people in danger?”

Dan Liang’s expression looked gloomy, but his eyes were sparkling.

“Meteor!” A convict suddenly shouted loudly. “The meteor looks as though it’s heading towards us!”

The three people walking in front had a drastic change in expression as they hurriedly looked up. They saw a meteor streak across the horizon towards them. The burning beam of light was blinding to the eyes, giving off the impression of extreme heat.

It was heading in their direction!

Author's Note: Laying the foundation in this chapter. An interesting plot will begin soon!

Chapter 50: Kinder Than Kind

The speed at which the meteor fell was too fast. By the time Dan Liang and company realized that the meteor would fall near them, there was already no time to escape.

“Hurry, hurry up and put up your Psionic Barriers!” Dan Liang immediately shouted.

Everyone immediately jolted out of their daze. A huge explosion would ensue when the meteor crashed, so they had to put up their Psionic Barriers to survive the explosion.

Subconsciously, everyone produced a Psionic Barrier. Those convicts, who had expended most of their Psionic Power while running, did not dare to hold back as they immediately used up all their Psionic Power.

“Boom!”

The flaming meteor abruptly hit the ground, about a few hundred meters away from the group. A deafening explosion along with a violent wind swept up. Countless rubble and bricks flew up and were blown towards the group, assaulting them in a rain of debris.

A gigantic green shield suddenly appeared in front of all them, blocking all the debris.

Everyone was surprised. The shield was produced by Dan Liang. He got the rest to produce Psionic Barriers, but he had produced a Psionic Shield. Shields were naturally thicker than barriers, but shields could only defend in a single direction, and was unable to protect one's entire body.

Although Dan Liang's shield blocked the debris for everyone, he was exposed to the explosive storm. His clothes flared up as though his body was about to be lifted by the wind, but his feet rooted himself firmly to the ground. He stared with widened eyes as his face turned red.

The trembling convicts, who had produced Psionic Barriers, looked at Dan Liang's back. Other than fear, they had no other expression.

The violent winds from the explosion was temporary, but the disaster had just begun.

Amidst the dust, a massive and terrifying figure slowly crept out of the gigantic crater, revealing its identity. It had a head of a ferocious tiger and a body of a snake that stretched more than a kilometer. The scales on its snake body shimmered with a silver luster, making it look extremely hard. The monster suddenly looked up and gave a deafening roar.

“Roar!”

At the moment the monster roared, it had slithered its body out of the crater. The monster's snake-like body was dozens of meters

in width. As it slithered on the ground, it produced a grinding sound as well as sending debris up. It made one's hair stand on end and one's body shudder with fear.

“B Class astral beast, Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake.”

Liang Dan immediately determined the monster's identity. He knew that they had no way to fight it. Just as he wanted to shout for everyone to flee, he saw that they had already run far into the distance in a sorry state.

The convicts had expended their Psionic Power to survive the explosion, so they were running as slow as a tortoise's crawl at the moment. And running ahead of them was Delian and Hongmei, running faster than rabbits. They pulled away very quickly.

“No, they won't be able to run away.”

To survive the crashing of meteor, one needed to first withstand the initial explosion, and then most importantly of all, escape from the astral beast's aggro range. Although Delian and Hongmei ran quickly, it was still not enough, much less the convicts.

Dan Liang immediately circulated his Psionic Power, and ran towards the two people in front. He was the strongest amongst them, and was much stronger, so he quickly overtook the convicts and began to catch up with Delian and Hongmei.

“Help me. Save us!”

“Didn’t you say you wouldn’t abandon us? Liars, all of you are such darn liars!”

“Aren’t you a Hero? Fight the monster!”

“Please, don’t abandon us! No, you are just a demon wearing a coat of kindness. Come back!”

“...”

The convicts looked at Dan Liang’s figure that was slowly distancing itself from them. They were either crying or cursing as they carried their exhausted bodies forward in a panting run. They could feel the mocking and cruel gaze from the monster behind them. Their eyes were filled with despair as their spirits were on the brink of collapse.

Dan Liang heard what they said and his expression turned gloomier, but his eyes were still extremely bright. Very quickly, he caught up to Delian and Hongmei and he shouted, “Save those convicts!”

“Are you mad? How do we save them?”

Hongmei screamed back at Dan Liang’s “joke”. Her made-up face was already extremely pale and her trembling lips expressed her terror.

“Brother Dan, wake up! The three of us can’t even save ourselves, what more them. Let them be bait, at least they will delay the astral beast for a moment. Only then can we escape!”

Delian’s eyes were exuding a cold beam as he said words with no holds barred.

“I’ll delay the astral beast!”

Dan Liang loudly declared his intentions. “My superpower can be used to keep the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake occupied for a period of time. All of you should take advantage of this period of time to escape. Those convicts are unable to identify the correct direction to head in, so they need your guidance!”

“Delian, Hongmei! I’ll save everyone, you save them!”

The roaring wind that came from running could not disperse the fiery words he said. Delian and Hongmei looked Dan Liang in the eye and were stunned. They actually could not understand why Dan Liang, who had the best chance of escaping, would make such a foolish decision!

“We are Heroes. Saving people in danger is our responsibility, isn’t it?”

Dan Liang smiled slightly in a very foolish and naive manner.

“Save them, please!”

Without any time to earnestly persuade the duo, Dan Liang stopped in his footsteps, and after bowing deeply at them, he turned around and charged right at the criminals and the slithering snake monster.

As Dan Liang ran, his eyes were filled with resolute courage.

Delian and Hongmei turned their heads to look at the quickly disappearing Dan Liang. Their expressions were slightly stiff, but they did not slow down their footsteps, as they carried on running.

“Hey, will you save them?” Hongmei turned to Delian and gave him a slight smile.

“Them” referred to the convicts, and the so-called “save” actually meant the simple task of guiding them in the correct direction.

“What about you?” Delian similarly cocked his head and smiled at Hongmei.

“Of course...not.” Hongmei stuck her tongue out.

“I wish so much that they would die cleanly.” Delian shrugged his shoulders.

The duo turned their heads to look forward as the corner of their lips suffused a cold smile. They accelerated and suddenly split off

in two different directions at the crossroad ahead. Running along different paths, they disappeared into the darkness.

...

After the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake landed on the ground, it took slightly more than ten seconds to adjust its body. This was a necessary period of adaption whenever an astral beast landed on Earth. It was also the only chance for humans to escape. However, the more powerful the astral beast, the shorter the adaption period. B Class astral beasts only needed about ten seconds.

Those convicts, who had nearly expended all their Psionic Power, naturally could not escape the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake's aggro range in such a short period of time. Knowing that, they felt a deep sense of despair. However, humans were such pathetic creatures at times. The more they felt despair, the more they struggled. And these convicts were such people. Their desire for survival had reached its peak.

Despite feeling as though their lungs were burning and how their legs were cramping, they still ran frantically forward. Some of the convicts would even chase up to the person in front of them and forcefully pull them down to the ground. In their opinion, having a corpse behind them would buy them a little bit more time for their escape.

This process of escaping while pulling at each other happened. Even though they were being chased by Death, they were competing for their lives with others.

The hideous and ugly nature of humans was perfectly showcased by these convicts.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake was extremely fast. As its body slithered on the ground, it instantly arrived at the convict who lined the back. The tiger head lowered as its sharp and dense teeth chomped away, swallowing the convict and his tragic screams whole.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake did not stop as it continued hunting. These puny humans were naturally not food in its eyes, but “ants” that were eyesores. Destroying all the “ants” was its nature.

Fear, despair and a desperate desire to survive intertwined in the convicts’ heart. They hated those prison wardens who had abandoned them. They hated Delian and Hongmei, and hated the self-proclaimed Hero, Dan Liang, who had abandoned them.

This hate gave them the power to hang on.

“Run! I’ll delay it!”

Suddenly, a desperate voice came from the front. A figure rushed past everyone at an extremely fast speed, heading straight at the menacing Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake.

The person, Hero Dan Liang!

The convicts were stunned, but immediately pressed forward with more energy. The self-proclaimed hero of a fool had saved them, which meant—they had a chance of survival.

As long as they survived, everything would be fine.

As for whether Dan Liang would be in danger as he held the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake back? Heh heh, was that important?

The convicts did not waste any efforts to pull the person in front of them, as they knew that this was the most potent bait that could buy them time. To survive, what they needed to do now was to run with all their energy.

At that moment, no convict looked back at the Hero. No one took a look at that Dan Liang who was kinder than kind.

Chapter 51: My Hands Are Stained With Sin

As the convicts concerned themselves only with running, they did not look back at Dan Liang's figure. If they had done so, they would have seen an unbelievable scene.

The moment Dan Liang passed by all the convicts, a saber suddenly appeared in Dan Liang's right hand. Boiling hot blood constantly dripped off the blade, while Dan Liang's left hand was surprisingly holding a human head with blood spewing out.

At the same time, a headless corpse—wearing a white convict uniform—collapsed to the ground.

Dan Liang had beheaded a convict, but his eyes continued looking firm and resolute. As he held his bloodied saber and the human head, he charged fearlessly at the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake who had its mouth wide open.

“Roar!”

The tiger head emitted a roar, as a pungent smell came spewing out. It blended into the strong winds, making it repugnant. Dan Liang's expression changed as he produced a green barrier that wrapped his entire body.

“Heaven Ascension Steps!”

A green beam burst from under his feet as Dan Liang leaped at

the monster. His feet kicked off in mid air thrice as his body sank and rose. It was as though he was jumping on air, and in a few seconds, he arrived at the head of the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake.

A whistling cold air blew up his clothes as Dan Liang slashed his saber down at the tiger head from high up!

“Clang!”

However, the bloodied saber broke into two pieces when it hit the tiger head. The grayish-brown hide on the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake’s head remained unharmed.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake immediately raised up its snake body, lifting the tiger head high up. It violently swung its head, attempting to fling the uninvited assailant far away.

Dan Liang hurriedly reached out his hand to grab onto the monster’s thick fur strands which resembled tree branches. He embraced the bloodied head with his left hand, and as the tiger head violently shook, Dan Liang’s body was flung around like a fluttering flag in the wind. He looked like he was about to be flung away at any moment, but he gritted his teeth tight.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake stopped after a few moments of shaking. The tiger head went into a prone position, while its body slithered forward at a remarkable speed.

The human on its head was like a louse, temporarily irremovable, so it could only ignore the human. Regardless how “fat” the louse was, the louse was unable to harm it. The “ants” that were still attempting to escape in front of it were the targets that needed elimination.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake adhered to its natural instinct, and ignored Dan Liang who was on its head. It began continuing its “clean-up activities”.

Dan Liang’s right hand was still grabbed onto the tiger head’s fur. He slowly sat down, and looked at the hideous expression on the head. He quietly said, “I’m sorry, I can’t save everyone.”

Dan Liang looked up at the night sky that had meteors occasionally streaking across it. He sighed and said, “Sacrificing a person to save more than a dozen people. Is such righteousness correct?”

Neither the night sky, nor the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake could answer him, much less the head that had lost its life.

“Right.” Dan Liang answered his own question.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake was moving at an extremely fast speed. In a few seconds, it closed in on the escaping convicts. Terrified screams filled the entire night sky.

“Death Hypnagogia.” Dan Liang sighed as he said those two

words gently.

Before he finished speaking, the head he was embracing suddenly laughed. It flew into the sky and in mid air, it suddenly exploded. Simultaneously, a gigantic phantom image of the head appeared in mid air. A pair of hideous and terrifying eyes stared at the advancing Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake.

“Roar!”

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake roared and suddenly fell to its side. The eyes on the tiger head closed slowly, while a calm and rhythmic breathing could be heard from its nostrils.

The Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake fell asleep?

...

Dan Liang was a Psyker. He had a superpower known as “Death Hypnagogia”.

The moment his superpower was awoken, Dan Liang understood the meaning behind his superpower’s name. He also knew what sort of life he would experience in the future.

Like every superpower, “Death Hypnagogia” had the three elements of function, condition and limitation.

Its function was extremely powerful. It could hypnotize a target much stronger than him in a very short amount of time. Although the effect of hypnotization was easily removed as it made the target fall into light sleep, it could be used in an extremely terrifying manner.

However, the condition behind “Death Hypnagogia” was even more shocking—death was the only condition that could trigger the superpower. Furthermore, it was not only a typical death. A head from a recently dead person had to be sacrificed to trigger “Death Hypnagogia”.

With such a superpower, Dan Liang was destined to be a companion of Death.

“Kind Dan Liang? Heh, my hands are already stained with sin.”

Dan Liang gave a self-mocking laugh. He lay down in the middle of the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake’s fur, watching the starless sky that occasionally had meteors streak across. He slowly spaced out.

Naturally, he had killed before. He had done it not only once, ten times, or even a hundred times. The trigger condition for “Death Hypnagogia” was having a fresh head as, while “Death Hypnagogia” was the best method to raise his Hero rankings. As such, he rose from the lowest F Class Hero to a C Class Hero. His wealth, reputation and status were completely different as a result, but the sins he accumulated were immense. By betraying his companions, beheading the heads of other Heroes in order to complete “Death Hypnagogia”, he had faked the heroic deaths of

his companions. All of this became everything he had in life, the only meaning to his life.

It went on until he met a woman. The woman had seen through his guise, but she had shielded him at a critical moment with her own body. She clearly had the opportunity to escape by herself, but she had resolutely rushed to save the injured him.

Before her death.

He asked, “Why did you save me?”

She answered, “We are Heroes. Saving people in danger is our responsibility, isn’t it?”

He continued asking, “Even if they are scum?”

She nodded her head gently. With a terse “En”, she slowly closed her eyes.

Then, he cut off her head and lived on.

“You are really foolish and naive.”

Dan Liang smiled gently into the sky. “But I like that.”

Every superpower had its function, condition and limitation. And

“Death Hypnagogia”‘s usage limitation was—Being three meters within the sleeping target, or the target would be awoken.

Hence, Dan Liang could not immediately leave even though the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake could wake at any moment.

“The feeling of risking one’s life to save a bunch of scum sure f*cking feels screwed up!”

Dan Liang ruthlessly cursed before smiling gently. He said as if he was nearly dreaming, “But if I didn’t do that, I will feel that your death wasn’t worth it.”

...

...

While Dan Liang was believing that he had saved the convicts, the convicts had realized that the astral beast was not chasing after them. Although they believed that they had been finally saved, they would have realized a cruel reality if they were to look from high in the sky.

The direction in which the convicts were heading in was where a Chimera was. They would encounter it if they carried on running for a few more minutes!

The convicts naturally did not know that they were heading to their deaths. They were only running with all they had, thankful

that they had survived. There was a slight feeling of appreciation for Dan Liang, but not much. Maybe in the future, when they were drinking as buddies, they would mention this fool who self-proclaimed himself as a Hero and cheer “long live the fool”.

The running crowd did not realize that there was a black cloud floating in mid air, hidden in the dark night. The dark cloud hid the Light, concealing two figures.

In fact, the duo had appeared above this land for some time now. They had seen everything, be it Dan Liang’s “kind” sacrifice, or the ugly struggles of the convicts. Even Delian and Hongmei’s heartless departure was seen by them.

With things developing so far, the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake would wake up at any moment. When the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake failed to see the darn “ants”, it would definitely vent its anger on the “louse” on its head. Dan Liang could be said to be in grave danger. As for those convicts, they would soon encounter the waiting Chimera. The tragedy was about to happen, and someone in the black cloud could no longer watch this coldly by the sidelines.

“Can you save...” The youth’s voice that had a hint of anticipation came from the black cloud.

“Save...who? That Hero? Or those convicts?” A girl’s voice that seemed void of emotions interrupted the youth’s words.

“Of course it’s...” The youth was suddenly stunned mid sentence.

His breathing stagnated as he fell into deep thought.

“The self-sacrificial Hero or the selfish convicts. It seems natural and right to choose the Hero, but what if it’s a comparison between a single life and more than ten lives?”

The girl said, “So here comes the question. If I give you the power to save one side, a Hero or more than ten convicts, who would you choose to save?”

It might be due to righteousness, personal feelings or maybe a strong principled stance towards right and wrong, but the question was—which side would you choose when the quality and quantity of life is in conflict?

“Whichever side you choose, I’ll save that side. So, make your choice, Shi Xiaobai.”

Chapter 52: Holmes. Shi Xiaobai

Everyone had a scale in their hearts. It measured so-called righteousness, but when life of different quantity and qualities were placed on the opposite ends of the scale, the standards of measuring righteousness was different depending on the person.

A number of people would treat life as a cold, lifeless number. They would assign salvation to the larger number, while the smaller number would be sacrificed. They would rationally calculate and obtain a final result with the highest number, and stick strictly to it.

And there were others who assigned different weights to different lives. A person's utility in life would determine whether they would be sacrificed or saved. These people would emotionally determine the utility of a life before rationally abandoning the one with least utility.

When overlaying the two different value systems into the question Shi Xiaobai was facing, the former would choose to save the convicts while the latter would choose to save Dan Liang.

Then, what choice would Shi Xiaobai make? Or instead, where did Shi Xiaobai's moral compass lie?

Kali watched Shi Xiaobai with interest. Although they were hidden in a black cloud, the black cloud was internally filled with light, so Kali could clearly see Shi Xiaobai's expression.

“Only two choices?” Shi Xiaobai contemplated for a moment. Before he gave an answer, he responded with a question.

Kali was stunned for a moment before she asked with a smile, “You are thinking of saving both sides?”

“No!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately pointed his finger in a particular direction. With a solemn expression, he said, “This King wants to save...it!”

Kali traced Shi Xiaobai’s fingers and saw a ginger cat walking across a broken pillar.

In a land of destruction that resembled hell, why was there a cat walking so carefreely?

No, that’s not the point. The point was—the life Shi Xiaobai wanted to save was this cat?

“Don’t tell me that when you first asked me the question...it was to save this cat?” Kali could not help but think of this possibility.

“Of course!” Shi Xiaobai nodded seriously.

Kali’s immediately blushed as she realized she had cut Shi Xiaobai off, and how she had taken the liberty to say a bunch of

“nonsense” that she found profound. Had she been the one overthinking things?

But at the same time, her heart sank slightly. The reason she made Shi Xiaobai make the choice was clearly to see his take on righteousness, and how he decided on matters regarding sacrifice and salvation. She never expected that given a choice between humans and cats, Shi Xiaobai would choose the cat.

Was Shi Xiaobai a person with such a heart of stone?

“Why don’t you want to save the humans, but instead choose to save a cat?” Kali wiped the smile off her face and turned serious. Since she was his mentor, she naturally had to understand the situation, as well as guide him towards proper moral values.

“One side wants to die, while one side deserves to die. So why should I save them?” Shi Xiaobai similarly looked serious. He looked even more serious than Kali.

Upon hearing this, Kali ruminated over his words. The glimmer in her eye that had converged immediately sprung back, turning more intense.

“I want to hear your thoughts. Can you tell me?” Kali smiled with a blink, like a girl yearning to listen to a fairytale.

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily startled. His eyes swept the devastated land, before looking at the sky-watching Dan Liang and

the desperately running convicts. He then took a deep breath.

“This King does not know what sins these convicts have previously done; nor do I know if they feel any gratefulness to that Hero, much less know if they would turn over a new leaf if they were to survive. But there is one thing This King knows with certainty. They have never helped each other. While they were running, they would pull their own companions down, entrapping others.

“They are selfish creatures, maggots that yield to their instinct. If they are saved, they might very likely harm others because of their personal greed or desires. The reason why Darkness is Darkness, is because it constantly devours the Light. If saving the Darkness gives humanity a gloomy shade, why bother?”

“No one forced them to run towards death. Their direction in life and the direction they are currently running towards are made by their own choice. The reason they will die is because—they deserve dying. This King does not save people deserving of death!”

Shi Xiaobai finished speaking with a heavy tone before pausing. He then turned his head towards the figure lying on the Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake. Shi Xiaobai's eyes were somewhat in a trance.

Kali kept nodding as she listened to him speak while constantly murmuring a “hmm”. When she noticed Shi Xiaobai stop, she urged him to continue, “Carry on?”

“He lives a tired life. Death might be a form of release for him.”

Shi Xiaobai pointed at Dan Liang and said, “This King does not know what he has experienced. Just now, I heard from you that his superpower is called ‘Death Hypnagogia’ and using it requires a fresh head to be sacrificed. And from the feeling he gave This King when he beheaded the convict, intuition tells This King that his motion is very smooth and honed, as though he has rehearsed it thousands of times.”

“So This King believes that he has killed before, and has even killed many. As he needs fresh heads, the ones he has killed are not only enemies. A portion of them might be his partners, friends, or even closed ones.

“So why would such a cold and cruel person throw his life away to save a bunch of incorrigible human scum?”

Shi Xiaobai turned his head at Kali and asked her softly.

“Why?” Kali noticed that Shi Xiaobai’s face looked much more handsome because of his seriousness. Being lazy to think, she directly asked him.

“Because he has been redeemed.”

Shi Xiaobai found Kali’s gaze odd, as he hurriedly turned to face the ground. He spoke in a low voice. “He was redeemed by someone or by something. He realized the errors of his ways and

regrets his sins. He desires to leave the darkness and walk into the light. When he saw those convicts, it reminded him of his past self, so he believes that if he doesn't rescue those convicts, then him receiving redemption would appear pathetic and ridiculous."

"The reason why he saves the convicts is indeed substantial, but it is not enough for him to risk his life. Then, why did he insist on doing so?"

Kali held her face and asked with a mischievous grin, "Why?"

Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with Kali's reaction as he carried on. "Because he wishes to die. There are many ways of redemption. Saving these convicts would not even be considered 'redemption'. He should know very well that if he lives on, he can save even more kinder people. So despite knowing that he would die, he still stubbornly saves those convicts. The reason is very simple. He has a death wish all this time"

"He hates himself because of his life of sin, so for him, living is equivalent to a nightmare. In that case, death becomes a form of release. He wants to die, but he doesn't want to die so simply. He has been waiting for the most suitable way of dying."

"If saving those convicts is equivalent to saving his past self, and for that give up his life, then his redemption would no longer be so laughable. Would his death then become great and touching?"

"Maybe he might experience what the person who redeemed him in the past felt. What sort of feeling would it be?"

“For the reasons mentioned, This King does not think he wants to live. So why should This King obstruct his release when he wants to die?”

Shi Xiaobai smiled after he finished speaking. It looked somewhat wry.

“Nice!” Kali could not help but give Shi Xiaobai a big thumbs up.

“Tch, back when This King completed numerous mystery genre games, This King was even given the title of ‘Holmes.Shi Xiaobai’ by others. Back then...”

Shi Xiaobai began counting his former achievements with a high-spirited grin. However, as he spoke, he slowly turned silent, as a repressive atmosphere seemed to emanate around him.

“So...none of them shall be saved?” Kali asked with a soft voice.

“Nope!” Shi Xiaobai’s voice trembled slightly.

Kali sighed. Even if Shi Xiaobai’s reasoning was very good, or even if he was on the mark with everything he said —that there was truly no need to save Dan Liang and the convicts—for a thirteen year old child to coldly watch with his teeth gritted others heading towards their deaths, it definitely felt bad, right?

“Hey, elder sister pixie, you are very strong, right?” Shi Xiaobai suddenly asked.

Kali was momentarily stunned. She did not know how she should feel with the addressment “elder sister pixie”. She was a pixie originally, and she was not irked by Shi Xiaobai’s use of “elder sister”, but she was after all already...Pui! Matters of age should not be mentioned again! Furthermore, she was Shi Xiaobai’s mentor.

Upon thinking of this, Kali suddenly realized that she had yet to tell Shi Xiaobai that she was his mentor.

“Yes, very strong.” Kali decided to temporarily ignore the “elder sister pixie” salutation.

“Compared to baldy uncle?” Shi Xiaobai’s expression could not be seen as he had his head lowered.

Kali was stunned for a few moments before she realized Shi Xiaobai was referring to One-Pun. She immediately beamed. “I’m stronger.”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly raised his head, and said loudly with eyes filled with hope, “Then can you kill the two monsters? Ultraman elder sister!”

Ultraman elder sister?

Before Kali was able to digest what Shi Xiaobai had said, she was stunned by this strange salutation. What was Ultraman?

“Don’t misunderstand!”

Shi Xiaobai’s cheeks were somewhat red, but his voice sounded very serious. He spoke in all seriousness, “It isn’t that This King wants to save these foolish humans, but since This King has arrived in this world, then this world would eventually bow before This King. Every inch of land on this world shall belong to This King! These few blind monsters dared to wreck havoc on This King’s fief, so they must be punished!”

“Cough, This King is definitely not doing this to save them, but to uphold the dignity of the Crown!”

Kali finally understood Shi Xiaobai’s intentions. She immediately burst into laughter and stretched out her hands to pinch Shi Xiaobai’s cheeks. She said loudly, “Why are you this cute?”

“Little rascal, clearly you have seen through things much better than anyone, but you are more soft-hearted than anyone.”

Having his cheeks ‘brutalized’ by Kali, Shi Xiaobai naturally could not stand such ‘molestation’. He quickly pushed Kali’s hand away and covered his face, and said in an aggrieved manner, “Will you?”

He looked like a child asking for a toy.

“Yes, I will.”

Kali retracted her hand and looked down at the convicts who were about to encounter the Chimera. She said softly, “I’m not doing it to save anyone, but for you.”

Author’s Note: Those who said Shi Xiaobai is an idiot, go face the wall and reflect on yourselves! This King, Shi Xiaobai, might be funny, but he is not stupid! Hmph!

Chapter 53: The Sudden Upset

Since One-Pun could punch a Chimera to pulp, then what sort of power did Kali, who claimed to be stronger than One-Pun, possess?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but feel a sense of anticipation as he looked intently at the girl beside him. Her skin was white and tender like a newborn baby's and a tight black dress clung to her body, while her purple hair reached down to her waist. Standing there in the dark cloud's light, she looked like a gentle pixie. She did not look like a mighty figure that could easily kill astral beasts.

Kali turned to face the world and gently said, "I say, let there be light."

Her manner of speech was nothing special, and her tone was extremely calm. However, when she said those words—the sky lit up!

"The sky has lit up?" Shi Xiaobai exclaimed.

Without any warning, the process happened at an astounding speed. At the instant the sky lit up, it was as though dawn had arrived in a blink of an eye. The dazzling light seemed like a gigantic brush that suddenly swept from the ends of his vision towards him, turning the dark night sky instantly to a clear, blue sky.

"Asteroid Descent!"

Kali softly spoke those two words before turning her head towards Shi Xiaobai. She blinked with a mischievous smile. “Tonight’s meteor shower isn’t pretty, why don’t we take a look at an asteroid shower?”

Asteroid shower?

Shi Xiaobai was still shocked by the sudden disappearance of the night, and the sudden appearance of day. When he heard Kali’s words, he became cognizant of a possibility and immediately widened his eyes. His guess immediately became reality as he heard a series of loud noises.

It was the sound of objects rubbing against the wind that blew against them.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the source of the sound by lifting his head. Far up in the sky, there was one, no, a bunch of gigantic brown boulders rapidly falling to the ground. The intense friction between the boulders and the air emitted a blinding glare that made his body feel like it would spontaneously combust just from watching it.

This was an asteroid shower?

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom....”

Hundred of gigantic asteroids filled the sky, like a heavy

downpour. Smashing into the ground, there was a series of explosions erupting all across the land. Following that were tragic cries or roars, as though all hell had broke loose..

The sleeping Silver Scaled Tigerhead Snake was immediately split into four pieces by three asteroids. The severed tiger head cried out violently as it tossed and turned, but soon, it closed its eyes with a whimper. As for Dan Liang, who had been hugging onto a strand of fur, he had managed to survive.

The Chimera, which the convicts were heading towards, had already opened its large mouth, but three asteroids smashed it to a pulp. Its body was buried by numerous asteroids, and after a few seconds of struggling, it died.

Similar scenes constantly happened all across Southern Gold City. The sudden brightening of the sky and the falling of the asteroid rain became the nightmare of the Astral Calamity Beasts that wrecked havoc on the land. Countless Astral Calamity Beast died immediately .

“Phew, it seems I went overboard. Although I killed more than two hundred astral beasts, three people were killed.”

Kali spat out her tongue and whispered, “It looks like I need to strengthen my control.”

She had brought dawn upon the world with a single sentence, and another sentence to let asteroids rain down on the ground. She had even targeted those asteroids at the astral beasts, f*cking

killing more than 200 astral beasts and only accidentally killed three humans.

Yet her conclusion was only—her control needed to be strengthened?

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned green with envy.

...

...

The sudden daylight and the falling of the asteroid rain that killed more than 200 astral beasts was a stunning but true story. Other than Shi Xiaobai, who witnessed it with his very eyes, no one would believe that it was done by mortal means. Even though superpowers were considered the “ability to let your imagination go wild”, the power that approached that of the gods was too absurd. Hence, the first thing the mass media did was to label this as “Heaven's Grace”.

Heaven's Grace came quickly and disappeared quickly. After the asteroid rain, the sky darkened once again. The dark night fell back onto this world, and at that instant, a meteor that did not know any better streaked across the night sky, crashing into the land. The Heroes, who had their Hero points stolen by the asteroids, immediately surrounded the astral beasts.

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai and Kali had already returned to

Riko's apartment.

Shi Xiaobai sat on the sofa with his head down, pondering over something. Ever since he witnessed Kali's incredible power, Shi Xiaobai had fallen into silence.

Kali similarly sat on the sofa, a body's distance away from Shi Xiaobai. She gently frowned because Shi Xiaobai's reaction gave her a headache. Anyone, who saw such power that subverted all knowledge, would indeed be at a loss, and might even lose their faith.

Especially for a youth with eighth-grade syndrome, who constantly threw terms like demons and gods around, if he really saw the power of demons and gods, with the fantasies in his mind turning to reality, would his faith in those fantasies be shaken?

Kali could not help but feel somewhat worried.

“If I can learn a move or two from her, wouldn't This King be...”

In fact, what Shi Xiaobai was feeling distressed over was—how to learn a move or two from Kali without “becoming her disciple”.

Just thinking of the day he could wave his hand and say “This King says let there be light” and have the world light up, the appearance of dawn, Shi Xiaobai found his eyes burning. His heart was about to leap out.

Kali naturally did not know what Shi Xiaobai was thinking. She felt like she needed to counsel Shi Xiaobai as she was after all his mentor in name. Oh right, she still needed to find an opportunity to tell Shi Xiaobai about the mentorship.

After deciding on what to say in her mind, Kali said, “Shi Xiaobai, do you know why I address myself as ‘I’?”

This was an extremely odd question, as using ‘I’ to address oneself was very natural. However, if the questionee was Shi Xiaobai, it was different. This young boy, who constantly addressed himself as “This King”, was extremely sensitive towards such a question.

Unsurprisingly, Shi Xiaobai immediately looked up and asked, “Why?”

“Why? Because I am myself!”

As usual, Kali revealed an enchanting smile. In front of Shi Xiaobai, she was like a kind girl-next-door. However, her current smile was as bright as the sun, so dazzling that it was blinding to the eyes.

“I say let there be light, and the world would be illuminated by light. People venerate me as a god upon seeing this, so why should I call myself ‘god’? With a simple thought, I can summon asteroids to descend. Even Astral Calamity Beasts would have to prostrate before me, so why do I need to call myself ‘queen’?”

“I am myself, the one and only one. I do not need any form of restriction to address myself. Maybe one day, I’ll become a god, or a demon, or a queen. But that is still me, I am still the same me. I will always be me, forever.”

“How others address me, praise me, curse me, that is their business. For me, I am myself. I want to remember this point, so I choose to address myself as ‘I’.”

As Kali looked into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes, she asked softly, “Do you understand?”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent and slowly lowered his head. The fist he placed behind his back tightened secretly.

He understood all the principles.

Yes, she possessed true strength. There was no need to emphasize her existence, so she only needed to address herself with “I”. She only needed to believe in herself.

However, he wasn’t her. He did not possess the strength she had. He was just a weakling. He was powerless in front of a calamity fiend or an astral beast, so he was unable to believe the he who addressed himself as “I”.

Shi Xiaobai clenched his fist tighter. His heart felt like it was being seized, making him feel extremely uncomfortable.

“However, Shi Xiaobai, I was once the same as you.”

Suddenly, a gentle voice came out from Kali as she whispered, “Ten thousand years ago, I was helpless in front of the calamity at the end of days. I witnessed my species destroyed, and the withering of the World Tree. Then, I began to address myself as ‘This Queen’.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai suddenly looked up. An indescribable flicker of light could be seen in his eyes, as if he was full of anticipation.

Under that fiery gaze, Kali felt the ice melt in her heart. She said shyly, “So, when I first heard you address yourself as ‘This King’, I found it truly affectionate. It was as though I was looking at my past self. Giggles Actually, back then, I did not only address myself as ‘This Queen’. Things like ‘This Esteemed One’, ‘This Empress’, ‘This Lady’, ‘This Goddess’... I have addressed myself using all of them. Now that I think of it, I feel a bit embarrassed and shy about it, but I also feel a sense of warmth.”

“That’s why, Shi Xiaobai, although in the eyes of others, you who call yourself ‘This King’ might sound silly, but to me, you are very cute!”

As Kali spoke, she could not help but stretch out her hand to pinch Shi Xiaobai’s cheeks. Shi Xiaobai immediately raised his hands to block her, but after hearing Kali’s bell-like laughter, he could not help but suffuse a smile on his lips.

Kali stopped messing around, as she said earnestly, “I understand, Shi Xiaobai. I understand why you call yourself ‘This King’. It is not because of hubris, nor is it because of narcissism, much less you indulging in fantasy.”

“It’s just because the person who calls himself ‘I’ is just too weak. Even your most valuable things cannot be protected, so there is doubt, disappointment and finally, abandonment.”

“Calling yourself ‘This King’ is not to make others acknowledge or believe you, even less do you care if they call you King. It’s just to remind yourself all the time how weak you are. It’s just to ensure that you do not waver from becoming a ‘King’ that is able to protect everything.”

“You are doing so just to believe in yourself!”

Kali’s voice was as soft as the gentle wind in the early spring, as though it could melt all the snow in the world.

Shi Xiaobai was truly dumbfounded this time. Neither was his eyes widened nor his mouth gaping, instead, his eyes felt a tug at them, as his chest began feeling warm, but he did not know what to say.

No one knew that Shi Xiaobai had always referred to himself as “I” on Earth. Even when he first came to this different world, his conversation with Little Fatso used the word “I”. Only after he encountered the calamity fiend, Sahadun, and experienced what

was known as despair, did he realize how weak he was. Just as Kali said, he was feeling doubt, disappointment, and eventually abandonment.

After a heart-wrenching cry while hugging Little Fatso, he began calling himself “This King”. Despite the repeated protests of Riko or how others thought of him as an “idiot”, he still resolutely called himself “This King”.

No one knew about these matters. Similarly, Kali did not know either, but she knew better than anyone. She had so easily touched the soft spot in his heart.

“But in my eyes, you are not weak. You are stronger than anyone, so Shi Xiaobai, in the future when you are in front of me, address yourself as ‘I’, alright?”

Kali’s voice was very soft, almost to the point of a whisper.

However, her words were heavy that sank directly to the bottom of Shi Xiaobai’s heart.

If the world truly could be touched, then it was probably this feeling?

Two streams of hot tears flowed out of Shi Xiaobai’s eyes.

“En!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head, crying, as though he had suffered for a very long period of time. Finally, he let it out like a child.

Kali sighed as she reached her hand out to wipe the tears on Shi Xiaobai's cheeks. She asked softly, "Youth, do you desire power?"

Kali thought that if he wanted power, she was willing to give it to him.

This was the third time Kali asked this question, but the mood was already completely different.

This was the third time Shi Xiaobai heard this question. He no longer felt the same. Did he want power?

If power could allow him to protect the things he treasured, then, yes, he desired it!

Shi Xiaobai turned agape, and was about to shout out the word "yes", but suddenly, he could not shout at all.

This was because time had come to a standstill. The world was fixed at that moment.

"Make your choice, youth!"

The fiery voice and the black text appeared without any warning

once again!

[Choice 1: In one minute, say three lines that mock flat chests. The target has to be Kali, and she has to hear it clearly!]

[Choice 2: In one minute, say three lines that profess your love. The target has to be Kali, and she has to hear it clearly!]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “Mischief-style choice” where only the choice is performed. No reward.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

Author’s Note: A foreshadowing that has existed for about 50 chapters has finally been revealed. I feel so good now! Furthermore, you can guess how Shi Xiaobai will choose. Remember, don’t use your usual way of thinking to guess my intentions!

Chapter 54: Cherish Life, Stay Clear From Girlfriends!

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice constantly resounded in his mind like a demon’s chanting.

Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded. This sort of mischief-style Absolute Choice had appeared without any warning, catching him off guard.

Mock her flat chest or express love?

Shi Xiaobai’s gaze could not help but land on Kali’s chest. Under the gothic-style dress, was what truly looked like a flat plane. However, since Kali had the appearance of a 12–13 year old girl, she could even be called a loli. A flat chest did not seem like a hard-to-accept fact for a loli, right? The only thing unknown was what sort of reaction would he receive if he mocked her for it.

Shi Xiaobai was actually not very interested in the breasts of women. He knew even less about a girl’s heart, but intuition told him that mocking certain parts of a female’s body was a very dangerous thing.

Shi Xiaobai always trusted his intuition, so his gaze landed on the other choice—profess his love for Kali, which was also known as a confession.

The love between men and women was something the ignorant Shi Xiaobai did not understand. Even if he did understand it, he would probably scoff at it. However, Shi Xiaobai knew what confession was very well. He even had a close encounter with it.

Actually, he was still in junior high school back on Earth. Cough. Shi Xiaobai believed that to become the lord of Earth, he had to first grasp the culture of Earth, so despite playing truant often, he was still barely considered a junior high school student. Back in junior high school, he had a good friend who played games with him, wait no, a war buddy who conquered worlds with him.

His war buddy's name was Yang Wei. Yang Wei would, on average, make a confession once every three days. His confession would be directed at a different person each time. Every time, he would be nicely rejected and given the "Nice Guy Card". Hence, for 365 days in a year, a third of the time, Yang Wei was nursing a crush, and the other third of the time was him in pursuit, while the last third was him in an out-of-love state.

Yang Wei frequently boasted about his confession exploits to Shi Xiaobai, but he would always switch the confessor and the receiver. He would tell Shi Xiaobai that there would be more than a hundred girls confessing every year, and he would have to harden his heart to reject them. He felt like he had let down so many people, constantly blaming the Heavens for making him so handsome and so full of charm.

Shi Xiaobai did not know any better and found it quite impressive even though he did not know what Yang Wei meant,

but he did not place much weight in Yang Wei's words. He only knew that his war buddy was craved by thousands.

However, there was a day when Shi Xiaobai received a confession.

Shi Xiaobai had already forgotten the name of the girl who made the confession, but he remembered that she was prettier than the other girls in class. She was supposedly some school belle and came from a rich family. Her results always ranked her amongst the top, and she would often participate in competitions during physical education classes and become some kind of champion.

However, the two of them had nearly never talked before. Shi Xiaobai could only ask "why?"

The girl said that she was once lost when she was young and that it was he who comforted and accompanied her. She felt warm and at ease, so from then onwards, she always paid attention to him, and slowly began to like him. Every time she saw him, her heart would palpitate, her ears turn red, unable to resist her feelings.

Shi Xiaobai was a bit startled. The confession had happened too suddenly, so he did not know what to do. He did not know what would happen after he accepted the confession, nor did he know what would happen if he rejected it.

Shi Xiaobai immediately thought of his experienced war buddy, Yang Wei, so he did not answer the girl on the spot. Instead, he termed it "wait till the boundary of the world line is stabilized

before we carry on this sacred conversation”.

After that, Shi Xiaobai immediately found Yang Wei and asked for his comments.

Upon hearing this, Yang Wei fell into silence for a long period of time. It was like the suppressive feeling of the calm before the storm.

The first sentence Yang Wei said was a heavy question. He asked, “White Eventide Heretic King, do you still remember your dreams? The dream of ‘conquering Earth, saving the world, ruling out all evil, leading the evil gods towards the white eventide, leaving only justice in the world’, do you remember!?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai was stunned before he said loudly, “Of course!”

Yang Wei nodded his head with satisfaction and said with a heavy voice, “Do you know why over all these years, I have cruelly rejected the confession of each and every girl? It’s because I do not want to ruin my dreams because of this! White Eventide Heretic King, do you know that if you accept the confession, she will become your girlfriend? Do you know how terrifying a biological creature a girlfriend is?”

Shi Xiaobai gulped and shook his head. “No...No, I don’t.”

Yang Wei sneered, “Girlfriends are the most terrifying demons in

the world. She would take you shopping, eating, watching movies, walk the streets, engage in lovey-dovey acts, rolling in the sheets... She will occupy a large portion of your time, and when you are playing games...I mean, when you are conquering other worlds, her phone calls will be like a cursed chant that constantly rings. Even if your ears are hot from holding the phone, you would still have to perk your mind up and carry on a conversation on some boring topic with her. Your life would lose all its meaning in meaningless chatter, doing mediocre deeds.”

“Also, every month, there will be times when she would enter rage mode. When that happens, if you hit her vulnerable mental spot, she might destroy your world in a rage, devastating your spirit, demolishing your dreams, but she is your girlfriend, so you have to abandon the dignity of the Crown to coax her, to make her happy. Even if she makes you use the Seven Star Holy Sword as a torch, you have to do it...”

Yang Wei used words that Shi Xiaobai could understand, and constantly grumbled over the terrifying faces of the biological creatures known as “girlfriend”. The more Shi Xiaobai heard, the more alarmed and afraid he became. He said with a trembling voice, “Is it...so terrifying?”

Yang Wei sighed heavily and said, “This is only the damage the girlfriend would deal you. There would be armies of single men, the [FFF Inquisition](#) that will burn down any heterosexual relationships...Those enemies lurking in the darkness will constantly interfere with your life and take your time, preventing you from feeling a peace of mind to fulfill your dreams.”

“So, White Eventide Heretic King! If you do not want to waste your time and become a mediocre mortal, if you want to hold on resolutely to your dreams, then I have to advise you—Cherish life, stay clear from girlfriends!”

These words quaked Shi Xiaobai’s pure mind, making him completely realize the terror of “girlfriends”; hence, he was determined to stay clear from girlfriends.

However, before he had a chance to carry on his “sacred conversation” or reject the girl, he had suddenly crossed into this alternate world.

...

...

“Cherish life, keep clear from girlfriends!”

Shi Xiaobai recalled Yang Wei’s famous quote and as his gaze landed on that option, he felt an internal struggle.

“If This King were to confess, what happens if she agrees? Then wouldn’t she become This King’s girlfriend? No, who can resist the Confession of a King. She will definitely agree to it. If This King were to confess, she would then become a horrible biological creature known as ‘girlfriend’.”

Shi Xiaobai felt worried. What Kali had said had moved him, and

he felt a close intimacy with the unimaginably powerful pixie girl. The way she spoke made Shi Xiaobai feel like she was a confidant.

However, to make Kali his girlfriend?

Shi Xiaobai slightly recalled Yang Wei's description of girlfriends and immediately rejected this thought. Girlfriends were too terrifying, so Shi Xiaobai found it completely unacceptable!

Then...choose the first choice?

Shi Xiaobai looked at the other option—mock flat chests.

Intuition told Shi Xiaobai that this choice was very dangerous.

The intuition of danger and the terrifying impression of “girlfriend” kept colliding in Shi Xiaobai's mind as a struggle ensued. No victor was produced immediately.

“Ten, nine, eight...” The long expected cold voice boomed. It was the sound of the limited time countdown.

The danger Shi Xiaobai felt from this voice intensified by several times.

He had to make a decision before the countdown!

Then....

“Mock flat chests.”

Compared to his dangerous intuition, the terrifying impression seemed more perceivable, so Shi Xiaobai made a choice he didn't wish to at the last moment.

...

Time proceeded, but Shi Xiaobai's state of mind was completely different.

Although his face was still stained with tears from being deeply moved and Kali's soft and warm hands were still wiping his cheeks, Shi Xiaobai was at this moment distressed—how should he mock Kali's chest? This was not a simple matter.

Kali's expression was still extremely gentle. In her eyes, Shi Xiaobai was like her past self. He was an obstinate but cute person, a Light that made people feel fondness for him, and a Darkness that made people cherish him tenderly.

She had butt in originally because she could not stand the actions of the upper echelons of [Gaia]. She had only wanted to take the spot of mentor, but just in name.

However, she was now very happy that she had done so on a whim. If not for that, she would not have encountered this youth

that she felt so much affection for. And for this, she was willing to teach him some things, giving him the power he desired.

Noticing that Shi Xiaobai was not replying because he was in a daze, she asked a fourth time.

“Youth, do you desire power?”

Shi Xiaobai, who was still considering how to mock her flat chest, suddenly had an idea when he heard her question. With a flash of brilliance, or of course, you could say it was a brain aneurysm, Shi Xiaobai replied, “No, I desire boobs.”

Then he looked at Kali’s chest and sighed, “But you have none!”

Author’s Note: Wahaha! Do you think there is a joke This King cannot use!? This King’s brain is without limit!

Chapter 55: This Sacrifice Is Too Great!

His tear-stained cheeks had yet to dry, and his voice even sounded nasal, but when Shi Xiaobai said, “no, I desire boobs, but you have none”, it sounded like Kali’s flat chest was so flat that pushed him beyond tears.

“Are...you serious?”

Kali’s hand immediately froze as she looked incredulously at Shi Xiaobai. She noticed Shi Xiaobai was staring right at her chest with all seriousness, with an extremely solemn expression. That look was completely at the limits of seriousness.

Kali received her answer.

This was neither a joke, nor a mockery, but illustrating a very objective fact. The fact was irrefutable, impossible for anyone to repress one’s anger.

How many years has it been since she sent the last fool, who mocked her flat chest, into the deep abyss?

It was a long, long time ago. It was so distant in the past that she had forgotten this lamentable fact. Due to the World Tree’s powers, she had stopped growing, but she had always desired for a mature and well-developed body! Even though it was a laughable form of self-satisfaction, nor was it to please anyone, she similarly wished the sacred grounds on her chest had the right to be proud.

It was a woman's nature!

But why? Why was the person who ripped this scar open, Shi Xiaobai? It had been so long since she “liked” a person, so long since she had the pleasure of talking to someone, so long since she placed someone in the soft spot in the deepest recesses of her heart.

Looking at him felt like she was looking at her past self. Hearing him call himself “This King” made her think of the warmth from those cold, desolate days. His existence in this boring world seemed like the sudden blooming of a wild flower in an eternal winter!

She even believed that in the next short period of a hundred years, her life would even turn interesting because of him.

However, the beautiful fantasy that was nearing on reality was so easily shattered. Like a floating bubble, it gently burst.

But why, why did you have to be the one who burst it?

Anger, embarrassment, disappointment... A potpourri of emotions intertwined themselves in Kali's heart as it suddenly transmuted into a cold aura that emanated through the entire room.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was staring at Kali's chest in order to organize his words. By the time he reacted, a cold aura had crept up to his body. It was as though he was enclosed in an ice chamber, from

head to toe.

“Sigh.”

With a gentle sigh, Kali suddenly turned around to merge into the light, disappearing from the room.

“Pa!”

The sound of a thud was heard from the couch. Looking down at it, Shi Xiaobai noticed that at the spot where Kali sat, there was a droplet of water dampening the sofa, turning it into an ink-like wet stain.

There was no rebuttal, no cursing or reprimand, not even a single word. Kali gently turned around and left, leaving behind a teardrop.

Why did this happen?

“I never expected This King to enjoy such a high position in her heart.”

Shi Xiaobai very quickly came to a conclusion. Looking at the wet stain on the sofa, Shi Xiaobai’s heart suddenly felt heavy.

She was obviously angry, but she had left silently. Why?

This was because the disappointment and the despondency she felt reached their limits, so much so that her anger and embarrassment could be ignored!

The more important the person, the more complete the disappointment one felt. It would result in increasingly neglect, or even choosing to disregard the person.

“When we meet in the future, we would probably be strangers, I guess?”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt a sense of loss. Although they had only known each other for less than an hour, the impression she gave him felt like they had known each other for several years. She listened carefully to his every word. She believed him, understood him, comforted him, and even treated the tender spot buried deep in his heart with affection.

She was like a confidant he had known for a very, very long time. A simple word, a simple smile, or even a gesture made him feel a comfort that came from the bottom of his heart. It was like being with her was a natural process, one that happened organically.

That feeling was truly very warm. He had already seen her as a friend in his heart.

But at this moment, Kali had left in disappointment. The bond between them was completely shattered with that teardrop. He was weak like an ant, while she was as powerful as the massive shape-shifting beast, Kun Peng. When the Kun Peng flew off, how

was an ant able to chase after it?

However, there was no way for time to repeat itself. Even if the matter was regrettable, it could only become memories, too late for one to feel regret.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice suddenly boomed as the familiar black text appeared once again.

[Choice 1: In one minute, say three lines that mock flat chests. The target has to be Kali, and she has to hear it clearly!]

[Choice 2: In one minute, say three lines that profess your love. The target has to be Kali, and she has to hear it clearly!]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “Mischief-style choice” where only the choice is performed. No reward.)

Time returned back to the moment the choices appeared. Kali’s fingers were still rested on Shi Xiaobai’s cheek. Her eye was filled with love and pity, and the warmth and fragrance from her body was just inches away.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned.

Who the f*ck said time wouldn't repeat itself?

Who said that regrettable matters could only become memories?
Too late for regret?

Pui! This King was feeling so many mixed emotions, and now it was all bullshit!

Darn you Absolute Choice, give This King's melancholic feelings back!

If time had not suspended, Shi Xiaobai's face would probably reveal the most brilliant and moving smile.

...

...

The choice required him to say three lines that mocked flat chest within a minute, and Shi Xiaobai only had the time to say one, hence he did not manage to fulfill the choice's condition, turning back time.

Shi Xiaobai had a chance to choose again.

Mocking flat chests or profess his love.

Shi Xiaobai was once again in a dilemma. Although time had repeated itself, the choice was still as difficult as ever, and was even more difficult than before.

If he were to mock her flat chest, Kali would leave in disappointment. They would then be strangers that would probably never meet again.

However, if he were to confess to Kali, she might very likely transform into the terrifying “girlfriend”. Yang Wei’s depiction of those nightmarish scenes could very likely turn into reality.

“Sigh, she thinks so highly of This King, so how can This King chill her heart? Girlfriend...isn’t it just a girlfriend? This King has never...never feared!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai felt like he was shouldering a great undertaking. To prevent Kali’s disappointment, he actually chose to sacrifice his own happiness by making Kali his girlfriend!

This meant that he would have to spare a large portion of his time in the future to accompany Kali shopping, eating, watching movies, walking the streets, engaging in lovey-dovey acts, rolling in sheets...

“This King sacrifices just too much!”

Shi Xiaobai lamented his great sacrifice and could not help but

praise himself for shouldering this huge undertaking.

Since he had made a choice, then the preparation for his confession speech needed to be done. He could not repeat the same mistake.

“Heh heh, how can the Confession of a King be done hastily. It has to be world-shaking. It has to dry up the seas, rot the rocks, turn the sky desolate and mar the land!”

Shi Xiaobai began to think hard over it. Thankfully, Yang Wei often flaunted the confession lines girls used at him. Shi Xiaobai had memorized a few that he found interesting, and now, he was able to use them.

“I got it!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes suddenly lit up, having filtered out the confession statement he liked the most.

“This King sacrifices just too much!”

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his mind, before choosing choice 2.

Author’s Note: You want to see a confession? Sure, This King will satisfy you! By the way, everyone, guess what happens after the confession is said. Hehe

Chapter 56: The Strongest Attack In History!

Kali gently wiped the tears from Shi Xiaobai's face as she recalled how she too had once cried so miserably. But back then, no one helped wipe the tears for her. If...if there was such a person back then who understood, comforted and encouraged her, how nice would it be?

With this thought in mind, the gentleness in Kali's heart turned even tenderer.

“Li, I finally understand why I returned from the cycles of reincarnation. It is all because of the machinations of fate.” Shi Xiaobai's gentle voice suddenly entered her ears.

Kali was stunned. Was “Li” referring to herself?

As she was dazed for a few moments, her right hand was lightly grasped by Shi Xiaobai. She did not pull away after a few moments of hesitation.

“That day, sealed in the chamber of ice, I suddenly heard the truth in your music.”

Shi Xiaobai grabbed Kali's soft hand with both his hands. His gaze was gentle and warm, just like a spring breeze.

“That night, I listened to the chanting of sutras, not for enlightenment, just for a trace of your scent.”

“That month, I spun all the prayer wheels, not for the release of souls, just for the touch of your fingertips.”

“That year, I crawled forward on the mountain path with long kowtows, not for pilgrimage, just for being close to your warmth.”

“That life, I crossed mountains, rivers and pagodas, not for reincarnation, but for an encounter with you somewhere during the journey!”

Shi Xiaobai took a step back and said softly, “After numerous cycles of reincarnation, I have finally met you. I am willing to give up the freedom of being alone, giving you half of my time, so as to exchange for half of your time.”

“Fate destined our fateful encounter, allowing us to form a lovers’ pact. Become my girlfriend, Li!”

The first half were lines from Yang Wei’s confession, while the second half was improvised by Shi Xiaobai. This was probably the most flamboyant confession in the world.

The moment Shi Xiaobai finished speaking, he heard the announcement “Absolute Choice completed” in his head which relieved him. However, he immediately tensed up again and looked at Kali with a perturbed expression. At that moment,

despite knowing that the Confession of a King was unstoppable, he still prayed that Kali would be tempted to reject the Confession of a King.

“Sorry, you are a nice person, but we aren’t compatible!”

Kali remained dazed for a moment before she suddenly shook her head coldly. She said it in a very cold voice.

Shi Xiaobai took a moment before he snapped out of his resulting daze. Kali’s word meant that she rejected the lovers’ pact, and had rejected being his girlfriend?

She actually rejected?

She actually could reject the sensational Confession of a King?

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai laughed!

“Looks like This King’s prayers worked. A miracle has happened!”

After recognizing Kali’s rejection as a miracle, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his entire being relaxed. Without having the worry from the Absolute Choice, and without a “girlfriend” to feel vexed over, life suddenly turned bright.

Shi Xiaobai beamed a glowing smile as he said to Kali with a

laugh, “I understand.”

...

...

Shi Xiaobai’s confession was very pompous, but after a moment of rumination from Kali, she could understand the poetic intricacies and feelings in it. She was somewhat touched, but she clearly wasn’t moved.

She had lived for so many years but had yet to be in a relationship. She had never held hands or kiss, naturally for her reasons.

Although she “liked” Shi Xiaobai, it was the “like” an adult had for a cute child. For Kali, Shi Xiaobai was just an ignorant child. Never once had she thought of a romantic relationship.

But Shi Xiaobai had confessed to her at this moment?

Having not known each other for more than an hour, love at first sight could explain his feelings, but the feeling was still too odd. Kali was initially surprised, thinking that Shi Xiaobai was just joking.

However, from Shi Xiaobai’s expression, he looked extremely sincere.

He fell in love with me just like that?

At the instant Kali generated such a thought, she immediately said the coldest of words—you are a nice person, but we aren't compatible!

After saying those words, Kali immediately lamented in her heart. She felt like she had been too direct. Shi Xiaobai was a good child, so she should have rejected him nicely!

However, Shi Xiaobai's reaction had went far beyond Kali's expectations. He was smiling, and smiling ever so brightly.

He could smile even after being given the "Nice Guy Card"?

"He must be forcing a laugh!"

With this thought, Kali immediately felt some guilt. The more sincere Shi Xiaobai smiled, the more she felt his pain that resulted from putting on a front. She had really made things difficult for him. To prevent her from feeling guilty, he had forced such a laugh. Wouldn't this make her more guilty?

Kali simmered in guilt for a moment before deciding to lead Shi Xiaobai on a little, hence she said, "You have to know that I have lived for many years."

Kali wanted to tell Shi Xiaobai that the gap in their age was too wide, which made them incompatible. However, she found it hard to force out those words when it reached her teeth. Age was such an annoying thing to mention! Hence, Kali switched to a more euphemistic manner of speech.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned hearing this, thinking that Kali was flaunting her immortality. He immediately muttered, “This King’s will is like yours, immortal and undying!”

Will?

Upon hearing this word, Kali fell into deep thought.

“Did will refer to his heart’s intentions? Was he telling me that even if he were to die from old age, his heart will go on forever with me, immortal and dying, until the end of times? Was he so unwavering?”

Upon thinking of this, Kali suddenly felt her heart stop. She suddenly remembered an important matter. Right, she was his mentor.

“Cough, I have something I forgot to tell you. Actually, I’m your exclusive mentor! You have to address me as ‘teacher’ in the future!”

Kali believed that with their capacities as mentor and student, this difference would make him stay away, right?

Shi Xiaobai finally frowned.

“The saying goes that ‘he who teaches me for one day is my father for life’. Wouldn’t This King be acknowledging her as a father?”

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had the thought of becoming Kali’s disciple at the outset, however, the saying “he who teaches me for one day is my father for life” had made him pause. Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, “I appreciate your kindness, but I will definitely not become your student! Not a chance!”

Kali was completely dumbfounded when she felt the determination in Shi Xiaobai’s tone.

After witnessing her power, he was still able to resolutely reject being her student. Did he not desire such power?

No, he must desire it more than anyone, but why did he refuse?

“Could it be because he does not want to become my student, and doesn’t want a gap in our capacities? Just for this matter, he is willing to forgo the power he greatly desires? Are his feelings that deep?”

At this moment, Kali was a bit moved. She began to take Shi Xiaobai seriously. Although he was only thirteen years old, he already looked like a teenager. A genius like him might already

have numerous girls liking him by now?

Kali quickly shook her head, abandoning such strange ideas in her head. After hesitating for a moment, she said softly, “Shi Xiaobai, to tell you the truth, I am a pure pixie as well as the World Tree. If I were to engage in boy-girl relationships, it would desecrate the pureness and defile the sacred tree, causing my strength to weaken, so...”

Kali sighed. This was the reason why she was willing to stay chaste for eons. Even though her body had stopped growing ever since she was a teenager, even though her mind was mottled by the passage of time, how could she not have yearned to have a taste of this thing known as “love”?

But she couldn't. She could not do the most passionate things lovers do, so since she would be destined to hurt her loved one, then it was better not to have a loved one in the first place.

“I see.”

Upon hearing Kali's words, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up while he found himself lost in thought.

So boy-girl relationships would cause the weakening of strength!

Shi Xiaobai made such a conclusion from Kali's words as he began muttering to himself, “Looks like This King has to cultivate the so called Virgin Boy Exercise...”

Since engaging in boy-girl relationships would result in the weakening of strength, then what Kali cultivated was likely related to her purity, then wouldn't the cultivation skill for boys be the Virgin Boy Exercise!?

Shi Xiaobai was extremely pleased, believing he had discovered the secret behind Kali's power.

But he did not know that his soft murmuring was like thunder in Kali's ears!

“For me, he is willing to give up the most passionate matters between lovers and even wants to cultivate in the Virgin Boy Exercise!? Are...are his intentions so selfless? How should I reject him?”

Kali's heart felt extremely heavy. At this moment, she was truly touched by Shi Xiaobai, but she still had a reason that forbade her from sharing hearts with others.

“Should I give him a chance? If...”

Kali had such a thought as she looked at Shi Xiaobai. Her expression looked unprecedentedly serious as she sighed and said, “Shi Xiaobai, in fact, my return to the human world this time is to prevent the fourth apocalypse. The first apocalypse destroyed my home, and nearly annihilated the entire world. And now, I finally have the tiny possibility of saving the world, so I must prevent it!”

“When the fourth apocalypse comes, I will personally challenge the “Original Sin of Calamity”, but even for me, I might not be able to come back alive. All of this is the only meaning for my existence. So even if I know I will die, I will never back down!”

“Do you understand? I do not know when I would die. It might be ten years later or a year later. I might even die tomorrow!”

Kali revealed the biggest secret in her heart. She had to tell Shi Xiaobai that her becoming of a lover would be doomed to end in a tragedy. If he could even accept the tragedy...

“Can you bring me along?” Shi Xiaobai’s eyes flickered with a shiny beam. Saving the world? This was something he wanted to partake in!

“What?” Kali had a look of incredulity flash past her eyes. Did Shi Xiaobai mean that he wanted to accompany her to face the fate of her destined tragedy?

“Can you bring me along when you challenge the ‘Original Sin of Calamity’!?” Shi Xiaobai’s eyes looked extremely resolute. Becoming a Hero to challenge a Super BOSS was always his dream!

“You want...to send yourself to death?” Kali’s voice sounded forced. For her, he was even willing to abandon his life?

“All men must die, so why fear?” Shi Xiaobai believed that there

was no reason to fear if they could become a hero that saved the world.

“I...I got it.” Kali began thinking that since he was willing to give up his life for love, and was willing to die together with her, why couldn’t she accept his heart?

At this moment, Kali was completely moved.

Wasn’t it just being in a relationship? She even dared to kick a God King from his throne and even converted demonic girls into pixies. She even dared to use her life to prevent the end of the world, so what if it was just a relationship that crossed the confines of age, species and strength...it did not seem too unacceptable, right?

“Cough, I agree. That...That whatever pact..I’ll sign it!”

After saying that, Kali’s face blushed.

“Ah?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. What did this mean?

Kali immediately blushed when she saw Shi Xiaobai so shocked from surprise. Gritting her teeth, she rushed up to embrace Shi Xiaobai’s head, and tip-toeing, she gave his forehead a kiss before taking a few steps back. She said softly, “The pact has been sealed! However, you are only thirteen, so you have to wait till you are at

least sixteen...before the pact will take effect!”

“Alright, that shall be the case. When you are sixteen, I will become your girl...girlfriend. By...Bye!”

Kali felt her heart palpitating so much that she could not take it anymore to the point of her stammering. She hurriedly jumped into the light, as though she was escaping from the room.

Only then did Shi Xiaobai realize what had happened. This..why did she, for some baffling reason, suddenly change her mind?

“Sigh, she still wasn’t able to withstand the power from the Confession of a King! This King, who believes in miracles, is indeed too naive!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was weeping. “The thing about girlfriends, This King doesn’t want them!”

Author’s Note: Hehe, who guessed this? This King doesn’t do cookie-cutter!

Chapter 57: It Isn't Easy For Any One Of Us

The meteor shower only ended at two in the morning. A total of 1038 meteors hit the ground, making it an extremely rare 'Thousand Stars'-ranked meteor shower. The entire Southern Gold City and the neighboring smaller cities were completely left in ruins, a desolate wasteland.

However, people were already accustomed to such disasters. The moment the meteor shower ended, post-disaster reconstruction began.

As the evacuation before the meteor shower was carried out very smoothly, there were very few citizens who died in this disaster. In fact, it was the Heroes, who came to "help", that ended up sacrificing their lives.

There was naturally a wake for the Heroes who passed away, but there were always Heroes, who sacrificed themselves in every disaster. The first time, people would cry, the second time, people would feel sad, but by the third or fourth time...or countless times, people became numb about it, accustomed to the sacrifice of the Heroes. It became a thing that was taken for granted.

When the duty of a Hero became a profession and a normal thing, it slowly lost its luster of noble sacrifice, and was soon forgotten.

As such, the Heroes' wake was destined to be a hasty routine, and in stark contrast, a celebration dinner for the Heroes would be

lavishly held. Many of the country's leaders would come personally, extolling the praises of those Heroes who killed Astral Calamity Beasts. According to usual practice, they would hold a press conference at the celebration dinner and for the next few days, provide a lot of interesting material for the news.

The surviving Heroes enjoyed glory and were extolled, while the dead Heroes would quickly disappear from the Hero rankings. They would disappear from the news and being out of sight, would eventually be forgotten.

“For Heroes, this is the best of times, and also the worst of times. For a businessman, this is an excellent era.”

Xia Lin stood in front of a gigantic floor window. Up in the tall building, he looked down at the walking pedestrian as his eyes glimmered with a luster and his mouth revealed a slight, pleasant smile.

“Knock, knock, knock.” Suddenly, a rhythmic knocking of the door could be heard.

“Come in.” Xia Lin did not turn his head because he could already tell who the person was from the sound of the knocks.

“Boss!”

The person who came in was a young girl dressed in a white-collared uniform. She politely greeted Xia Lin and gingerly walked

up to him. In her hand, she held a stack of documents as she said softly, “This week’s results are out.”

Xia Lin acknowledged her presence and turned around to take the documents from her hands. Using the sunlight, he read extremely quickly. He read nearly ten lines at a glance, and the way he flipped through the documents looked like he was counting money.

The young female assistant did not even dare to breath normally. Her delicate face looked uneasy. The man in front of her was about the same age as she was, but he was the general manager of a large listed company. She had also seen enough of his artifice and means.

After Xia Lin was done flipping to the last page, he lifted frames of his glasses, reflecting the sunlight to conceal his eyes. It made his expressionless face appear without the slightest emotion.

“Tell me, is [Gaia] really on a decline or is it because my leadership is lacking?”

Xia Lin turned around to look at the female assistant as he revealed an easy-going smile, as if he was asking a simple question like what she was eating for lunch.

“Your leadership is redoubtable!” The female assistant hurriedly responded.

“Oh? Do you mean [Gaia] is going downhill? That’s why there’s not a single new Gold-ranked player this week? That’s why our store’s average winning rate is less than 40%? That’s why our branch store is ranked last in the weekly rankings?”

Xia Lin used a calm voice to list out very intense questions before finally saying with a smile, “So do you think all of this is because [Gaia] is on a decline? That’s why setting up a branch in [Gaia] was a mistake right from the very beginning, is that it?”

The female assistant felt wronged and thought in her heart that since he knew, why was he making it difficult for a junior employee like her! Are you trying to hear another answer from me? Isn’t it a well known fact that [Gaia] is on a decline? It would be surprising if the results of the shop set up in [Gaia] would be good!

The female assistant kept complaining deep in her heart, but she did not dare to show the slightest hint of discontent. Although Xia Lin was young and accomplished, he had been sent to a branch from headquarters due to his lack of experience. This branch’s results affected headquarter’s final evaluation of Xia Lin. Last week’s performance was extremely terrible, so it was unknown how much anger Xia Lin was simmering! She had to be extremely careful.

“No...No, it’s...it’s our fault!” The female assistant rolled her eyes as she could not think of any other excuse. She could only think of the most old-fashioned excuse—take the initiative to shoulder the blame.

“Heh heh, it looks like you aren’t dumb and are cognizant of your faults. You are still redeemable.” Xia Lin opened up his hands and smiled coldly as he turned to face the floor windows. He left the female assistant a cold and lonely back.

The female assistant was dumbfounded. Were the employees and herself the ones to be blamed in the boss’ eyes all along!?

“I have always stressed that customers in the virtual competitive business cannot be awaited. You have to personally promote, entice and solicit them, using every possible means to make them our customers. Even for a pedestrian on the streets, you must go to great pains to tell them the importance of virtual competition, pulling them into the virtual competition world, do you understand? You must think of a way to make them obsess about it until they are unable to extricate themselves!”

Xia Lin looked at the pedestrians on the street. Some of them were walking into the building he was in, while others carried on walking down the street without even taking a look. This was the difference between a customer and a non-customer. They were indifferent, cold and heartless, but there was limitless potential. Customers and non-customers only differed by a syllable, maybe a simple persuasion could make the syllable, “non”, disappear completely.

“This is an era of Heroes, and similarly it is an era of competition. Some people think lowly of virtual competition, believing that true battles can increase their personal strength. However, that is just ignorant prejudice. Virtual competition is clearly the fastest way for humans to improve their proficiency in

combat techniques! Do you understand? We need to persevere at eliminating the prejudice people have for virtual competition. We must let those ignorant non-customers to understand the importance of virtual competition, making them our customers. We must make them obsess over virtual competition, let them become perfect numbers on our results!”

When Xia Lin was done speaking, he finally could not maintain his calm. The tone in his voice sounded agitated.

“I...I got it!”

The female assistant hurriedly replied, but she was lamenting in her heart. She had heard the same speech numerous times. The employees had also acted in accordance with Xia Lin’s instructions. They would always go out onto the streets to solicit for customers instead of working in the office. All of them were like promoters, and was nearing the level of a pimp.

This still wasn’t enough?

“Heh heh, do you understand? It’s been a while, but the top three rookies in the present batch of rookies from the most recent evaluation test are still non-customers. All of you are too lazy.”

Xia Lin said with a cold smile, “I have already mentioned it many times. Those three rookies are extremely important resources. Regardless of the cost or means, you have to make them our loyal customers, especially that Shi Xiaobai! However, eleven days have passed. We have not received the business from the other two of

the top three rookies, much less Shi Xiaobai! All of you have really disappointed me!”

“Sor...Sorry!”

The female assistant was beyond tears. No one knew what Shi Xiaobai looked like and information of his identity was highly confidential. It was as though he had disappeared from [Gaia], so how was she to draw him in? The other two rookies all had strong personalities. There was no way to move them with their words of persuasion!

The female assistant was complaining in her heart, but she could only verbally admit to her mistakes. As a junior employee, she did not dare contradict her boss, so she had no choice but to shoulder the blame!

“If apologies work, then the Huang Pu river wouldn’t be red.”

Xia Lin’s words sounded cold while his expression was colder. Suddenly he pointed out to a spot outside the window and said, “I’ll give you a final chance. Make that person a customer, and I’ll forgive you this once.”

The female assistant hurriedly took a step forward and traced Xia Lin’s finger out the window. She saw a youth on the streets moving laterally like a crab. The youth had already walked past their shop, but he looked back three times for every step he took, as though he was reluctant to leave.

“This person is now on the boundary of being a customer and non-customer. He just needs a simple push, do you understand? If one push isn’t enough, push him twice. If persuasion doesn’t work, try deceiving him. If deceiving him doesn’t work, force him. If forcing doesn’t work, then even if you have to take off your clothes and scream rape, you still have to force him in!”

Xia Lin said angrily, “This is your last chance!”

The female assistant hurriedly clung to her clothes as she felt her stomach churning.

To think you can think of me screaming rape after taking off my clothes, what sort of sick pervert are you!?

Looking through the window, she saw a figure moving like a crab at a rapid pace down the streets. The female assistant did not dare delay any further. Immediately, she began waddling like a duck, while running with her high heels on.

Crab youth, stop there for me!

The female assistant was nearly going crazy!

“It isn’t easy for any one of us.”

Xia Lin looked at the female assistant’s back and sighed softly.

Author's Note: A new arc will commence, it will definitely provide a sufficiently interesting plot for everyone!

Chapter 58: Laziness And Diligence

“The True Heretic King Eyes has seen through everything that is fake in this world. No matter how glorious and attractive it is, it cannot sway the Resolve of the King. If you remain obstinate about this, the moment this battle began, you were destined to suffer a tragic fate!”

As Shi Xiaobai used his Crab Steps, he turned his head back three times for every step he took. Just as he was about to turn into another street, he would stop, turn around and point at the tall building. He said, “Game arcade, you can’t tempt This King!”

After Shi Xiaobai finished saying that, he felt a sensation in his throat. His eyes blazed with intense desire, as his body could not help but take a few steps towards the building.

“What a powerful enchantment. How can this be? The Heart of the King has been a fibrillated by 0.003 millimeters.”

As Shi Xiaobai gritted his teeth, he hurriedly turned around to not look at the signboard that said “Virtual Competition Battle Arena Cafe”. His shoulders trembled slightly as he said hatefully, “Damn it. If not for having other matters to tend to, This King would definitely fight an astounding battle of three hundred rounds with you!”

Shi Xiaobai struggled as he finally let out a long sigh. “That darn Absolute Choice, is this your true goal?”

...

The current Shi Xiaobai hated the “Absolute Choice” absolutely. Last night, the Absolute Choice had caused Kali to end up as his girlfriend, and this morning, after he woke up, he received a new Absolute Choice.

[Choice 1: Within seven days, increase flash motion technique “Crab Steps” to the “Dominating Refinement” realm (Reward: B-level)]

[Choice 2: Within seven days, increase Psychic defense skill “Wavelet Shield” to the “Familiarized Proficiency” realm (Reward: E-level)]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice’s mission will yield a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

When Shi Xiaobai heard the words “make your choice, youth” while brushing his teeth, he nearly crumbled. He actually heaved a sigh of relief after reading the choices. He was glad that it was a daily-style choice.

After summarizing the Absolute Choices that had appeared up to now, Shi Xiaobai had a general idea that there were temporarily three kinds of Absolute Choices.

The first kind was the unpredictable choice back when he rescued Little Fatso. This kind of Absolute Choice reflected the choices in Shi Xiaobai's heart. Save, escape or watch by the sidelines. However, after the appearance of the Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai had to complete the choice he made to end the repeating mechanism of time.

Choices that tested one's will and beliefs were usually the hardest to complete, such as saving Little Fatso. In contrast, the choice of abandoning one's beliefs was easy, such as escaping. The Absolute Choice made him experience defeat after defeat, making him repeat it every time, so as to force him to give up on his original resolve. The moment he changed his choice, he would become subject to the darkness in his heart.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai was most afraid of the unpredictable Absolute Choice, but thankfully, it had only appeared once up to this point.

The second Absolute Choice was a malicious kind of Absolute Choice. It included asking Hisith for his underwear or first kiss, or mocking Kali's flat chest or professing his love for her. The biggest difference between the malicious choice and the unpredictable choice was the difficulty needed to complete the stipulation of the unpredictable choice, whereas the difficulty posed by the malicious choice was to make the choice itself.

The malicious choice was considered executory. The stipulation just needed to be executed, and the difficulty wasn't too high, and as such, there was usually no reward to it. However, it was very difficult to choose between the choices provided. The stipulation

of each choice would usually cause him to curse out loud, making him rather feel like “choosing death”.

These two choices could be said to be extremely toxic poison, and compared to them, the third Absolute Choice was like a bowl of chicken soup.

As if by Heaven’s pity, the daily-style choice did not have the mechanism of resetting time. There was only one chance at choosing, hence, there was only success or failure. The stipulation in each choice was relatively normal in difficulty but the rewards were extremely good and it was like a warm spring breeze in the middle of winter!

In the last daily-style choice, Shi Xiaobai had easily earned 100,000 cash. After he obtained the D-level reward, he attained the “Grasped Basics” proficiency with Crab Steps. It had the feeling of completing a quest in a game and the accomplishment of being rewarded for the task.

Hence, for the appearance of this Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai had hesitated for several seconds. The difference between an E-level reward and B-level reward was too great, so as he immediately ignored the possibility of receiving a punishment of the same level if he failed, he resolutely chose the first choice.

Within seven days, increase “Crab Steps” to the “Dominating Refinement” realm!

But when Shi Xiaobai used Riko’s computer to check the Internet

to understand what it meant to be at the “Dominating Refinement” realm, he was completely dumbfounded.

One’s adeptness in offensive skills, defensive skills and movement techniques were usually differentiated into seven realms—Grasped Basics, Familiarized Proficiency, Exemplary Mastery, Dominating Refinement, Crest of Perfection, Bold New World, Arhat Oversoul.

The difficulty associated with each leap in realm increased by several times. If one spent a year to go from Grasped Basics to Familiarized Proficiency, then to go from Familiarized Proficiency to Exemplary Mastery would take five years or more, much less Dominating Refinement or Crest of Perfection. Those not only needed a long period of accumulation and extraordinary perception, one needed to have Heaven-defying insight to achieve that.

When Shi Xiaobai searched for information regarding “Dominating Refinement”, many pieces of information appeared. They were all regarding how “XXX only used seven months to increase YYY offensive skill to the Dominating Refinement realm, labeling him a human sensation!”

Alright, seven months was already considered a sensation.

Then, wasn’t cultivating Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm in seven days just fool’s talk?

“If sensations are not enough, then This King will create a

miracle!”

Shi Xiaobai spent thirty seconds to restore his confidence. After packing up slightly, he immediately went out the door and rushed down the steel-paved roads and began practicing his Crab Steps.

Since Dominating Refinement meant the proficiency in the technique, then the most direct method was to keep repeating it. Constantly, without stop, he would repeat Crab Steps!

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai began his plan of using Crab Steps to circle Steel City.

“Sleep, resting, or panting, all laziness can be put to death. This diligent King would show you what is a miracle!”

Shi Xiaobai felt fearless as though there was a brave lion in his heart.

Desiring power was not just issuing empty words, he had to persistently work hard.

Even if he was exhausted or stressed, even if he wanted to stop, he had to hold on for a second, and then another second. He had to take one step, and then another.

Sleep? Just closing his eyes for a while would do!

Sleeping and eating? He could complete those while running with Crab Steps!

Rookie training? So what if he played truant for seven days!?

Shi Xiaobai kept hypnotizing himself and used Crab Steps to circle Steel City once using the whole morning. He then saw a tall building with its front door open. People would enter and exit from time to time. There were all sorts of pretty computer graphics posters plastered on the walls that wrote “Virtual Competition Battle Arena Cafe” high up on the door.

Isn't this a...game arcade?

Shi Xiaobai recalled Riko introducing the game arcade to him before. Wasn't it here?

“Shall I go in and have some fun? Just for a little while?”

Shi Xiaobai felt his resolve waver at that very instant.

“No, no, to create a miracle, This King cannot be lazy!”

Shi Xiaobai finally understood the deep malice in the daily-style choice. The difficulty of this choice was a torture.

Shi Xiaobai turned back his head back thrice for every step he took and went pass the game arcade with great reluctance. He

constantly struggled in his heart, as he could not help but decelerate his Crab Steps. His Crab Steps slowed down and finally, after a long period of time, he managed to walk past the street.

“Demons of laziness can’t beat this diligent King after all. The enchantment this game arcade uses is still lacking. Ha...Ha...Ha!”

Shi Xiaobai laughed in a manner uglier than if he were crying. He did Crab Steps on the spot and turned to look at the corner at the end of the street. Just a slight turn and he could see the game arcade once again. Just another slight turn, and there would be another choice presented to him.

Shi Xiaobai could not go round the corner or turn his body, but he was quietly waiting. He did not know what he was waiting for either. Perhaps, he was waiting for the disappearance of the last strand of laziness in his heart?

At this moment, on the other end of the corner, a panting voice shouted.

“Wait a moment, crab youth!”

Translator’s Note: Note that the translations of the proficiency realms go from G to A in ascending order of realms.

Grasped Basics

Familiarized Proficiency

Exemplary Mastery

Dominating Refinement

Crest of Perfection

Bold New World

Arhat Oversoul

Chapter 59: The Promotion Of Anything Really Relies On Lying!

The female assistant did not know that Shi Xiaobai was waiting around the bend. She ran barefooted on the streets while carrying her heels. She ignored her image as a lady, and shouted the amusing salutation, “crab youth” without any thought, attracting stares from passers-by.

The female assistant was somewhat embarrassed but there was no time for her to concern herself with hiding her shame. Xia Lin had retrenched numerous employees after he took on the job. She was just a statistic that didn’t matter, so whether she could make this crab youth a customer or not, determined if she would end up losing her job or not. Hence, she did not dare lax.

Praying that the youth had yet to go far, the female assistant finally reached the bend and nearly collided into someone. She managed to stop herself just in time, and when she took a careful look, the person was using Crab Steps on the spot, so wasn’t he that crab youth?

“Foolish mortal, is crab youth the way you address This King?” Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. He was not fond of this title, so even though he was using Crab Steps of the King, it did not mean he could accept being called crab youth.

The female assistant was panting slightly, but when she heard him, she was stunned. After sizing Shi Xiaobai up, she realized that this young youth must be the type who loved to fantasize himself

as some kind of Hero. Although addressing oneself as “This King” was rather uncommon, she still found it acceptable.

Thinking of how she called out “crab youth” in her hurry, she immediately felt apologetic. She hurriedly took out a name card from her pocket and handed it over. She said in an apologetic manner, “Sorry, please forgive me for being over anxious. I am the assistant to the general manager of the Battle Arena Corporation’s [Gaia] branch, Yang Weiwei.”

Shi Xiaobai naturally would not fuss over such a trivial thing. He scanned the name card after receiving it, and when he saw the words “Battle Arena”, he asked out of curiosity, “The Battle Arena Corporation’s [Gaia] branch refers to that game arcade?”

“Game arcade?”

Yang Weiwei was slightly stunned before recovering from it. She hurriedly explained, “No, no, no, you must be mistaken. The battle arena is not a game arcade, but a virtual competition battle arena cafe. Although the battle arena cafe also provides some small relaxing games, it mainly promotes the most famous virtual competition, ‘Unrivaled Heroes’. The experience from the nearly realistic battles can help Heroes increase their combat abilities both practically and realistically. It is not just a simple amusement venue, but allows people to focus on virtual battles. It is a battle arena that allowed them to obtain true benefits from virtual sparring!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but fall into deep thought upon hearing the long explanation.

To put it plainly, wasn't it just a competitive game? In essence, it was still a game!

However, a game with nearly realistic battles was indeed quite attractive!

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly shook his head. No, no. He could not fall for the charms of the game arcade. If he were to turn lazy, then he would not be able to cultivate Crab Steps to the Dominating Refinement realm in seven days. When that happened, there would be a B-level punishment...

Shi Xiaobai forcefully suppressed his itching desires and took a glance at Yang Weiwei. Realizing that she was a goon of the game arcade, he immediately turned alert and said, "Why did you stop This King?"

Yang Weiwei was stunned. Recalling that she would be fired unless she made this youth a customer of the battle arena cafe, she immediately felt distressed. She really hated the feeling of being a pimp.

However, despite her grumblings, Yang Weiwei immediately gave a sincere look and said, "Can I take a few minutes of your time?"

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before he nodded. "Alright."

“Actually, you can first take a rest.”

Yang Weiwei looked down and realized that Shi Xiaobai had been jumping on the spot from the very beginning. She felt that even if he was not tired performing crab steps, she was sick of watching him do it.

“Resting is the demon of laziness. There is no such thing as rest in This King’s world.” Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and as he wrapped his arms around his chest, he continued performing Crab Steps. It was difficult to tell if he was being cool or amusing.

As long as you are happy!

Yang Weiwei criticized in her heart, but as she broadened the sides of her lips and took a deep breath, she decided to cut to the chase. She said seriously, “The Battle Arena Corporation is a world-renowned company in virtual competitions. It provides the highest quality of service in the virtual competition industry. It has the most luxurious individual rooms, and the most perfect and comfortable immersion facilities. The virtual reality immersion achieves 99% realism, and we will provide customers a free exclusive World Divine Realm account.”

“In terms of service, we provide the most delicious food catering and the most professional guidance services. Videos of many classic Hero battles and the most authoritative lecture videos are provided for your perusal. There will also be combat arena online experts that will answer any customer inquiries.”

“Besides, the Battle Arena Corporation has recently launched its service with a 5% discount and a complimentary 500 points will be given whenever you recharge your account by 1000 points. If you begin the application process as a battle arena cafe member now, you can even have the chance of becoming [Gaia] branch’s representative and compete in the weekly Battle Arena Corporation’s ranking matches, allowing you to win great prizes!”

“What are you waiting for? Act now! Hurry up and join the battle arena cafe!”

Yang Weiwei spoke extremely quickly without missing a word. After she clearly enunciated and finished her promotional pitch—which she had read countless times—the smile on her face was already extremely stiff. A sick helpless feeling suffused from her heart.

After Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was stunned speechless. After a moment, he suddenly turned around and used his Crab Steps to leave.

Yang Weiwei was stunned. She hurriedly tugged at Shi Xiaobai’s sleeves and noticed that Shi Xiaobai’s shoulders were trembling. His fists were already secretly clenched, as though he was enduring something.

What was he enduring? Did her promotional pitch sound too fake, making him angry?

“This game arcade’s enchantment sure is powerful. It takes care

of your food and drink, and even gives you a private room, isn't it...forcing This King to be lazy? No, there is no way This King can yield to it. This King is a man who will create a miracle!"

Shi Xiaobai's heart writhed as he forcefully released himself from Yang Weiwei's grasp. He began using Crab Steps to move forward, but due to the struggle in his heart, he did not move very fast, as though he was waiting for Yang Weiwei to chase after him.

"The battle arena cafe will provide meeting places for customers. It facilitates [Gaia] rookies to engage in virtual combat with full members. Besides learning from each other to improve yourself, it is also an excellent platform for befriending people!"

Yang Weiwei caught up to him with a jog. If it was any ordinary pedestrian, she would have given up, but this youth's decision determined if she would be fired or not, so she refused to give up so easily.

"From the looks of it, you must be a rookie from this [Gaia] batch. If you were to join the battle arena cafe, you will be able to meet many rookies in the same batch as you. You can interact with them and strengthen your friendships. At the same time, it will also position yourself in a better spot amongst the rookies. Virtual combat will provide you the most reliable numbers, so you must not miss it!"

Yang Weiwei jogged beside Shi Xiaobai with her feet bare. She said a bunch of well-meaning words, but the result was Shi Xiaobai looking indifferent. Yang Weiwei felt like she was going crazy because this feeling was too uncomfortable!

“Join the battle arena cafe, you will have a chance to come into contact with a few well-known Heroes as well as rookies from other Divisions. You can be fully prepared to fight for the title of Rookie King, so please seriously consider it!”

Yang Weiwei mentioned every benefit her brain could think of, but realized that Shi Xiaobai remained unmoved, he was even speeding up. She felt a sense of defeat and from the looks of it, her powers of persuasion had failed.

“If one push isn’t enough, push him twice. If persuasion doesn’t work, try deceiving him!”

Yang Weiwei’s mind could not help but repeat Xia Lin’s words in her head.

If persuasion doesn’t work, then deceit...Deceit!

Yang Weiwei’s eyes suddenly lit up as a flash of brilliance came to her. She shouted loudly, “If you join the battle arena cafe, you have a chance of getting to know Shi Xiaobai, and might even become his friend.”

The moment she said those words, the youth in front of her had indeed come to a stop. He turned around and his face was filled with shock and incredulity.

Yang Weiwei chuckled in her heart. For all these tender young

rookies, Shi Xiaobai's name possessed great powers!

Since she needed to engage in deceit, she shall deceive him to the end!

With this thought in mind, Yang Weiwei walked over towards Shi Xiaobai and said with a beaming smile, "You should know a lot about Shi Xiaobai, right? This formidable genius with dual S Class talents along with the Perception of God is known by everyone in [Gaia]!"

"But there is a secret you might not know. Actually, Shi Xiaobai had become a most loyal customer of our battle arena cafe. He would often come to our battle arena cafe and spar with other customers. As long as you join the battle arena cafe, you will eventually encounter Shi Xiaobai. If you are lucky, you might even become his friend!"

"As long as you join the battle arena cafe, you will have the chance to become the friend of this year's Rookie King, a future S Class Hero, Shi Xiaobai. How can you miss such a good opportunity? Why wait? Act now! Quickly become a member of the battle arena cafe! You just need 998 to become a member. That's right, you'll become a member, all for 998! A huge value all for just 998!"

As Yang Weiwei saw how the youth in front of her was looking at her in a daze, she felt fireworks of joy exploding in her heart. The promotion of anything really relies on lying!

Chapter 60: Two Fancy Schlocks

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. This person actually used his name to scam him!

Previously, the two passionate fans, Ye Jiaquan and Lingcun had got into argument because of him, and now, the seductress sent by the game arcade had used his name to engage in scamming him. He never expected the name “Shi Xiaobai” to be so awesome.

“This King is too excellent. No matter how low a profile This King tries to keep, there is no way to conceal his excellence. She’s talking about This King!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but give himself a hundred Likes in his mind, but he did not reveal a single emotion on his face.

If it were anyone else, they would probably have revealed their identity and denounced Yang Weiwei, warning her not to use his name to scam others, but Shi Xiaobai would not do that.

Firstly, Shi Xiaobai had to hide his identity. After Kali left last night, a white-haired elder wearing a wizard hat visited him. The elder claimed to be Gaia and said a bunch of nonsense that Shi Xiaobai forgot the moment he heard them. However, the matter that the elder repeatedly exhorted Shi Xiaobai to remember was that due to various reasons, it was best he maintain his identity as Tu Dahei.

For Shi Xiaobai, concealing his identity was not something unacceptable and in fact, was something quite interesting. For example, in the current situation, Shi Xiaobai had nearly burst out laughing.

“Ahem, since Shi Xiaobai is a regular customer of the battle arena cafe, then you must have met Shi Xiaobai. Give a description of how Shi Xiaobai looks like!” Shi Xiaobai looked at Yang Weiwei with eyes filled with anticipation. He wanted to see how this female swindler would carry on her charade.

Yang Weiwei’s smile froze for a moment as her brain whirled at full speed. Naturally, she did not know what Shi Xiaobai looked like, but it appeared as though this youth had never met Shi Xiaobai before. It was unlikely there would be problems if she gave some embellishments.

After thinking for a few moments, Yang Weiwei said with a smile, “Of course I’ve met Shi Xiaobai. He sure is handsome. He has black hair, and at the corner of his right eye, there is a tiny red mole. He likes to wear white, and although he looks tall and thin, he gives off a feeling like he’s full of muscles. He always has a warm smile on his face and when he smiles, he reveals two dimples. He is very approachable and very gentlemanly, just like a prince.”

“I have never seen him lose his temper. You can’t fault him on the way he treats his friends. He often pays from his own pocket to treat others. Usually, he would take the time to give others advice even if he is busy. He also gets along well with those weaker customers, never putting on airs like a genius. Everyone likes him

a lot.”

Yang Weiwei gave a look of adoration. She described “Shi Xiaobai” vividly and did not even seem done, as though she was afraid she could not make it any clearer. When she was done, she smiled shyly and whispered, “I..I also like him, unfortunately, I’m too old...sigh!”

Her final sigh seemed to imbue all the feelings in her heart.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. Isn’t this acting way too f*cking realistic?

Typically, swindlers tried their best to speak in vague terms when lying, afraid that they might introduce flaws in their lies, but Yang Weiwei was completely the opposite. From her description of “Shi Xiaobai”, it was as though she immersed the listener into an actual description. The tone of her final sigh and that expression of hers was penetrating to the heart.

In times like this, the acting skills of swindlers could have a chance at the Oscars!

“Oh, tell me what other spectacular performances Shi Xiaobai has had in the battle arena cafe.” Shi Xiaobai was addicted to this game he had with Yang Weiwei. He looked at Yang Weiwei with an excited look, greatly looking forward to her improvisations.

Yang Weiwei lamented in her heart. She had failed to utterly

convince the youth with her spectacular performance. Now, she was in trouble. Usually to hide a lie, a thousand lies were needed, it was not simple to be a swindler!

However, as the youth looked dumb, she believed it wouldn't take long before he would surrender to her exquisite lies and trickery. Yang Weiwei immediately felt confident as she started thinking of the ways to deceive the crab youth.

Yang Weiwei did not dare to remain silent for too long because she was afraid Shi Xiaobai might turn suspicious. As she drafted her lines, she said, "Shi Xiaobai is an existence everyone knows in the battle arena cafe! In the placement matches for 'Unrivaled Heroes', he has won all ten rounds. He has not lost a single friendly match in the cafe. Every weekend, in the battle arena's ranking matches, he would receive the biggest prizes..."

Yang Weiwei began recounting "Shi Xiaobai"'s glorious deeds. In fact, her lies could be easily exposed because once this youth entered the battle arena cafe and asked others, he would realize that he had been deceived, but Yang Weiwei did not care about that. All she cared about was to make this youth a customer to ensure her rice bowl. She could leave future troubles for her future self!

Yang Weiwei took three minutes to finish describing "Shi Xiaobai"'s wonder performance, and she did so without stop the entire time. It was as though she was counting the number of heirlooms back at home. Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded listening to her. What sort of powerful trickery was needed to be able to describe with such realism? It was as though all those matters had

happened before, and did not seem like she had made them up on the spot.

Shi Xiaobai felt a sense of admiration, feeling as though he had excavated an impressive talent. To fully develop Yang Weiwei's scamming potential, Shi Xiaobai immediately said, "Tell me about the offensive skills, defensive skills and movement techniques Shi Xiaobai is good at. Oh right, does Shi Xiaobai have any particularly cool moves? This King is really curious!"

Yang Weiwei smiled and immediately put on a professional smile.

"Shi Xiaobai's coolest move..."

...

Thirty minutes passed. Shi Xiaobai asked numerous questions regarding "Shi Xiaobai", while Yang Weiwei patiently answered them all. Both of them had an axe to grind. One was committed to tap into the other party's "potential", while the other was committed to making a lie—that had been seen through from the beginning—work.

However, after such a long period of time, Shi Xiaobai seemed to not end his ceaseless questioning. Yang Weiwei finally could not help it as she said with a heavy voice, "Don't tell me you don't believe what I'm saying? Shi Xiaobai is really a loyal customer of the battle arena cafe! Why would I lie to you? When have you seen a liar give such details when lying?"

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes. Indeed, he had never seen one before, but he had finally met one today. It had to be said that for her to be such a shameless swindler, it was also quite f*cking delightful!

“Sigh, you are a true talent. It will be a pity if you do not go to Hollywood. In another world line, you would definitely win a Oscar for your performance!”

Shi Xiaobai patted Yang Weiwei on the shoulder and whispered, “Work hard and keep up the effort!”

After Shi Xiaobai said this, he turned around and began using Crab Steps to leave. Oh no, he got addicted to having fun with the female swindler, wasting quite a lot of his time!

Yang Weiwei was stunned. Why did this youth refuse to believe her despite her hard work? Did she really have to do as Xialin said—if deceiving doesn’t work, use force. If forcing doesn’t work, she had to force him in even if she needed to take her clothes off and scream rape?

No, she would never do such a thing!

Yang Weiwei finally decided to give up. She felt that it was no big deal if she resigned. She did not need to work here at all costs. If not for her younger brother being a [Gaia] rookie this year—making it convenient for her to take care of him—she would have job-hopped a long time ago and left this place!

Just as Yang Weiwei felt despair, she suddenly saw a figure appear in front of her. The figure was walking towards them and was about to encounter the departing Shi Xiaobai. Yang Weiwei's eyes lit up, as though she had suddenly seen the light in the darkness.

Shi Xiaobai of course saw the incoming person. It was a 7–8-year-old boy. He was slightly surprised as he whispered, “Pleasant Goat!?”

This boy was Yang Yang who he met back at the Rookie Evaluation Test.

Yang Yang was also stunned seeing Shi Xiaobai. Just as he wanted to blurt out Shi Xiaobai's name, he suddenly remembered his Division Minister's serious instructions. As he lowered his head to look at Shi Xiaobai's odd Crab Steps, he said with a stiffened face, “Tu Dahei, what are you doing here?”

The Heavens knew that the person Yang Yang did not want to encounter in the entire Steel City was this “fancy schlock”.

“Little Yang!”

Suddenly, an intimate voice shouted out from behind Shi Xiaobai. Yang Yang was surprised and cocked his head to take a look. He saw a white-collared girl jogging over with her heels in hand. As he focused on her, he found her face extremely familiar before he said with a shock, “Sis!”

Yang Weiwei was extremely excited at this moment. She never expected for her younger brother to appear at this moment. It was such a timely boost! Besides, her brother seemed to know this youth named Tu Dahei, wasn't this the Heavens helping her?

Yang Weiwei ran to Yang Yang's side and pulled him in front of her and said to Shi Xiaobai, "Since you know Little Yang, then you should know that Little Yang once participated in the rookie test with Shi Xiaobai. You would believe Little Yang's words, right?"

Shi Xiaobai was stunned, but as he guessed what Yang Weiwei was planning on doing, he could not help but smile.

Yang Weiwei seemed bewildered and said loudly, "Come, Little Yang, tell this friend, Tu Dahei, that Shi Xiaobai is a regular customer of the battle arena cafe. That's right, isn't it?"

Yang Yang was stunned hearing this. He immediately felt a pinch around his waist and when he turned to take a look, he saw Yang Weiwei sneakily winking at him. He understood that his sister wanted him to participate in the lying.

As he turned his head back, he realized Shi Xiaobai was also sneakily winking at him.

What the f*ck, what's going on?

What games are these two fancy schlocks playing?

Chapter 61: Playing Games Can Even Be Done In Such A Grand Manner?

Yang Yang spent a few minutes to figure out the situation in front of him. He learned that his elder sister was trying to make Shi Xiaobai become the battle arena cafe's customer. In doing so, she had even used Shi Xiaobai's name in her act of swindling and bluffing. She had even painstakingly spent thirty minutes to perfect her lie.

Yang Yang was immediately rendered extremely speechless. Using Shi Xiaobai's name to scam Shi Xiaobai, this sure was f*cking a nice match!

Furthermore, the crux of the issue was you were lying to a person who saw through your lies from the very beginning, yet he deliberately went along with your acting, making you think you did a great job acting. Nice f*cking job!

If Sis Weiwei knew the truth, she would probably burst into tears, right?

With this thought in mind, Yang Yang felt a deep sense of pity for Yang Weiwei. His abhorring of a fancy schlock like Shi Xiaobai rose to a whole new level. Back at the Rookie Evaluation Test, Shi Xiaobai had said the touching phrase, "No Geniuses, Only the Strong" before mercilessly revealing what the difference between a genius and mortal was, causing Yang Yang's still nascent heart to nearly collapse. Up to this day, he still could not forget the bitter taste of that toxic bowl of chicken soup.

Noticing that the atmosphere seemed somewhat delicate, Yang Weiwei coughed lightly and said, “Ahem, Little Yang is also a regular customer of the battle arena cafe. Furthermore, he is an extremely good friend of Shi Xiaobai. The last time, they even slept on the same bed. If you were to join the battle arena cafe, you will definitely become Shi Xiaobai’s good friend!”

Yang Weiwei continued lying tirelessly. Since she had made numerous lies, she was not lacking this one lie.

A dark cloud hung over Yang Yang’s head. He was indeed a regular customer of the battle arena cafe, but how could he be Shi Xiaobai’s good friend? And f*cking sleeping on the same bed?

Yang Yang was a little frustrated. He wanted to blurt out “you are the one who slept with Shi Xiaobai!” at Yang Weiwei, but found the phrase somewhat odd, so he immediately felt extremely vexed.

Due to [Order]’s Division Minister’s repeated exhortations, he did not dare expose Shi Xiaobai, so he could only say to Yang Weiwei, “Let’s go, Sis. Tu Dahei will not join the battle arena cafe, so don’t waste your breath.”

When Yang Weiwei heard this, she could not help but ask, “Why?”

Because you lied to the wrong person!

Yang Yang grumbled in his mind, but he said aloud, “That’s because Tu Dahei does not need to go through virtual competition to improve his skill proficiency. He is a genius just like Shi Xiaobai. Geniuses like them only need to gain enlightenment, not undergo a long period of practice.”

“For ordinary people like us, a simple Wavelet Shield might take hundreds of virtual battle rounds to reach the proficiency level of ‘Grasped Basics’, but for a genius like Tu Dahei, he can immediately figure out Wavelet Shield after having his Psionic Shield shattered a few times. So, these geniuses will spend most of their time on Cogitation to improve their Psionic Power, and not waste time improving their skill proficiency.”

The tone in Yang Yang’s words had a hint of jealousy. He had already learned from his Division Minister that Shi Xiaobai had accomplished destruction before establishment after four times. Such freak talent was unheard of, something that made people feel as though there was no point to feeling jealous.

Yang Weiwei was already close to tears. She did not expect this crab youth named Tu Dahei was a genius.

For a genius, improving their Psionic Ability realm made more sense than practicing their skills. This was because one’s Psionic Ability realm was honed by Cogitation, a down-to-earth accumulation. As for the proficiency of a technique, geniuses could frequently gain insights in actual battle and improve it. This was also the reason why the battle arena cafe failed to recruit the top three rookies.

Shi Xiaobai, who was beside them, was stunned. Gaming could actually improve the proficiency of his techniques?

Back when he checked for information regarding ‘Dominating Refinement’, he immediately ran out to cultivate his Crab Steps once he was done. He had a preconceived notion that increasing one’s skill proficiency meant constant repetition. He ended up forgetting to investigate the methods to increase proficiency. He had made a blunder!

Shi Xiaobai did some soul-searching before asking, “Can gam... virtual competition really increase one’s proficiency in techniques? What about Crab Steps? Can it be improved?”

Yang Yang and Yang Weiwei were stunned hearing this. Wasn’t it general knowledge that virtual competition could increase one’s proficiency in combat techniques?

Yang Yang was the first to come round to it. He recalled that at the Rookie Evaluation Test, Shi Xiaobai often appeared to lack the most basic knowledge, so all of that wasn’t him acting dumb?

Yang Yang immediately could not help but smile wryly. He answered, “Virtual competition can naturally improve your proficiency. It could even be said that virtual competition exists for the improvement of skill proficiency! Even a S Class combat skill can be improved in virtual battles, much less the D Class Crab Steps.”

Yang Weiwei also snapped out of her daze. She suddenly

remembered Xia Lin previously exhorting them to ensure that non-customers clearly understood the importance of using virtual competition to raise their skill proficiency. Back then, she had scoffed, thinking that in an era of compulsory education, there was no one who did not possess such common knowledge. She never expected that there was really such a person. This was f*cking unscientific!

Yang Weiwei did not dare show any signs of neglect. She hurriedly added on, “Psionic Ability control and the proficiency in combat skill depends on the accumulation of memory, sensory experiences and insights. The battle arena cafe’s virtual reality is 99% realistic, so a virtual battle’s experience is as close to an actual battle, hence, the accumulation of experience in every battle is substantive. You can use such virtual battles to hone your combat skills, and it will definitely not be worse than real combat!”

How can it not be worse than real combat!?

Yang Yang immediately rolled his eyes and said to Shi Xiaobai, “Actually, the improvement in proficiency from virtual competition is inferior to real combat, but the benefits of virtual competition allows you to engage in battle for long periods of time. There is no loss in Psionic Power, so you can try again immediately even if you fail. A person with enough energy can even do 12 hours of virtual battle a day if they want, hence virtual competition is said to be tailored to the improvement of skill proficiency.”

“However, the process of using virtual competition to raise your skill proficiency is rather difficult. The effects are much more inferior to real combat. Maybe the effects of ten rounds of battle in

virtual competition might be inferior to a single real combat.”

“However, virtual battles is nearly limitless. In real combat, you would have to stop due to the depletion of Psionic Power, so for ordinary people who can take the hardship, improving themselves using virtual competition is an excellent choice. However, for a genius like you, spending some time each day to engage in real battle, leaving the remaining time for Cogitation to improve your Psionic Ability realm is the best choice.”

Yang Yang sighed. Although he did not like Shi Xiaobai, he did not want to mislead him. Maybe others would attempt to destroy a person more of a genius than themselves out of jealousy, but Yang Yang wouldn't. Although he was a normal person, he was a hardworking normal person. He was a normal person who wanted to surpass geniuses.

Yang Weiwei also sighed with exasperation. Yang Yang's relentless rebuttal of her words made her too deep for tears, but she rejoiced over Yang Yang's kindness and honesty, making her feel unsure of what to think.

They did not notice that Shi Xiaobai's eyes were already glowing with an intense beam of light.

“This world sure is awesome. Playing games can even be done in such a grand manner!”

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai smiled.

Author's Note: This part of the plot was slightly dragged out mainly because there was a need to explain the settings to push the plot smoothly forward. I'll do some soul-searching, and will try my best to make these setting-explanation chapters seem more interesting. Of course, once everything is set in place, the climax of the arc will definitely send you flying sky high. For this, Me has confidence!

Chapter 62: Thanking Shi Xiaobai

Playing games could actually also allow him to improve his Crab Steps!

He believed that games and Crab Steps were akin to not being able to have his cake and eat it, but he never expected that the composition of this world was so wonderful!

“It looks like this world has already sensed the coming of This King. The world line’s trajectory changed because of This King!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but smile. If playing games could improve his Crab Steps, then why was there a need to be in a dilemma!? As for Yang Yang’s kind advice, Shi Xiaobai did not put it to heart. Maybe other geniuses considered Psionic Ability cultivation more important, but for Shi Xiaobai, at this moment, nothing was more important than improving his Crab Steps.

In order to improve his Crab Steps, he was even nearly willing to give up games. If not for this “cute” female swindler persistently retaining him, he might have brushed shoulders with fate, losing this opportunity. Immediately, Shi Xiaobai found Yang Weiwei very pleasing to the eyes!

“The Gate of the Destiny Stone has opened. It seems This King is destined to be a man who will become a Game King!”

Shi Xiaobai reflected before he looked at Yang Weiwei and

pretended to hesitate. “Shi Xiaobai, really comes to the game arcade frequently?”

Upon hearing this, Yang Weiwei immediately nodded and said, “Yes!”

Following that, she tugged at Yang Yang and said, “Little Yang can testify!”

The corner of Yang Yang’s lips twitched as he stared at Shi Xiaobai. He was wondering what this fancy schlock was up to this time.

“Oh~”

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head as though he was considering for a moment. He then looked up at Yang Weiwei and said with a sigh, “The opportunity to become good friends with the great Shi Xiaobai is truly precious. Although a genius like This King had always felt disdain for game arcades, This King shall reluctantly apply for its membership because of Shi Xiaobai!”

After Shi Xiaobai said that, he retraced his steps using Crab Steps. This time, he moved extremely fast. In a moment, he was already at the bend, as though he was extremely eager.

At the moment he turned the corner, Shi Xiaobai suddenly looked back and shouted to Yang Weiwei, “Remember to thank Shi Xiaobai. This King is doing this all because of Shi Xiaobai!”

Yang Yang looked at this in amazement. He was wondering how Shi Xiaobai could be any more shameless.

Yang Weiwei stood there dazed for a moment before realizing that she had succeeded. She had succeeded in making the crab youth a customer! Although her means were somewhat “despicable”, the results were good. At least, she wouldn’t be fired!

“Yeah!”

Yang Weiwei cheered as she clenched her fists tightly. She felt like her hard work was not in vain and felt a great sense of achievement!

Yang Yang rolled his eyes. Was there a need to be this happy?

“Little Yang, in the future, if you meet Shi Xiaobai, remember to help me thank him. Oh right, I apologize by the way.”

After Yang Weiwei instructed him with a smile, she quickly ran around the bend with her feet bare. As she ran, she would jump and yell, “Shi Xiaobai, I love you. Hahaha!”

Yang Yang watched in amazement. If this went on, Sis Weiwei would eventually be broken by the demon, Shi Xiaobai!

Wait, why does that sound strange?

Yang Yang let out a lamenting sigh. He felt like if this carried on, he too would be broken!

...

The battle arena cafe's walls and doors were plastered with gigantic computer graphics posters. On closer look, they were promotional posters for 'Unrivaled Heroes'. It appeared as though this game was very famous, so Shi Xiaobai felt a sense of anticipation.

Inside the battle arena cafe, Shi Xiaobai ignored others and carried on using his Crab Steps. He waited for Yang Weiwei and Yang Yang to catch up to him before eagerly going to the front desk with them.

The membership procedure was somewhat troublesome. This world also had something similar to an identification card, and clearly, Shi Xiaobai had no such thing. He could only mutter "This King's invisible crown is the proof of identity. It's just that you mortals can't see it."

The counter staff shook their heads saying that things had to go according to procedure. Without an identity card, he had to be rejected service.

Yang Weiwei, who was bent on having Shi Xiaobai become a member as soon as possible, immediately falsely used Xia Lin's authority to skip the requirement of an identity card. After tasting

the wonders of deceit, this female assistant could no longer control herself.

As a mature corporation, the Battle Arena Corporation naturally had a series of detailed consumer packages. Shi Xiaobai, who had ‘earned’ 100,000 cash yesterday, only took a glance at it. With a wave of his hand, he immediately chose a deluxe package that cost 1000 a day.

Shi Xiaobai’s room was labeled “233”. After bidding Yang Yang farewell, he was led by Yang Weiwei to the 20th storey using an elevator.

The internal structure of the battle arena cafe was somewhat similar to a karaoke lounge. There were corridors at every corner, and personal rooms at every turn. However, the distances between the rooms in the battle arena cafe were somewhat far, and there was no way to peek into the room from any angle.

The corridor was silent and dark, but seemed to emanate an invisible smoky flavor.

After entering room 233, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes immediately lit up. He felt that the deluxe room was indeed worth the money.

The room had rosewood flooring and the internal design was bright and pleasant. There was a large and soft bed, a high-end couch and a glass table. There was a large liquid display panel on the wall, a computer desk that had a liquid display screen, a bookshelf filled with books, as well as a clothes closet. This did not

look like a game room, it was practically a presidential suite!

The only thing that stood out was a white capsule-shaped box placed in the middle of the room. There were dozens of differently-colored cables extending out from the bottom of the box, reaching into various sockets on the wall.

“This is the virtual immersion device. By lying in here, double tapping the internal activation control will bring you into the virtual world.”

Yang Weiwei went in front of the capsule box and slowly opened the lid. The internals of the box did not look complicated. There was a mat at the bottom, and the space inside accommodated two people. It would not be too uncomfortable to lie in it.

Yang Weiwei took out a magnetic card and passed it to Shi Xiaobai and said, “This room is locked from the inside. Other than general manager Xia’s master key, only your key can open the room from the inside, so don’t worry about being interrupted.”

“If anyone were to forcefully enter your room, the life detector systems would send out an alert. It will immediately wake you up from your virtual immersion, so you do not need to worry about any security issues when in virtual reality.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. Wouldn’t this make it a completely enclosed private room? Then what about his three meals a day?

Yang Weiwei could read Shi Xiaobai's mind and walked to the glass table. She pointed at the table and said, "This table is actually a rising platform. Your daily three meals will be directly sent through this rising platform. There will be no need for a waiter to enter the room. Furthermore, you can use the computer in the room to decide on the meals you want. Of course, you can just accept the default deluxe set meal."

Yang Weiwei smiled slightly and continued introducing, "There is a toilet and a bathroom in the room, as well as ten sets of clothing prepared for you. If you find it insufficient, you can contact customer service and it will be delivered to you using the rising platform. So feel at ease when immersing yourself in the virtual experience while inside the room."

"By the way, make sure to take breaks while in virtual reality. Staying in virtual battle for more than eight hours is an enormous load on one's mental facilities. So you should have proper rest before continuing. The room has provided a comfortable bed."

Shi Xiaobai was stunned hearing this. Wasn't this service too good? With all daily necessities a load off the gamer's mind, it allowed a gamer to fully immerse themselves in a game. It was a specially designed paradise!

"Oh right, you can begin your virtual immersion. You just need to lie inside the virtual immersion box and press the activation button twice to enter the virtual world. The default virtual system would send you into the 'Unrivaled Heroes' world. The battle arena cafe has already provided you with a free and exclusive World Divine Realm account."

Yang Weiwei was very pleased with Shi Xiaobai's surprise. Even though virtual competition was not thought highly by the common people, the quality of service virtual competition had always enjoyed a good reputation.

“Please lie in here.”

Yang Weiwei gestured respectfully and Shi Xiaobai nodded. He went into the capsule-shaped box and lay down. A comfortable feeling came from his back as he saw a red activation button beside him. With a light smile, Yang Weiwei closed the box's lid, which activated the lights inside the box, lighting up the tiny enclosed space.

Shi Xiaobai pressed the activation button twice.

The light disappeared in an instant.

“Welcome to Virtual Simulation OS Windows-v587!”

Shi Xiaobai: “...”

Author's Note: The setting up of the plot is done. An interesting plot will begin soon. Here are some responses to questions.

1. The world will slowly unfold. The various major factions' rivalry definitely exists, so please stay tuned.

2. There will be some interesting female characters, but even if a harem exists, a shitty harem will not happen.

3. In the future, explanatory words will be lessened, with more focus on the story.

4. There will be rich villains in the future, but currently, most of the text will be spent on Shi Xiaobai. My idea is to write the protagonist first before the world!

5. Some people criticize the novel for the over-usage of Japanese manga elements, I will hold back on that.

Thank you everyone for their comments and suggestions. I will keep the good advice in mind and remember them. I want to do a good job with this book, and at least make everyone remember that they had once read a book known as “Absolute Choice”. It is hoped that a few years later, you would remember particular characters or particular arcs and feel moved in certain ways. I hope everyone can strive alongside me to the end of this book before we head for the next book, a journey to the next world!

Chapter 63: Abusing Elementary School Students Like Dogs

What kind of world would a virtual world be like?

After Shi Xiaobai lay inside the virtual immersion box and pressed the activation button twice, he felt his vision suddenly turn black and his mind went into a trance.

“Linking initiated! Beginning scan... Scan completed... Beginning character construction... Character construction completed...”

A neutral voice quickly narrated professional terminology in his mind.

“Virtual system established. Welcome to the virtual immersion world!”

The moment the voice was done, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt as though he was falling. The dark world suddenly lit up, and as he rubbed his eyes to get adjusted to the light, he was surprised that floating clouds were lingering around his body. Looking down below, there was a vast luscious green land approaching him slowly.

No, he was actually falling to the ground!

The sound of wind whistled in his ears. The realism made Shi

Xiaobai immediately believe he was falling from high in the sky. After a moment of panic, he realized that this was a virtual world, but this vivid sense of falling was truly terrifying.

After calming down, he looked down at the vast stretch of greenery. Immediately he found a picturesque and lively scene. It looked like a paradise on earth, an immortal's retreat.

Just as he landed on the ground, a wind swept up and caused Shi Xiaobai to twirl before he landed safely.

Immediately following that, different faces appeared in the sky. Following that, different voices resounded from the sky.

“Some people say, battle and victory belongs to the people of glory.”

“Others say that victory is a result of the intricate use of battle tactics and strength.”

“All's fair in war, combat is a game of outwitting each other.” It was a feminine voice.

“Only sheer force can bring about sheer victory.” This was a voice with a powerful tone.

“But you can also forget about winning or losing and immerse yourself in joy!”

The pictures in the sky finally fixed on a pair of dull eyes and a simple-looking face. On closer look, it was baldy One-Pun!

“Welcome to Unrivaled Heroes!”

Everyone’s voices said the last line in unison. With that, the sky suddenly turned bright blue. The clouds were dispersed and the sun faded away, but the light remained. Following that, dozens of large colorful text appeared in the sky. They were located in every corner of Shi Xiaobai’s vision, for example, “Select Mode”, “Personal Settings”, “Spectator Mode”...

And at this moment, the ground that Shi Xiaobai had land on was covered in red flowers and green willows. There were birds chirping and butterflies dancing, it was a pleasant scene. About dozens of meters behind him, there was a gorgeous castle.

This game world used the sky as a game interface, and used the earth as it’s default scenery!

“Detected exclusive World Divine Realm account activation code. Current default domain is the city domain. By heading into the World Divine Realm, you can communicate with players all across the world. Do you want to activate your account?”

A sweet female voice resounded in his mind before two large characters “Yes” and “No” appeared in the sky interface.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned and intuitively reached his finger out to press “Yes”. Immediately a delicate voice was heard.

“Account activation completed successfully. Initiating DNA binding. Please fill in your character nickname by thinking.”

“GameKing!” This name flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s mind.

“The following nickname is already taken.” The system’s voice responded immediately.

“WhiteEventideHereticKing!”

“The following nickname is already taken.”

“KingOfGods!”

“The following nickname is already taken.”

“ShiXiaobai!”

“The following nickname is already taken.”

“ThisKingShi Xiaobai!”

“The following nickname is already taken.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned, even “ThisKingShiXiaobai” was taken by others?

“IChooseDeath!” Shi Xiaobai cursed in his heart.

“The following nickname is already taken.”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. Maybe...he could use an old meme from Earth?

“IChooseDogLeading![1](#)”

“Ding, this nickname is available. Do you want to bind this nickname?”

Shi Xiaobai was too deep for tears. Choosing a name sure wasn’t easy. “Bind it.”

After he named himself, lines of text suddenly emerged in the sky. It looked like subtitles while a pleasant sounding female voice read out the text.

“Unrivaled Heroes is a virtual competition game that pits a person’s combat skills against an opponent of the same Psionic Ability realm. Vitality, stamina, and various statistics will be normalized to a standard value. The assignment of each value will be matched according to the rank of the match as well as the

settings set by the creator of the match room.”

“Please do not choose to enter a match above your level. If you are a Psionic Mortal Realm in reality, please do not enter a match with Psionic Soul Realm and above. Unrivaled Heroes aims to improve your proficiency in combat skills by allowing you to spar with an opponent of equal strength. Entering a match that matches your personal strength is the best way of improving your combat skills. Since you are experiencing Unrivaled Heroes for the first time, it is recommended that you select Single Person Battle Mode–Room Mode–Quick-Match.”

“System scans indicate that you are in the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in reality. Approximate values for your skin defense, flesh defense, bones defense and mental defence have been obtained. It has been defined in your virtual abstraction. You can freely adjust your own values, but it is recommended to maintain the same values. The more realistic it is in the virtual realism, the greater benefits you obtain in virtual combat.”

“The system’s default pain setting is 40% of reality. You can freely adjust it. It is recommended to maintain the default values. Excessive pain can cause mental trauma.”

“ ... ”

A few minutes later, the system’s voice finally finished listing a long list of considerations and introductions. After “wishing you a pleasant experience” was said, the system’s voice faded away. The sky in the interface returned to its original state and looked like a computer screen. There were icons, names as well as some cool fire

effects.

The sky was no longer pure blue. There were thrilling battle videos played in the background. Background music that made one turned excited echoed from everywhere.

Shi Xiaobai was already stunned listening to all of this. He barely remembered a few of the considerations the system introduced. He immediately reached his hand out to choose “Select Mode”. The sky interface immediately appeared the three choices, “Single Person Battle Mode”, “Group Battle Mode”, “Story Mode”.

Shi Xiaobai was afraid that he would not resist the temptations of the other modes, so he rapidly clicked into Single Person Battle Mode–Room Mode–Quick-Match. He knew clearly his priority was to improve his Crab Steps’ proficiency level, so listening to the system’s suggestions was the best choice.

Quick Match was indeed as literal as it could be. In about ten seconds, the system’s voice resounded.

“Room matched”

“Room number: 1413520”

“Room name: Abusing Elementary School Students like Dogs”

“Room owner: OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation”

“Room level: Psionic Mortal Realm 3rd level”

“Field map: Colosseum”

“Do you want to enter this room?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a while before saying with a nod, “Enter.”

“System defaults to hiding your identity. The other party cannot see your looks. We wish you an enjoyable game.”

“Connecting to World Divine Realm... Connection to World Divine Realm complete. Welcome to the room ‘Abusing Elementary School Students like Dogs’!”

The moment the system’s voice faded away, Shi Xiaobai felt his mind enter a trance. The world around him suddenly distorted and as though his body was leaping through space, he entered another world.

The scene in front of his eyes had changed. The green grass beneath him had turned into hard cement floor. An empty expanse of flat land was wrapped in layers of audience stands. It looked like the Beijing National Stadium magnified by more than ten times.

Shi Xiaobai had yet to be fully adjusted to it when a mocking

voice came from a distance.

“Oh, here comes another elementary school student.”

Chapter 64:

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation

It was impossible to tell from the derisive voice if it was man or woman. There was no accent either, as though the system had done additional processing to conceal the person's identity.

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw a person covered in a trench coat standing about a kilometer away. The trench coat hid his body, and there was a skull mask on his face. It was probably the identity concealment the system had mentioned previously.

Shi Xiaobai knitted his brows slightly at the person's derision, but he did not speak. He did not have the time or the effort to prove that—he was a junior high school student.

“Are you ready?” The system's voice resounded in his mind.

“Yes!” Shi Xiaobai immediately responded.

A passionate male system voice suddenly boomed from above the arena, “Both sides are ready. One minute countdown begins. Please make your final preparations before battle!”

The moment it was done, a countdown text appeared in the sky. “59, 58, 57, ...”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He was wondering how he could

prepare before the battle when he noticed that an assault rifle had appeared in the hand of the person in a trench coat. From the looks of it, it was similar to AK47 assault rifles, but its external appearance was a mix of gold and silver. It also looked more dazzling and cooler.

Since the person in trench coat's name was "OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation", it was understandable that his weapon was a firearm. However, Shi Xiaobai found it strange. In his years of Counter-Strike and Counter Force, he knew about firearms. In order to headshot someone from a great distance, one ought to choose a sniper gun. As for an AK47, it was an assault rifle, so although it was powerful, it's range was rather short. It was more suitable for close-distance shooting.

Could that firearm be a concealed sniper rifle?

As Shi Xiaobai was wondering, he suddenly realized..he did not have a weapon!

"Customer service, where is This King's weapon!?" Shi Xiaobai began murmuring in his mind.

The system immediately answered, "You do not have any weapons in your arsenal. You can purchase them in the World Merchant Shop. Do you want to enter the World Merchant Shop?"

Shi Xiaobai answered matter-of-factly, "Enter."

The system carried on saying, “Sorry, access denied. The system detects that your current game credit balance is zero. Do you want to purchase credits?”

Shi Xiaobai was not short of money as he immediately said, “Purchase.”

The moment Shi Xiaobai said, a series of logos materialized with the words under each logo—“AmiPay”, “Weiyin Pay”, “Bank Card Payment”, “Penguin Payment”...

System: “Please choose your payment method.”

Shi Xiaobai: “...”

In the virtual world, there was naturally no payment method by cash, so Shi Xiaobai could only smile dryly, “Forget it. Every cell on This King is the most powerful weapon. It is just a pity that the foolish mortal will not be able to witness the God of Shooting Skills.”

Shi Xiaobai actually wanted to headshot “OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation” in one shot, but it appeared like he did not have such a chance.

“That’s not right, This King is here to cultivate Crab Steps! I nearly got lazy!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly realized that he was not here to play games.

He had a lofty goal, an ambitious ideal, a resolute ambition...

And at that moment, the system's countdown voice boomed suddenly.

“Entering the final countdown. 5, 4, 3, 2, 1—Battle begins!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned serious as he immediately began using Crab Steps. He repeatedly jumped around while circling the arena's boundary. He moved in a diagonal curve as he approached OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation. Shi Xiaobai knew in his heart that against a gun-wielding enemy, the best battle tactic was a melee battle, but the crux of the issue was how to close in!

Although Shi Xiaobai's Crab Steps was in the Grasped Basics realm, his Psionic Ability control had reached the Familiarized Proficiency realm. He was able to perfectly time the release of Psionic Power while moving, as such, although his Crab Steps did not look gorgeous and even looked funny, his movement speed was extremely fast. The speed at which he was jumping back and forth was much faster than an Olympian in a hundred meter race.

“This King does not believe you can achieve a single head shot!”

Shi Xiaobai began moving in circles about 500 meters away from OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation. He was waiting for OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation to shoot his first shot, and only by judging the gunman's shooting standard and power would he know where the true safety distance was.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes while cold and calm in battle. His thoughts were extremely clear. The way he circled OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation looked as though he had extreme patience. While he was repeatedly jumping, it gave the impression that it was hard to grasp his location. It did not look easy to aim at a target moving laterally like a crab.

“Heh heh, it's been a while since I've seen Crab Steps. It sure feels nostalgic.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation held the rifle and placed it across his chest. He looked relaxed and as he saw Shi Xiaobai's fast-moving figure, his eyes turned cold. He sneered, “But, I can't bear to watch anymore of such trashy Crab Steps!”

After OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation said that, he immediately threw his rifle into the air. The assault rifle spun as it emitted glowing gold and silver light and slowly fell to the ground.

“There's a chance!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. Seeing OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation taking the initiative to throw his gun midair, he delightfully ran forward.

“Oh no!”

A strong sense of danger arose in his heart suddenly as with a stare, Shi Xiaobai stopped his body immediately and turned

around to begin his repeated lateral jumps in evasion. He knew that the bullet was coming!

At the same time, the rifle had already landed in a spot near OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's chest. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation quickly reached out his right hand to stop the spinning rifle that was falling. At the moment the rifle stopped, the barrel was aimed straight at Shi Xiaobai, and his finger was already holding onto the trigger.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation stretched out his right hand and with a slight bend, his posture was extremely elegant. The corner of his lips curled into a cold smile.

“Peng!”

At the instant he held the rifle, there was no delay as he pressed down on the trigger!

A gunshot rang as a silver beam of light shot out. The bullet moved as fast as lightning!

“Left side or right side?”

Shi Xiaobai's pupils constricted. The bullet was too fast, and the timing was perfect. His right foot had just stepped out, and his left foot was still in the air. There was no way for him to change them, so at that instant, he could not move his body as he wished!

The bullet that came shooting over had shot at the moment when he was stiff!

Shi Xiaobai's vision seemed to slow down by multiple times. The bullet slowly headed for him in this vision, but he could only watch helplessly as the bullet flew towards his head in a straight line. That instant was brief, but it felt extremely long!

With great difficulty, he managed to react, but his body could not keep up with it. There was no way to dodge the bullet!

The outcome was already decided when OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation pulled the trigger!

“Pu!”

Before Shi Xiaobai could produce a wryly smile, he felt an intense pain in his head. Although the feeling of pain in the virtual world was only 40% that of reality, the pain of a bullet penetrating his head still made Shi Xiaobai feel a blur.

“Vitality reaches zero. Player dies.”

The cold voice of the system came into Shi Xiaobai's ears. He was jolted awake, and he did not know when he had returned to the arena's preparation area.

“The battle is over. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation wins. Time used: 15 seconds.”

A deep voice resounded from the sky, announcing the outcome of the battle.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned.

He lost?

He lost just like that?

He got shot in the head with one shot!?

Chapter 65: The Answer From The Very Beginning

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation loved virtual competition. It was not because virtual competition allowed him to increase his combat skill proficiency, nor was it because he could indulge in the joy of battle. It was because virtual competition allowed him to relax. He could completely vent and release the pressure accumulated from reality in this virtual world.

In reality, his strength was at the seventh level of the Psionic Soul Realm, however, in Unrivaled Heroes, he would deliberately reduce his numbers to the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Although players who adjusted their own numbers could not join the Hero League Mode, Room Mode did not prohibit such shameless behavior.

The strength of a Psionic Soul Realm warrior was naturally something Psionic Mortal Realm warriors could not compare to. Although the Psionic Ability realm was reduced to the same numbers, the difference in combat skill was a world of difference. As such, he was truly 'abusing elementary school students like dogs' in this Unrivaled Heroes matchup. Any player at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm that entered his room could never last more than a shot.

Of course, as a strong Psionic Soul Realm warrior who perennially competed on the global Hero Rankings and constantly struggled in battles of life and death, if he could not take down a weakling at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it would be something absurd. Perhaps, he would occasionally encounter

players who reduced their numbers like him, but they would immediately go their separate ways after the battle.

The moment they reduced their numbers, the rate at which they improved their skill proficiency would exponentially decrease, hence, their goals were not to improve their strength right from the beginning. It was just a form of relaxing entertainment to abuse noobs in Unrivaled Heroes.

“Thank you Unrivaled Heroes.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation smiled lightly as he holstered his AK Explosive Spirit Rifle. Every time he shot a player in the head, he felt the joy of venting his stress.

“Compared to that god-like man’s Crab Steps, this ugly usage of Crab Steps is an insult to Crab Steps.”

When OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation thought of the Crab Steps used by the player named “IChooseDogLeading”, he felt his mood turn bad. That god-like man was once a goal he pursued, but now, he was an existence that was something far beyond his reach. And the claim to the man’s fame was his Crab Steps. The Crab Steps that had reached the realm of “Arhat Oversoul” was considered one of the seven wonders in the history of flash motion movement techniques.

When he first saw “IChooseDogLeading” use Crab Steps, it made him recall the funny and ridiculous beginnings of that god-like man. He had previously treated this movement technique as a joke,

but this ridiculous movement technique opened up a distance between them, so great a gap that he could no longer see his back.

Having his laughable and lamentable memories dug up by “IChooseDogLeading”, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation felt a baffling sense of anger.

“Forget it, he probably will quit the room anyway.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sighed. Any player who fought him, would clearly know the difference in their strengths. They would naturally know that he was a smurf who had lowered his numbers. It was common to encounter smurfs in Unrivaled Heroes, and sadists like him who shot others in the head with one shot was the easiest to identify. Hence, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation knew very well that “IChooseDogLeading” would very naturally quit the room immediately.

“Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

The system’s voice rang in his mind, surprising OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation slightly. He never expected that not only did the guy not quit the room, he had even requested for another match.

“Well, this kind of idiot who can’t distinguish reality from illusion and insists on slamming themselves in the wall can occasionally be seen. I hope he will still have courage remaining

after the second round.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation quietly took out his AK Explosive Spirit Rifle. This rifle was indeed an assault rifle and its range was considered short. It had sufficient firepower, and was most suitable for short-range bursts. However, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation insisted on using such a short-range rifle to complete his long-distance single headshot. This was to make his opponent feel despair.

“Then, let me enjoy it once.” OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sneered.

With the end of the countdown, the second battle began!

The familiar Crab Steps appeared once again. “IChooseDogLeading”, who wore a clown costume and a clown mask, looked like a ridiculous clown as he did his Crab Steps. However, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation did not find it amusing.

This time, IChooseDogLeading did not hastily approach him. He was circling at a distance of a kilometer away, as though he was looking for an opportunity to strike.

“Heh heh, do you think that distance is a safe distance? Naive, why don’t you experience the tragedy of a weakling.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was no longer patient this

time. He raised his gun and after taking a second of aiming, he suddenly pulled the trigger. The bullet shot out, traversing a distance of more than a kilometer, and without any suspense, hit the repeatedly jumping IChooseDogLeading, who was attempting to dodge the bullet, in the head.

“The battle is over. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation wins. Time used: 3 seconds.”

This shot was a headshot once again. Furthermore, it was done with an assault rifle at a distance of a kilometer away. This was already undisguised humiliation, the most denigrating form of trampling.

“Heh heh, you should have your eyes opened to reality this time, right?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation holstered his AK Explosive Spirit Rifle once again. For some reason, this was the first time he did not gain pleasure from abusing noobs. Shooting IChooseDogLeading in the head made him recall of that man who was humiliated by the strong and had his dignity trampled on, from a long, long time ago.

“Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation frowned as a strange sense of discomfort suffused from his heart.

IChooseDogLeading had once again chosen to have another round. Furthermore, he had immediately chosen to continue immediately after an utter defeat.

Why?

For what?

“Heh heh, looks like he has the laughable thought of surviving one shot to lessen some of his shame. It’s not like such weaklings who cannot recognize that weakness do not exist. Then, I shall open your eyes to reality. I wonder how many rounds you can persevere. Three times? Five times? Or ten times?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sneered as he drew his AK Explosive Spirit Rifle out once again. Even in this virtual world, there were still harsh realities one had to face. Certain victories would never exist. In front of despair, how long could a person, who insisted on their upholding their dignity, last?

...

The outcome exceeded OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation’s expectations. 50 rounds. IChooseDogLeading had his head burst 50 times! However...

“Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation felt slightly delirious as he silently said “Yes” in his mind. Again, he took out his AK Explosive Spirit Rifle. This was the first time he found the habit of holstering his rifle after every victory superfluous and irritating.

Although he could clearly tell that IChooseDogLeading was showing considerable progress after fifty rounds of failure, the difference in their strength was too great. Even if IChooseDogLeading was improving at an astonishing pace, there was no way he could last a single shot, and not even last past five seconds.

However, in the face of unsuspenseful failure, why did he insist on continuing?

“Why?” OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation could not help but ask aloud.

The preparation time before the battle was very short, but it was enough to ask the question on his mind.

IChooseDogLeading responded in wonder, “Huh?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation asked, “Why do you persist on for so long? You should know that quitting from the battle is your best choice.”

After encountering a smurf, shouldn't you mock ‘is it that fun smurfing noobs?’ before rage-quitting? You can console yourself,

telling yourself that you were defeated because you encountered a shameless idiot. Isn't that the best choice?

Why do you keep insisting on hitting the wall time and time again?

Why do you insist on choosing the most foolish method?

He was answered with a rhetorical question from IChooseDogLeading, "Why should I quit?"

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation said stunned, "Because..."

Because I'm a smurf!

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation thought, but for some reason, he stopped himself from saying those words.

IChooseDogLeading said calmly, "You are very, very strong. I want to battle you."

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sighed and said, "You should understand that we are not on the same level. No matter how much hard work you put in, you are doomed to failure. You can curse out 'smurf' and quit without any qualms, but why foolishly persevere?"

IChooseDogLeading said, "If that's the case, won't I be the one

losing big?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation asked out of wonder, “What does that mean?”

IChooseDogLeading answered matter-of-factly, “I like failure. It allows me to grow stronger. If failing 10,000 times allows me to progress a centimeter, I would have earned the greatest riches! Conversely, if I were to run now, that would be me losing big.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was stunned. He could not help but recall a similar conversation from his past, with that man who was like a god.

He once asked, “Senior Yaris, why...why do you insist on challenging our teacher even after failing so many times? You should know...that you have no hope at all.”

The man answered him, “It’s because I like failure. It allows me to grow stronger.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation lowered his head slightly. An imperceptible smile secretly bloomed under his skull mask.

So that was the reason.

The answer was actually as simple as that.

“Entering the final countdown. 5, 4, 3, 2, 1—Battle begins!”

The moment the system’s voice finished speaking, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation suddenly looked up. He straightened his right arm and pulled the trigger!

“Peng!”

A gunshot rang!

“The battle is over. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation wins. Time used 1 second.”

One second, that was OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation’s final question.

“Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

IChooseDogLeading only used half a second to choose to continue once again.

Half a second. That was his answer from the very beginning.

Author’s Note: Damn it, don’t you hate smurfs while playing games? Hehe, what would be your choice when you meet a smurf?

Chapter 66: You Should Become Such A Crab!

The hundredth headshot, the hundredth drawing and holstering, the hundredth victory without any suspense was followed by the 101th time of hearing the system say, “Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was tired, but he had also eased up.

“You have used a hundred defeats to win my respect.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation gave a wry laugh. As he looked at the figure moving around using his ridiculous Crab Steps in an attempt to dodge his bullets, he did not immediately lift his Explosive Spirit Rifle. Instead, he said loudly, “Are you an idiot? Don’t you know how to use fake moves? By using Crab Steps every time in such a habitual manner, are you afraid others can’t anticipate your motion’s trajectory? Can you be any more dumb?”

The harsh diatribe caused Shi Xiaobai’s figure to pause for a moment, but it only paused for half a second before he carried on using his Crab Steps. This time, Shi Xiaobai’s motions were clearly extremely stiff, as though he was attempting to resist moving in a habitual manner and fake his motions, but it ended up looking inept and appeared rather jerky.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation shook his head and then lifted

the gun in his hand.

A gunshot rang, and Shi Xiaobai fell to the ground as though it was in response to it. The system's announcing the end of the match rang immediately after that.

Accompanying that was OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's fury abuse.

“Use your left foot as your right foot, understand? Do not keep reminding yourself to make fake moves. If you can't even fool yourself, how can you fool others? Fake moves are not moves that you deliberately do. You must fool your opponent, making him think that your fake move is a real move. If you can't even create confusion by passing off the spurious as genuine, how do you become stronger?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sneered, “Claims of weaklings always sound good, but the reason why weaklings are weaklings is because they only know how to talk.”

Shi Xiaobai did not retort, he only shouted, “Again!”

...

The 133rd battle.

This was the first time OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation did something different when he pulled the trigger. It was because Shi

Xiaobai's fake move nearly fooled him.

Although it was the same headshot as before, he took six seconds to end this battle.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was stunned for a few moments before he shouted loudly once again, "Crab Steps is not just simple jumping from left to right. It's not some exercise for the masses! The key is to constantly vary your speed. Do you understand? Accelerate, decelerate, the variability in speed. You are not dancing, there is no rhythm, nor should there be one. You must trust your heartbeat. When your heart beats faster, you must change your speed, doing a sudden explosive move, or suddenly stop. From the fastest to the slowest, you must become an emotionally irritable but calm crab, do you understand? You idiot!"

Shi Xiaobai dazed for a few seconds before taking a deep breath and said loudly, "Again!"

...

The 212nd battle.

This time, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation took more than ten seconds to lock onto Shi Xiaobai's figure. The crab's constant fake moves and its variable speed made him hesitate for the first time.

This was because when Shi Xiaobai made an action to jump to the

left, his body could very well move to the right. When he retracted his right foot, his left foot would tap the ground in the opposite direction, finally succeeding in the stiff motion of moving in the opposite direction.

When his movement speed was extremely fast, he could suddenly stop the very next second, surprising his opponent. When he was jumping at a slow and relaxed pace, his opponent might think that he had locked onto his trajectory, but Shi Xiaobai would suddenly burst forward with an astounding acceleration. It was like a loach that fled from one's grasp.

Without a doubt, Shi Xiaobai's improvement was progressing at an extremely fast pace.

However OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation still felt that it was far from enough.

“Compared to that man, it's still a great distance away.”

Comparing this guy who was at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm with that god-like man was itself a ridiculous matter, but for some reason, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation found it a natural comparison.

Perhaps it was because they used the same Crab Steps, or perhaps it was because they said the same words?

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation did not know the answer

because the answer was buried deep in his heart, so deep that he could not see it for himself. He only knew...that he had to do it this way!

“Peng!”

After he caught the instance of regularity, and judged the stiffness at the next moment, he made his shot.

Once again, Shi Xiaobai had his head exploded.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation immediately said loudly, “You must become a twisted crab. It’s not only footwork. Your body, your bones, your every cell needs to know how to twist and change. The essence of Crab Steps is not to repeat lateral jumps or lateral movement. It is about its freedom, how it is completely unrestricted! Do not be afraid of its funny and ridiculous moves because Crab Steps itself is ridiculous enough! Discard all your emotions of embarrassment. As long as you can dodge an attack, do that humiliating action for me!”

Once again, Shi Xiaobai fell into a moment of silence before he said solemnly, “Again!”

...

The 356th time.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation said, “Create an illusion of

step distance and movement distance, do you understand? Only an idiot would maintain a fixed distance between their footsteps! True Crab Steps might take a small step, but can travel dozens of meters. Maybe the legs might open widely, but the body would only move a few centimeters! You must know how to use your Psionic Power. Your movement is not reliant on your feet but your Psionic Power. The timing of the release of your Psionic Power, the magnitude and the duration of it determines the distance you travel. And your body should not do an instinctive response to this distance. Discard that darn instinct of yours, you pig!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted once again, “Again!”

...

The 510th time.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation said, “Turning, moving laterally, moving backwards, moving forwards, these motions are your most important weapons, but they should not be abused. You must use it at the most critical moment. Crab Steps are not rigid left and right motions. Also, what about your shield? Are you dumb? Dodging isn’t the complete avoidance of an attack. At times, grasping the weakest point of an attack and defending against it is also considered dodging! Do you understand? True defense is shielding as well as dodging! It has already been more than 500 rounds, yet you haven’t realized this. You hopeless fool!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted once again, “Again!”

...

The...umpteenth time.

Perhaps it was the 800th time or it might have exceeded a thousand, or maybe...

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was already too lazy to count. He had also turned silent for a very long time. This was because he no longer had anything he could teach Shi Xiaobai. He had previously analyzed that god-like man's Crab Steps like a madman, but all he had was theorycraft. And today, Shi Xiaobai had managed to put his theorycraft into action after failure after failure. However, he was still tender and weak.

But many of OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's firsts had been claimed by Shi Xiaobai.

The first time he took more than 20 seconds to end a battle.

The first time he ended the battle after a gap of 100 meters was achieved.

The first time he could not be bothered to holster his rifle after winning.

The first time he was forced to use gun offensive skills by a child at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

The first time...

The first time OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation learned that this world truly had such a fool. The fool endured more than a thousand times of failure, accepting relentless diatribes, so as to resolutely march towards his goal.

The fool was constantly changing, constantly becoming stronger and constantly surpassing himself.

“This is their answer. From the beginning to the end, that firm and resolute answer.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation had this thought in mind as he lifted his arm, prepared to end this match.

Suddenly, he was surprised. This was because he actually failed to completely lock onto the crab's trajectory.

A small step traversed more than a dozen meters.

A big step was taken but he retreated by a few centimeters.

Acceleration, deceleration, the fake movements of jumping left and right, his body moving forward and backwards, even to the point of his body twisting into distorted postures.

And the most surprising thing was that extremely solid Wavelet Shield that was the size of a small medal. The shield would occasionally appear, materializing and dissipating, as though it could appear in front of the bullet at any time.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation hesitated.

Shi Xiaobai's figure suddenly moved to a distance just dozens of meters away from him during his moment of hesitation.

This distance was very dangerous.

For OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation, it was very dangerous.

But for Shi Xiaobai, it was even more dangerous!

This was because the closer the distance, the harder it was to dodge. He was facing an assault rifle that was adept at shooting in close range!

“Peng!”

A gunshot rang.

The bullet finally managed to catch the fleeing Shi Xiaobai, and followed closely behind his figure like a maggot in a tarsal bone.

“Pu!”

The bullet was blocked by a thick Wavelet Shield, but the bullet was a C Class offensive skill “Wraith Bullet”. It instantly pierced through the shield, penetrating Shi Xiaobai’s head.

“You are improving very fast, but you are still somewhat lacking.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sighed. Suddenly his pupils constricted violently. This was because he did not hear the system announcing the end of the match!

The battle was not over!

Upon realizing this, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation immediately looked up. He saw the Shi Xiaobai with the headshot melt away under the sunlight, while the sound of a series of quickened footsteps came from his right. He turned to see Shi Xiaobai using Crab Steps about to reach his side.

“Phantom image!?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation exclaimed in surprise. This guy actually managed to figure out Crab Phantom Image himself!? He subconsciously raised his hand to shoot again. At this distance, even if Shi Xiaobai had grasped phantom image evasion, it was impossible for him to dodge his Wraith bullet.

This AK Explosive Spirit Rifle was an assault rifle best for closed quarters combat.

“Some people are destined to succeed because they can tolerate the countless failures. They are able to endure hardship to obtain success amidst failure.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sighed. Against a young guy who was at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, not being able to shoot him in the head with a single shot was his failure. That was a thorough and irrefutable defeat.

“Perhaps, an occasional failure is also extremely good.”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation silently holstered his Explosive Spirit Rifle.

With a sudden burst of speed, Shi Xiaobai instantly appeared to the right of OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation. His fist was pulled back to his chest and his eyes were blazing!

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation slowly closed his eyes, waiting silently for Shi Xiaobai’s punch.

He was waiting for the failure he had always resisted.

Author’s Note: Hmph, even if it’s Crab Steps, This King will produce some sparks!

Chapter 67: Your Name

In an instant, Shi Xiaobai closed the distance of several dozen meters and arrived by OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's side. His fist that was ready to strike out was like a swinging hammer. He caused the air to turn turbulent as his fist caused a wind that whistled.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation slowly closed his eyes. Under his skull mask, the corner of his mouth suffused a pleased smile.

“Peng!”

That menacing fist struck OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's shoulder. The collision sound of bone against bone sounded like the collision of two solid pieces of stone.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's body involuntarily quivered a few times, as though he was about to be sent flying by the punch.

However, a moment later, on closer look. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's feet still remained rooted to the ground.

“Oh?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation suddenly opened his eyes as his quivering bodying abruptly came to a halt.

“This punch...isn’t it too f*cking weak?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation could not help but criticize in his heart.

Although he had given up resisting, he had still subconsciously shaken his body to offset the impact of the punch. However, he never expected the punch to be this weak. It didn’t even manage to break through his body’s physical defense!

Although this punch contained the Psionic Power of the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it was done without any methodology. It did not even achieve the standard of a F Class offensive skill!

In an age of compulsory education, other than those pitiful poor citizens in the slums, there shouldn’t be a Psionic Ability illiterate that did not even grasp basic F Class offensive skills, right?

Could it be that IChooseDogLeading had shown mercy?

“You...”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation turned to look at Shi Xiaobai beside him and was about to ask.

However, he saw Shi Xiaobai retreat backwards and smiled dryly.

“Heh heh, looks like Lady Luck is not on my side. This King actually...doesn't know any offensive techniques.”

Although Shi Xiaobai had grasped a defensive skill, Wavelet Shield and the movement technique, Crab Steps, he did not have a single Psionic Ability offensive skill.

Although his Psionic Ability control had reached the Familiarized Proficiency stage, controlling Psionic Power did not mean he could convert Psionic Power into an effective psionic attack. Shi Xiaobai realized this when he punched out. He had no idea how to make Psionic Power become a destructive psionic offensive skill.

Hence, when this punch hit OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation, it was like a wooden hammer striking steel. Not only did it not cause any damage, but it also ended up causing his fist to hurt.

He had successfully dodged the fatal shot through great difficulty. The fruit of victory was at hand, but he realized he did not have the strength to pluck it. It was like having a cooked duck stuffed in his mouth and then realizing that he did not have any teeth grown!

This sure was f*cking embarrassing!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes shifted as he immediately turned around and used Crab Steps to open up a distance from OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation. He already had a countermeasure in mind. Since his attacks could not break the defenses, the only way of winning was—attrition!

By expending OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's bullets, by exhausting his patience, consuming his desire to win, a battle of attrition could continue on till he offered to throw in the towel!

Shi Xiaobai had made up his mind. He quickly escaped to a distance hundreds of meters away before stopping. He turned around to study OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation. Since it was going to be a battle of attrition, his stamina and Psionic Power had to be reasonably allocated. He decided to move at the instant OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation pulled the trigger.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was stunned for a moment before realizing Shi Xiaobai's intentions. This guy wanted to fight a battle of attrition? Even though he knew that dodging that single shot was extremely difficult, he was still trying to make such a laughable effort?

“Should I call you dumb or naive?”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation sighed. He summoned the Explosive Spirit Rifle with his mind and suddenly realized that the habit of holstering the rifle was rather silly. After indulging in self-mockery, he raised his hand to aim at Shi Xiaobai who was standing at a spot. An immobile target was at times harder to aim than a moving target. This was because one did not have any information to judge the next action.

But...

“But the difference in our strength is still...too great.”

For the first time, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation felt that smurfing was not a pleasant affair. His eyes focused as he pulled the trigger!

“Peng...Peng!”

Two gunshots rang nearly at the same instant.

Two bullets flew out consecutively from the rifle's barrel, but they flew in completely different directions.

In a blink of an eye, a bullet hit Shi Xiaobai's phantom image, dissipating it.

As for the other bullet, it penetrated the head of Shi Xiaobai who was more than ten meters away!

“The battle is over. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation wins. Time used: 59 seconds.”

The system announced the outcome of the battle. However, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation looked at his index finger in silence. At the instant of him pulling the trigger, his index finger had uncontrollably pulled the trigger twice.

He had instinctively felt that his first bullet would fail to hit his

mark, and because of his darn instinct, he had used a B Class offensive skill—Wraith Surreal Shot.

This was an offensive skill that was meant to deal with Psionic Soul Realm warriors, but he had used it on a guy at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

“Player IChooseDogLeading is ready. Do you want to begin the match?”

The familiar voice resounded in his mind once again. This time, OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation silently chose “No”.

He holstered his Explosive Spirit Rifle and looked at Shi Xiaobai, saying, “I’m tired.”

The person who kept failing did not know exhaustion.

While the constantly winning him felt an exhaustion from the depths of his heart.

Wasn’t this ironic?

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation softly said, “I’m leaving.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, and after reacting to this information, he hurriedly said, “Why aren’t you playing anymore? We agreed to fight through the night?”

When OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation heard this, he could not help but have the corner of his mouth twitch. Alright, it appears as though the circuits in this guy's brain aren't like a normal person's.

“Little guy, compared to a particular man, your Crab Steps are still far inferior, so keep working hard!”

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation said warmly as he appended a sentence in his heart—I'll place my bets on you.

He used his mind to summon the game menu. Immediately the choice “Leave Room” appeared. OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation looked at the “Friend Request” at the corner of his eyes. As he smiled silently, he raised his fingers to point at “Leave Room”.

“Name!” Shi Xiaobai's voice was suddenly heard!

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation's hand could not help but stop as he turned to look at Shi Xiaobai.

“Tell me your name!” Shi Xiaobai said loudly.

OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation was surprised for a moment. Asking for another person's name in virtual competition was taboo. This little guy sure was...

“Thomas.”

Thomas hesitated for a moment before he gave his real name.

“Shi Xiaobai, that’s my name. A name of a man destined to become the King of the World!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly pointed his finger at Thomas and said loudly, “So Thomas, remember This King’s name. That’s because the defeats you gave This King, there will be a day This King will return them all!”

“So Thomas, keep working hard, keep climbing higher. That’s because This King will chase up to you one day and surpass you, flinging you far behind!”

“So Thomas, don’t stop, don’t be lazy and don’t slack off. Remember, there was a man who once suffered 1111 defeats under your rifle, and that man will one day take back the victory he deposited with you.”

“So Thomas, you must keep winning for This King!”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice crescendoed, a strength bursting out from his throat, causing those words to resound in one’s ears, penetrating straight to the heart.

“What an...unbridled guy.”

He was already too lazy to count the number of victories, but this guy had been keeping count.

A smile suffused on Thomas' lips. Having immersed himself in the virtual world to enjoy the smurfing of noobs, he might have indeed been slacking for too long. Ever since he could not see that man's back figure, it was as though he had lost the motivation to chase after him.

However, there was a madman desperately chasing from behind him. If he did not run faster, it might seem a bit outrageous.

Thomas lowered his head. He suddenly felt his heart pounding at this very moment.

“Also!”

Shi Xiaobai's voice resounded once again.

Thomas looked up and could not help but freeze.

He saw the little guy in a clown costume giving him a 90-degree deep bow.

“Thank you!”

While maintaining a 90-degree bow, his words said those two

words softly. His tone was very light, but the gratitude contained in those words were extremely heavy.

“I should be the one thanking you.”

Thomas sighed slightly before he reached out his hand to press the exit button.

.....

“Player OneHeadShotWithoutExplanation has left the room.”

Chapter 68: Yea-Habitant Of The Yea Planet

United States, Washington, Prince Virtual Competition Cafe, Room 250.

A stocky blond man lay in a virtual immersion cabin. The man wore a tight-fit t-shirt. His left arm was clearly muscular, but the right side of his body only revealed a stump where his right hand should be.

The blond man was in deep sleep when he suddenly opened his eyes.

...

Thomas woke up from his virtual immersion experience. Immediately, he felt intense pangs of hunger. His body was extremely stiff, and when he gently twisted his neck, it issued snapping sounds.

Looking sideways to the clock in the immersion cabin, he could not help but reveal a wry smile.

“Twenty hours.”

Even though he had removed the one minute preparation time before the battle through the room settings, after more than 1000 battles—as well as spending a long time “reprimanding” the little guy—he had still spent twenty hours.

This was the first time Thomas spent twenty consecutive hours in the virtual world. His body and mind was extremely exhausted, but for some reason, he felt energy coming from his chest.

“Shi Xiaobai, this name seems like he’s from China.”

Thomas muttered to himself. He crawled out of the immersion cabin. The food on the table had already gone cold, but having starved for twenty hours, he was not picky. His left hand picked up a fork to bring a steak into his mouth as he quickly chewed on it.

After putting down the fork, he used his only left hand to pour a cup of expensive red wine. The wine tasted slightly astringent, but for some baffling reason it tasted slightly bitter.

“This bottle of red wine is worth a person’s head.”

Thomas sighed lightly.

An F Class bounty for a criminal’s head could buy such a bottle of red wine.

Those Heroes who claimed to be righteous, but were unwilling to risk their lives to fight calamity fiends or astral beasts would use their Hero salary each month to bring home the bacon. Hence the money to buy wine naturally came from exchanging the heads of those criminals.

Bounty for criminals was evil.

The eradication of evil in exchange for a few bottles of red wine, this...was very heroic.

“So the taste of red wine is bitter.”

Thomas set the glass down and suddenly pulled out his cellphone. Touching the screen a few times, he entered the Contacts page and his finger lingered over a particular name.

After hesitating for a moment, he pressed down on it.

That was a number he had not called for twenty years. He thought he would never attempt to call this number for the rest of his life.

“Ring...Ring...Ring...”

The regular ringing tone sounded exactly like his heartbeat.

“Hello, who is this?”

A second after the call connected, a voice that sounded more mature than before, but still warm and magnetic entered his ears. Thomas' breathing paused slightly.

“It’s me. Thomas.”

Thomas’s voice suddenly turned dry. He had used red wine to moisten his throat, yet he produced a voice that was almost hoarse.

“Ha, so it’s my junior. It’s been so long since we got in touch. Has it been twenty years?”

The voice from the other end of the call sounded surprised and happy.

“Yea, it’s been twenty years, Yaris.”

Thomas silently said in his heart that to be precise, it was twenty years, one month and seven days.

...

Once upon a time, he and Yaris studied in the same school.

Back then, Yaris was his senior who was mocked by other classmates because he cultivated in Crab Steps, and he was a naive lowerclassmen who followed behind Yaris.

One day, he said to Yaris, “Yaris, there will be one day I will surpass you.”

Yaris answered with a laugh, “Then I will have to run faster. If I get caught up by a junior, it will be very embarrassing!”

Thomas believed that if Yaris stubbornly carried on using Crab Steps, then it was a matter of time before he surpassed Yaris.

After graduation, they joined different Hero organizations. They began their separate lives, but their deep ties of friendship made them keep in touch. They often met and competed against each other, as they played catch up.

However, their intersecting pathways finally separated on a particular day twenty years ago, never coming together again.

That day, 25-year-old Thomas lost his right hand while helping out in a meteor storm. He lost his right hand that he was always proud of for its gun-wielding prowess.

And during that meteor shower, 27-year-old Yaris raised his Crab Steps to the “Bold New World” realm and was hailed as an astounding world-class genius.

After that day, Thomas could no longer catch up to Yaris. Very soon, he could not even see his back.

.....

“Have you been well?”

Yaris' light greetings pulled Thomas back from his memories. Thomas could not help but make a bitter smile. Having lost his right hand, other than using his remnant powers at the seventh level of the Psionic Soul Realm to hunt low-level bounty criminals, he could only use the virtual world's experience to falsely satisfy his wish of having a right hand. Was such an existence...good?

“Yea, not bad.” Thomas answered softly.

The other end of the line gave a pondering reply and fell into silence.

Thomas lightly breathed out and suddenly said, “The reason why I called you is because I met a young guy...He resembles you.”

“Oh? Tell me.”

“Yea, his name is Shi Xiaobai and he comes from China. Like you, he uses Crab Steps. Heh, that ridiculous look makes me recall..recall...”

Thomas's throat suddenly choked like there was a fish bone in it. After being at a loss for words for a few moments, he carried on, “He uses Crab Steps just like you. And he said words that you previously said. He said that he likes failure...”

“Then in Unrivaled Heroes. You should have heard of it. Yea, it's a...Nah, it's a boring game...I met him in that game...”

“Yea, you are right. I was a smurf that smurfed noobs for one round...Alright, I admit, I did it many times...”

“Yaris, this isn’t the main point. The main point is that this guy, he got his head blown up in one shot...Yeah, I admit that smurfing noobs is no fun, but there’s no reason for you to laugh that much, right...”

“Furthermore, the main point isn’t the single headshot, but that he did not quit the game...Why? You think he’s a fool? That’s right, he’s a fool...But, he’s not just any fool...”

“ ... ”

Time slowly passed. Unknowingly, their conversation over the phone had lasted more than an hour.

Due to various interruptions from Yaris, Thomas went through great difficulty to finish his story of his encounter in Unrivaled Heroes. He finally summarized, “Anyway, I think he is very similar to you. Of course, this might be because ‘all funny fools in the world are equally dumb’, so it gave me this illusion.”

On the other end, Yaris fell into deep thought after hearing this unmalicious teasing.

“Yaris, I went on for so long, you should at least have some thoughts, right?”

Thomas' tone naturally had a grumbling tone. He had spent twenty hours in virtual immersion, and he should have been mentally exhausted, but he felt strangely clear-minded and inexplicably inspired.

“Are you telling me that the young kid named Shi Xiaobai was still full of fighting spirit after failing more than a thousand times?” Yaris suddenly spoke.

“Yea!” Thomas suffused a smile.

“He got viciously reprimanded by you hundreds of times and he still carried on?” Yaris continued asking.

“Yea!” Thomas intensified his tone slightly.

“He got mislead by your scammy theories and was still able to comprehend the essence of the divine crab?” Yaris' voice had a hint of incredulity.

“Yea...What? What do you mean scammy theories? Alright...I admit my theories might not be too realistic...but practice is the sole criterion for testing its truthfulness. Shi Xiaobai proved that I was right.” Thomas could not conceal the smiling in his voice.

“Heh heh...Was what you said about him comprehending Crab Phantom Image true?”

“Yea!”

“Was forcing you to use Wraith Surreal Shot true?”

“Yea!”

“That final unbridled monologue was also true?”

“Yea!”

“Alien Thomas, is ‘Yea’ the language of your planet?”

“Yea!”

After Thomas said that, he immediately realized something was wrong. As a cloud hung over his head, he said in a speechless manner, “Yaris, do you know how old you are now?”

Yaris chuckled and then suddenly fell into silence. Moments later, he said, “Thomas, you said that the child was quite similar to me, is that right?”

Thomas answered softly, “Yes, he reminds me of the past you.”

“You are wrong, Thomas.”

Thomas was stunned. He was wrong? So it was just wishful

thinking on his part?

Yaris suddenly said, “Do you know how many times I failed when challenging our teacher?”

Thomas was stunned. He remembered that it was many, many times, but he did not know how many times Yaris failed miserably under their teacher’s hand.

“51 times! Just 51 times!”

Yaris gave the answer himself.

Just 51 times? Compared to the more than 1000 times from that guy, it seemed...

That’s not right!

“No, it’s not the same. Every time you challenged our teacher, you would end up seriously injured. As for that guy, he suffered defeat every few seconds. Furthermore, it was in a virtual world. He did not need to endure physical pain...He...”

Thomas immediately attempted to analyze the differences between the virtual reality world and the real world. He was intending to prove that a number itself could not represent the intensity of failure.

“I gave up myself! Thomas, at the 51st time. I chose to gave up!”

Yaris suddenly cut Thomas off. He said loudly, “I have always regretted my choice of giving up back then. If I carried on challenging, failing a hundred times, two hundred times. If I could have endured defeat, then I could have cultivated Crab Steps to the ‘Bold New World’ realm earlier. On that day twenty years ago, I might have been able to...protect your right hand...but I didn’t... The truth is, on the 51st failure, I chose to give up!”

“Yaris!”

“Thomas! I once said I like failure...but that isn’t true. I hate failure more than anyone else...I could persist up to the 51st failure only because...I desired success more than anyone. However, my limit was just...a mere 51 times!”

“Yaris...”

“Do you understand? Thomas, that kid is different from me. He... is clearly much stronger than me.”

“Ya...ris.”

“Thomas, do you hate me?”

“Yar...”

Thomas was already choking up so much that he could not complete his words. His left hand was trembling while holding the cellphone to his ear. As he had lost his right hand, he did not have another hand to wipe the tears streaking across his cheek.

“Thomas, come visit me if you have the time. Hey, let’s make it tonight. There’s no way you can fault my wife’s cooking. I’ll get her to prepare your favorite red braised pork.”

“Yea...”

“Heh heh, Thomas, you are really a Yea-habitant of the Yea Planet.”

“Yea.”

Author’s Note: Author: “Give recommendation tickets”.
Everyone: “Yea.”

Author: “Reward the author handsomely”. Everyone: “Yea.”

Author: “1, 2, 3, 4. Another time”. Everyone: “Yea, f*ck your Yea.”

Chapter 69: There Is Really Such A Madman In This World?

Sunday, Sunday, it's Sunday yet again!

“Is there a reason to prevent me from losing my temper this Sunday?”

Xia Lin glanced at the Yang Weiwei beside him. He tried his best to calm his tone, but he could not conceal his rampaging temper.

The arrival of Sunday also meant the arrival of the weekly ranking match for the seven major branches of the Battle Arena Corporation. For [Gaia] branch that had been ranked last for five consecutive weeks, it was like the dawn of a nightmare.

As the general manager of [Gaia] branch, Xia Lin ended up in a terrible mood every Sunday.

Yang Weiwei sighed helplessly in her heart. As a woman, she understood how tough it was during the few days each month, but why is it as though you have a male period every week? The crux of the issue was, even if you have a male period, why do you always call me into your office...and reprimand for no reason?

Tell me, why do you make it so tough for me?

Yang Weiwei grumbled in her heart as her eyes began to have a

glint in them. In the past, she was helpless against Xia Lin's unreasonable demands, and could only silently shoulder the blame, but today, she was no longer the same person as before. She was no longer that ignorant person.

"I heard that Shi Xiaobai actually likes virtual competition very much, but due to certain reasons, he currently isn't in [Gaia]. However, I believe that when he returns to [Gaia], he will definitely come without any solicitation!" Yang Weiwei said a fabricated "I heard that" lie with a poker face.

"Really? Is the news reliable?" Xia Lin's eyes immediately lit up.

"Of course! The news comes from a rookie, Tu Dahei. Shi Xiaobai, Tu Dahei. Think carefully about the two names and compare them. Do you notice something?" Yang Weiwei pretended to ask in a mysterious manner.

"These two names seem...very alike." Xia Lin was slightly startled.

"It's more than similar. The pair of names is essentially a couple name! Do you understand? Shi Xiaobai and Tu Dahei..are ga...Well you know." Yang Weiwei gave an ambiguous smile.

"Are you telling me that Shi Xiaobai and Tu Dahei are gay? Ss... That Tu Dahei..." Xia Lin was somewhat shocked.

"Don't worry Manager Xia. That Tu Dahei is already a loyal

customer of our battle arena cafe. He even bought a deluxe package on Monday! Furthermore, Manager Xia, that Tu Dahei is said to be a genius on the same level as Shi Xiaobai!” Yang Weiwei said with a proud smile.

“Nice, very good. You did well!” Xia Lin immediately felt his mood turn for the better and patted Yang Weiwei on the shoulder to show his appreciation.

Yang Weiwei could not help but gloat in her heart. She thought, “Manager Xia O’ Manager Xia, you were the one who personally unsealed the Skills of Deception in me. So don’t blame this assistant from letting it shine and prosper.”

“I happen to be going to the data room to choose the candidate for this week’s match. I’ll also take the chance to see if this Tu Dahei really lives up to his title of a genius.”

Xia Lin looked high-spirited and began walking out the office. Noticing that Yang Weiwei had frozen, he said softly, “Why are you in a daze? Come on.”

“Yes, Manager Xia.”

Yang Weiwei was slightly stunned as she gave a stiff smile. She suddenly felt some regret over her whimsical flaunting of Tu Dahei as a genius on the same level as Shi Xiaobai. The data room’s numbers were a true reflection of strength. It would immediately expose her lies.

She could not help but worry that back when Yang Yang praised Tu Dahei as a genius, it was just perfunctory talk. In her opinion, that crab youth did not look like a genius in any way, and what if his data was terrible...?

“Ha, how terrible can terrible be?”

Yang Weiwei consoled herself.

...

...

“What? What did you say? He only won ten rounds in a week, and lost more than 1900 rounds?”

Xia Lin’s hysterical voice filled the data room. It caused the young statistician’s glasses to nearly fall to the ground. Yang Weiwei, who was beside him, was already pale in the face. Ten wins and nearly 2000 losses. This sort of win ratio could no longer be described with the word “terrible”.

Every week, each Battle Arena Corporation branch would produce aggregated statistics. And one of the factors was the average win rate of all the customers. Winning ten rounds and losing close to 2000 rounds had a win rate of 0.5%. It directly pulled down the branch’s average win rate by a large amount.

Great, Xia Lin was probably about to devour someone.

“Yang! Wei! Wei!”

Indeed, the way Xia Lin looked at Yang Weiwei was as though flames were about to flare out of his eyes

“Manager...Manager Xia, these numbers...are problematic!”

Suddenly, a trembling young statistician beside him said.

Xia Lin was stunned and immediately wiped his anger away. He said with a smile, “I knew it. How can someone lose 2000 rounds in a week?”

Yang Weiwei was also slightly relieved. 0.5% win rate was indeed so low that it sounded exaggerated. Just like a 99.5% win rate, it was not possible at all for normal people.

However, why was there a problem with the data in the data room?

“About that...it’s not that there’s a mistake with the win rate..but about that, Manager Xia, take a look at this...”

The young statistician gulped and pointed at a certain spot on the computer screen.

Xia Lin frowned and lowered his head to take a look at it. As his

eyes squinted, he looked at the numbers the statistician pointed to him. Suddenly, his eyes widened and he shouted with a voice of disbelief, “Every day’s virtual immersion was 22 hours!?”

The statistician wiped the sweat from his forehead as he said with a trembling voice, “That’s right, Manager Xia. According to the numbers, this player named Tu Dahei only spent two hours a day to settle his biological needs from Monday to Sunday. The rest of the time was spent in virtual immersion.”

Xia Lin boomed angrily, “Impossible! If he really did that, he would have been dead after five days!”

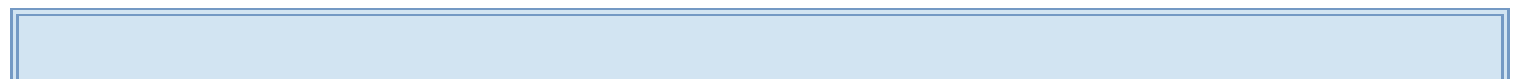
Yang Weiwei clicked her tongue too. By maintaining 22 hours in virtual immersion, it was extremely draining on one’s mind. Typically, one needed to sleep a whole day and night just to mentally recover from that, but to only rest for two hours for seven consecutive days? Is he mad? That’s not right, even a madman can’t do that!

“Not only that. Manager Xia, take a look at this.”

The statistician pointed to another corner.

Xia Lin’s eyes swept towards it and was immediately stunned.

There were three lines of bewildering numbers.



[Psionic Ability Offensive Skill: None]

[Psionic Shield Defensive Skill: Wavelet Shield (11,024 times)]

[Flash Motion Movement Technique: Crab Steps (220,457 times)]

The three lines indicated the number of combat skills Tu Dahei used during the week, but the results...

“Hurry up and kill all the viruses in the data server’s system for me, your father!”

Xia Lin was enraged that he even used such a vulgar form of self-addressment.

“Manager Xia, the system doesn’t have any virus. Furthermore, the numbers from the data servers can’t be wrong...”

The statistician was already close to tears.

“No virus? I think it’s your brain that has a virus! F*cking think with your mind, can you? Let’s not talk about using Crab Steps for 200,000 times, and let’s not talk about losing 2000 rounds in a week. Let your father ask you, without using any Psionic Ability offensive skills, how did he win ten rounds. Don’t tell me they all f*cking surrendered!?”

The moment Xia Lin's temper flared, his mouth was filled with vulgarities.

“Manager Xia...You really...guessed right.”

The statistician gave a stiff smile. With a few mouse clicks, the screen changed a few times before revealing a large table.

Xia Lin stared at it and was immediately dumbfounded. He rubbed his eyes and after focusing at it again, he could not help but draw a cold gasp.

At this moment, the statistician gave a dry cough and said. “These are the specific numbers for the ten victories. The numbers indicate that these ten matches happen to be his last ten matches. And each combat match exceeded an hour and the result of the match was...the surrendering of the other party. Summarizing the usage of 200,000 Crab Steps and how there was zero usage of offensive skills, I believe...the opponents in these ten matches were forced to surrender through a battle of attrition by this player named Tu Dahei...”

Without the statistician's explanation, Xia Lin had obtained the same conclusion after a few seconds of looking at the table. However, he did not dare believe the accuracy of this conclusion. He was lost.

To battle tirelessly without any rest for seven consecutive days, and in every match, he only used Crab Steps and Wavelet Shield to

drain his opponent until they were forced to quit. This was insanity, wasn't it?

“There is really such a madman in this world?”

Chapter 70: Yang Weiwei's Soul Of Deception

“There is really such a madman in this world?”

Xia Lin went into a daze as he looked at the numbers on the computer screen.

“The world is indeed filled with wonders!”

Having finally found an opportunity, Yang Weiwei immediately stood up and said with a beaming smile, “Manager Xia, I told you right from the beginning that this Tu Dahei and Shi Xiaobai are geniuses on the same level. Geniuses are naturally different from us ordinary people. To not sleep for seven days and to defeat his opponents without any attacks, all of that is just child's play for a genius!”

Yang Weiwei's ability at speaking nonsense had been promoted to a considerable level.

“Yes, what you said makes sense.”

Xia Lin was stunned and showed his agreement regarding Yang Weiwei's “nonsense”. Didn't the saying go that geniuses were existences that did not conform to logic?

“Ding Dong!”

At this moment, a short message ring tone was heard from Xia Lin's pocket.

Xia Lin quickly took out his cellphone and looked at it. Moments later, he said, "This week's match rules have been decided. It is a... seven-person free-for-all?"

The rules of the weekly battle arena cafe battle were rotated each week. The number of participants and the method of competition changed every time. The main reason was to prevent the branches from preparing ahead of time. By forcing them to select customers from the past week to form a battle team was the best way of reflecting the branch's true strength.

"Manager Xia, what are the specific rules?"

The statistician quickly asked. Manager Xia always left the important task of choosing their contestants to him, hence, he was the one who was most concerned about the rules of the weekly match.

Xia Lin glanced at the statistician and said, "This week's rules are very simple. Each of the seven major branches will send a contestant. The seven contestants would engage in a free-for-all deathmatch in the same venue, and the ranking will be decided according to the order of their deaths."

The statistician was left startled before he asked, "So that means we only need to send one person this time?"

In the past, the weekly matches were either three people taking turns in battle, a five-person team deathmatch, or the controlling of checkpoints with seven people. This was the first time only one person from each of the seven branches was needed and was also the first time a free-for-all happened. This was because if a branch's strength was determined by a single customer, then it would appear like child's play, hence, it was unknown why this mode was suddenly chosen for this week.

Xia Lin said in all seriousness, "Miss Xiao Xiao suddenly decided to represent [Muses] branch this week. This rule was personally proposed by Miss Xiao Xiao. I believe all of you must have heard of the Miss Xiao Xiao's deeds. Do you understand? This week's competition is more important than any other week. If we were to rank last this week, I might not be able to secure my position, and for you, it would definitely be gone!"

The statistician struggled to swallow his saliva. He felt an immense pressure.

Xiao Xiao was the Battle Arena Corporation's Chairman's daughter. Although she was young, she was well connected and did things with efficiency and firmness. For her to suddenly decide on participating in this week's branch match, it was very likely because she was amidst incognito inspection.

If [Gaia] branch remained at the bottom this week, Battle Arena Corporation might very well decide on abandoning [Gaia] branch and reestablish another branch in other developed cities. The outstanding Xia Lin might be once again assigned elsewhere, but

for a statistician like him, who was extremely common, unemployment was his only outcome.

The statistician hurriedly sat in front of the computer and began analyzing the data of the past week's customers. He could only choose one person, and that person also determined his fate. Thus, he had to make every effort to pick out the strongest person.

Xia Lin also became slightly nervous as he looked at the statistician's nervousness and dedication.

“Found it!”

In a while, the statistician stopped his typing and the moving of his mouse. He looked at the screen and said with a dry smile, “Manager Xia, this week, the overall data indicates that the best customer is...Wang Qiang.”

Xia Lin's face stiffened and said coldly, “There's no one stronger?”

The name Wang Qiang was no stranger to Xia Lin. This customer named Wang Qiang had represented [Gaia] branch three times in the weekly matches. He was last all three times. Although the failure of a group match could not be blamed on a single person, Wang Qiang's repeated failures at crucial moments made it difficult to place any trust in him.

“No...there's no one else. From the data, this customer...named

Wang Qiang is the best one this week. Manager Xia, are...are we still going to select him?" The statistician asked with a wretched face.

"Heh heh, do you think I'll fall into that same shit hole for the fourth time?" Xia Lin coldly said, "Keep finding. That trash named Wang Qiang, I can't trust him again!"

Minutes later, the statistician quickly selected a few customers whose numbers ranked near the top. However, on inspection, they were all familiar names that had participated in the weekly matches. These people were probably even weaker than Wang Qiang!

The duo immediately fell into silence. Xia Lin's silence was because he was suppressing his wrath, while the statistician's silence was a result of feeling disturbed and nervous. They had already realized a cruel truth—there were no talents in [Gaia] branch's customer base!

Amidst the silent atmosphere, Yang Weiwei stood there awkwardly. She could not leave, but staying here made her uncomfortable. Her eyes suddenly rolled as she thought of a solution to extricate herself from this repressive situation. Having had her Skills of Deception awoken, she was now extremely confident. She had an invincible feeling that "with deception in hand, the world is my oyster."

Moments later, Yang Weiwei's eyes lit up as she suddenly took a step forward and rapped the table. She attracted the duo's gazes before coughing and said, "Manager Xia, doesn't the rules say that

whoever lasts the longest in the free-for-all would get the highest ranking?”

Xia Lin frowned and said, “Yes, but so what?”

Yang Weiwei gave a sly smile and whispered, “Manager Xia, did you forget someone?”

Xia Lin hurriedly asked, “Who?”

Yang Weiwei said loudly, “The person that did not sleep for seven days. That person, who managed to last for more than an hour in ten successive battles to the point of forcing his opponents to run, Tu Dahei!

Xia Lin’s eyes immediately lit up. He had indeed overlooked Tu Dahei. After all, by relying on the data, Tu Dahei’s numbers definitely placed him last.

However, to be able to last for more than an hour for ten consecutive matches to the point of his opponents quitting, then Tu Dahei’s survivability was clearly exceptional. Furthermore, in the rules set by Xiao Xiao for the seven-people free-for-all, the key was survivability time. And for this, Tu Dahei might be capable of victory!

However...

Xia Lin’s eyes darkened slightly as he sighed and said,

“Unfortunately, Tu Dahei is only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Furthermore, the weekly matches do not allow the adjusting of numbers. Although Psionic Soul Realm warriors and above are barred from participating, the customers chosen by the other branches are at least at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Even that trash, Wang Qiang, is at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Even if Tu Dahei can flourish in battles at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it would probably still be difficult fighting against opponents at the seventh level and above.”

This was also the most important reason why Xia Lin disregarded Tu Dahei immediately. Although the difference between the third level and the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was not a chasm, there was still a definite large gap.

“Manager Xia, you are overthinking it!”

Yang Weiwei said with all seriousness, “You don’t know Tu Dahei! He is considered the most death-fearing rookie in the history of [Gaia]!”

Yang Weiwei’s Soul of Deception was unable to endure the thirst!

Chapter 71: Devil's Footwork

“You don't know Tu Dahei! He is considered the most death-fearing rookie in the history of [Gaia]!”

When Yang Weiwei said those words, her eyes were filled with admiration.

Xia Lin could not help but exclaim, “The most death-fearing?”

Yang Weiwei smiled slightly and said, “Yes, Tu Dahei is extremely, extremely afraid of death. It is even so in the virtual world! And it's because he's afraid of death that makes him possess life-preserving methods that astound people. It is said that Shi Xiaobai fell in love with Tu Dahei because of his impressive ability of staying alive!”

“Do you get it? Manager Xia, this seven-person free-for-all is not a competition of strength. How to survive is the key to victory! If it was Tu Dahei, because of his fear of death, he would keep a very, very low profile right from the beginning. He would try his best to keep his presence to the minimum. Even if he is no match for the other contestants, he will hide from them better than anyone. He will definitely try his best to survive!”

“So Tu Dahei might not clinch final victory, but he will definitely not be the first loser! And if he is lucky, the death-fearing Tu Dahei's hiding and dodging might allow him to survive until there're only two people left!”

Xia Lin was stunned hearing this. He began murmuring to himself, “The person who fears death the most knows how to survive the best...”

For [Gaia] branch, as long as they were not placed last, it would be a tremendous improvement. Clearly, Wang Qiang would not be able to do it. He was not strong, furthermore, he was too provocative.

And if Tu Dahei was as Yang Weiwei described—a person who kept a low profile and was afraid of death—a miracle might be created?

“Alright, let’s do it. Weiwei, contact Tu Dahei. He shall be this week’s contestant! Also, if [Gaia] branch can escape the fate of being last this week, I’ll double your salary and promote you!”

Xia Lin patted Yang Weiwei on the shoulder, calling out a rare “Weiwei”.

Yang Weiwei was surprised. She was just trying to get out of this cramped room, who knew that she would receive such a pleasant surprise?

At that moment, Yang Weiwei felt that in this game called life, learning the technique of “speaking nonsense” was awesome!

...

...

In the virtual world, two figures were chasing each other with a giant colosseum as the background. It looked like they were having fun, but the atmosphere felt like enemies chasing after each other. One of them was dressed in a clown costume while the other one was brandishing a red saber. He was constantly attempting to slash at the clown.

The saber beams were bright red in color. Every slash seemed to burst out into a cold blood splash. But upon careful inspection, regardless of which angle the saber sliced in—top to bottom, bottom to top, left to right, or right to left—it was unable to touch the clown in any way. The clown's footwork was extremely strange, as though it was devilish crab. And it was this strange footwork that would dodge several saber beams from a slight move from time to time.

The saber-wielding person appeared extremely irritated. The way he slashed his saber was already random without pattern. He was grumbling softly, swinging his saber at the clown who was running and stopping from time to time. Sometimes, he even used his saber as a projectile as though he was a child that had been teased to the point of losing his mind.

As for the clown, every time the saber-wielding person threw his saber, he would stop at his spot to wait for his opponent to pick up his saber. He did not attack the saber-wielding person at all, right from the beginning. His motions were not elegant, but the way he deftly avoided attacks made him look like an elegant gentleman.

Of course, in the eyes of the saber-wielding person, this extremely provocative clown that kept dodging was like an old hooligan who sexually assaulted women!

“Octoslash!”

Suddenly, the saber-wielding person shouted. The flames in his eyes were flaring as he turned around and produced a cross cut with a vertical split. In an instant, he completed slashes from eight different directions. Eight red saber beams flew at an extremely fast speed at the clown, as though it was sealing off any route of escape!

“Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu!”

Eight flesh tearing sounds erupted, as the clown’s body was split into 9 sections instantly!

The saber-wielding person, having appeared to have completed his assault, sighed heavily instead. The sigh was filled with a deep sense of exhaustion.

The nine body sections distorted and disappeared into the light. It was just a phantom image!

The true clown was standing behind the saber-wielding person. He patted the saber-wielding person on the shoulder and whispered, “You can do it.”

These three words seemed to give the saber-wielder infinite motivation, hence he...threw the blood saber to the ground. With a grumble he sat on the cement ground. With his sad and indignant look, he announced his wish to die.

“God DogLeading, please do me a favor and give me a quick death!”

Wang Qiang was very, very tired. It was a tiredness that came from his heart. He looked up at “IChooseDogLeading” who was dressed in a clown costume and had a clown mask on his face. This figure that was standing not very far from him had given him deep sorrowful feelings and an anger that came from the bottom of his heart.

“It’s been an hour, a whole hour. Haven’t you had enough fun?”

Noticing “IChooseDogLeading” standing there motionless, Wang Qiang could not help but shout out in anger.

This game of cat-and-mouse battle had lasted for an hour. Very early on, Wang Qiang had come to the conclusion that “IChooseDogLeading” was a darn smurf. That free and easy dodging posture, that funny but agile Crab Steps, and that Wavelet Shield which would remove any danger at the most critical moment, had dodged his attacks numerous times, as well as resolve his attacks numerous times. The abuse had disheartened him, making him question life.

Wang Qiang once thought of choosing to quit, but his laughable

pride made him persist on.

This was because he was also a smurf. In reality, he was at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He lowered his power to the third level to enjoy the feeling of smurfing noobs. Of course, he would occasionally encounter more powerful smurfs too, but this was the first time he met such a sick smurf like “IChooseDogLeading”.

This sick bastard did not use a single Psionic Ability offensive skill throughout the process. All he did was dodge and the way he dodged was not simple jumping up and down or scurrying around the battle grounds. Instead, the sick bastard would quietly stand on the spot and wait for his saber to slash over before easily dodging it. When he was infuriated and began to randomly slash forward in a charge, the sick bastard would use that bizarre and unpredictable Crab Steps to dodge them all. And before he even realized it, the sick bastard would appear behind him, patting on his shoulder and encourage him with a “You can do it!”.

Sometimes, he would think that he had finally struck the sick bastard, but a shield would appear at the critical moment to block the attack. Other times, he would think that he had finally split the sick bastard into two, but be shocked to realize that it was just a unbelievable illusion.

Wang Qiang’s strength was at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, yet he was being toyed in a third level match. Hence, he came up with the simple conclusion that “IChooseDogLeading” was a smurf much more powerful than him.

Wang Qiang, who was also a smurf, also deeply understood why “IChooseDogLeading” did not use his Psionic Ability offensive skills the entire time.

“He is enjoying the pleasure of smurfing his enemies till they quit!”

Wang Qiang believed he had guessed at the answer. To prevent “IChooseDogLeading” from getting his wish, he had persisted on for an hour and did not choose to quit.

And the most important reason was that he wished to seize the opportunity to slash “IChooseDogLeading” to death and then mock him, “Idiot, you f*cked up, huh?”

However, at this moment, Wang Qiang finally came to realize the harsh reality. There was no way he could slash “IChooseDogLeading”. That clearly wasn’t Crab Steps, that was clearly a devil’s footwork in the guise of a D Class technique!

Wang Qiang felt despair and anger simultaneously.

Don’t you enjoy the pleasure of smurfing your enemy till they quit?

Fine, I will not run then!

If you have the guts, then kill me!

With this thought in mind, Wang Qiang threw his saber and sat on the cement floor in the arena. His intentions were clear. I'm not playing with you, do whatever you wish!

IChooseDogLeading seemed to be surprised for a moment before he suddenly waved his fists and shout, "You can do it! Don't give up! Believe in yourself! Believe in miracles!"

Wang Qiang's lips twisted as he said with a deep voice, "God DogLeading, hurry up and give me a quick death! There is no phrase known as 'running away' in my, King of Leopards' dictionary. If you insist on not attacking, I'll keep sitting here. We can both waste time here together!"

IChooseDogLeading fell into silence for a few moments before he sighed and said, "You win."

Wang Qiang was stunned, what did that mean?

"Player IChooseDogLeading has left the room."

Chapter 72: Battle Of The Sacred Cup

“What a shameless asshole!”

After Shi Xiaobai left the room, he could not help but curse.

The asshole was clearly referring to Wang Qiang. Over the past seven days, he had encountered a few assholes who sat on the floor asking for their deliverance after they failed to beat him. As such, Shi Xiaobai was furious over such matters.

“Those assholes keep pleading for This King to give them death, but unfortunately, This King does not have any game credits to buy any super weapons...”

Shi Xiaobai sighed. He had neither grasped any Psionic Ability offensive skills, nor had the time to focus on Psionic Ability offensive skills. He had to focus on cultivating Crab Steps during the seven days. As such, he was unable to kill his opponent, preventing him from gaining victory. The only way he could win was to force his opponent to quit.

After Thomas left, Shi Xiaobai encountered numerous opponents. Amongst them, fewer than ten people could hit him while he was using Crab Steps. The remaining could only watch him helplessly.

However, the reason why Shi Xiaobai failed to obtain victory all this while was because—other than those assholes like Wang Qiang

who just gave up—he would suffer an exhaustion of his Psionic Power and stamina.

In Unrivaled Heroes, Psionic Power and stamina were reflected by actual numbers. Every time he used Crab Steps or Wavelet Shield, they would expend his Psionic Power and stamina; hence the reason why Shi Xiaobai lost a majority of the time was because he was drained of his Psionic Power and stamina.

Thus, throughout the seven days—other than steadily improving his proficiency in Crab Steps, as well as deepening and consolidating the essential Crab Steps principles he learned from Thomas—the greatest benefit he gained was learning the allocation of his Psionic Power and stamina.

Shi Xiaobai learned how to use the smallest possible motions needed to dodge an attack. He learned how to use the least Psionic Power and stamina to complete every move.

Hence, he finally managed to obtain ten successive rounds of victory!

Then ten successive opponents had struggled an hour with him. After they realized that there was no way to hit him, they quit the room in a fit of rage.

After losing nearly 2000 rounds, Shi Xiaobai had finally obtained victory, so he was in an extremely good mood, until his 11th round where he met an asshole calling himself the King of Leopards....

“Assholes are so hypocritical.”

Shi Xiaobai said with a sigh. Suddenly, he felt dizzy and lightheaded. Fatigue seemed to sweep at him like a tsunami, causing him to nearly faint.

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly bit his lower lip to use the pain to keep himself awake.

It had been seven days. Although his improvement was very significant, he did not hear the Absolute Choice announcing his completion of the task. This meant that his Crab Steps had yet to reach the “Dominating Refinement” realm.

Thinking of it, it was indeed no surprise. Spending seven months to improve any combat skill to the “Dominating Refinement” realm was already considered an astounding feat, a human sensation.

An attempt to complete a sensation that took seven months in seven days would be called a divine miracle, so how could it be done so smoothly?

Perhaps, this choice was a mistake from the very beginning.

Since this Absolute Choice was a daily-style choice, there was no chance for him to repeat it. If he succeeded in the mission, he would be rewarded. If he failed, he would receive a punishment. It was very fair, but also very cruel.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not mind if he was rewarded or punished. As long as he had the feeling that he was slowly becoming stronger, he would feel excited. This uncontrollable excitement made him unable to stop himself. For him, to be able to be mad and excited over a particular goal, the goal did not matter. It did not matter how impossible the goal was, as long as he immersed himself in the joyful pursuit of the goal.

“This King will definitely create a miracle!”

Shi Xiaobai waved his fist and looked up at the blue sky that made up the game interface. After a few minutes of rest, he realized he was getting even more tired, so he decided to stop resting. He was in a hurry to begin the next match.

Clicking on Single Person Battle Mode, Room Mode...

“Warning! Warning! Severe Warning! You have spent 25 consecutive hours in virtual immersion. It is extremely harmful to your mind. Please wake up from the virtual immersion as soon as possible or there might be dire consequences.”

The system’s warning blared.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. Only then did he realize that he had not left the virtual world for 25 hours. Upon realizing the existence of reality, he immediately felt pangs of hunger attack his stomach.

At this moment, a voice came blaring from the sky.

“Life detectors have detected the entry of another living object into your room. For your safety, the virtual reality connection will be severed automatically in three seconds to wake you up immediately.”

“3, 2, 1!”

The moment the system finished its countdown, Shi Xiaobai felt his as though his consciousness was being struck by sea waves. The world in front of him went black, and soon it was flooded with light. He blinked his eyes in discomfort as the virtual immersion box’s internals came into his view.

At the same time, there were the sounds of high heels tapping on the rosewood floor coming from outside the virtual immersion box.

“I’m Yang Weiwei, sorry for disturbing you.”

...

...

Ten minutes later.

“So you mean, you wish for This King to represent this branch for the Battle of the Sacred Cup?”

Shi Xiaobai was sending warm pork into his mouth. As he looked at the delicate-looking girl in white-collared clothes in front of him, his eyes shimmered with a strange glint.

“Yes, Manager Xia admires your strength greatly. He wishes that you can represent [Gaia] branch at this week’s seven-person free-for-all.”

Yang Weiwei found Shi Xiaobai’s gaze strange, but she did not think too much about it. She did not correct Shi Xiaobai on him terming the seven-person free-for-all a “Battle of the Sacred Cup”. She was only worried over how to persuade Shi Xiaobai into joining the seven-person free-for-all. If it was the previous her, she would definitely explain the rules of the battle carefully and brag about the great prizes at the weekly match. However, the present her had already been enlightened to the truth—nonsense was king!

Hence, she continued, “The battle arena cafe will set up a viewing hall. Every week’s weekly match will be aired free to all residents in Steel City. When that happens, you would receive the undivided attention of thousands of people. And the key thing is that Shi Xiaobai might even watch it!”

Who didn’t wish to be the focus of attention? Who didn’t wish to show their best in front of their idol?

Yang Weiwei once again made a brazen lie.

Shi Xiaobai swallowed the ground meat in his mouth and he appeared to be deep in thought. He then asked moments later, “The other six contestants, are they strong?”

Yang Weiwei hesitated for a moment. If she verbally weakened the other six contestants to scam Shi Xiaobai into joining, then it might lead to Shi Xiaobai underestimating them. Yang Weiwei had hopes that Shi Xiaobai would keep a low profile in the free-for-all and survive as a result, allowing his ranking to be higher. Hence, she said hesitantly, “Those six contestants...are strong. However, the seven-person free-for-all is a competition of survivability. Your Crab Steps is a huge advantage, so I believe you would give a wonderful performance!”

Yang Weiwei suddenly recalled that she had told Xia Lin that Tu Dahei was extremely afraid of death, hence she had to bite the bullet and say, “The other six contestants are regulars when it comes to competing in the weekly matches. They have certain friendships and also conflicts, so you must try to keep a low profile. As long as you think of a method to lower your presence, you will definitely obtain very good results at the weekly match.”

“So those six people that were chosen by the Sacred Cup are very powerful, and the rules allow these six people to gang up on one person?”

After Shi Xiaobai heard Yang Weiwei’s explanation, he gave his own understanding of the matter.

Yang Weiwei thought for a moment before nodding and said, “The rules allow six to fight one, but as long as you keep a sufficiently low profile, and are careful enough, that situation would not happen. So I suggest that you hide from the beginning, then...”

“This King agrees!” Shi Xiaobai interrupted Yang Weiwei’s blabbering.

“What?” Yang Weiwei was stunned.

“This King agrees to participating in the Battle of the Sacred Cup. This King does not have time to waste time with you. Since the Battle of the Sacred Cup is in the virtual world, This King will first go to the virtual world and wait there.”

After Shi Xiaobai said that, he went back into the virtual immersion box and lay down. Today was the last day of his Absolute Choice mission, so he had no time to spare. As for agreeing to participate in Yang Weiwei’s described seven-person free-for-all, it was because he had been training against others one-on-one. He believed that if six people were to gang up on him, he might be able to make another breakthrough with his Crab Steps.

“Aren’t you resting?”

Yang Weiwei struggled to swallow a mouthful of saliva. Although she was pleasantly surprised that Shi Xiaobai easily agreed to joining the weekly match—when she thought of how Shi Xiaobai spent an average of 22 hours a day for 7 continuous days in virtual

reality and had to participate in the grueling seven-person free-for-all—she believed that he would need to rest. If not, how could his body take it?

Yang Weiwei suddenly felt upset as she vaguely felt like she had done something wrong.

Shi Xiaobai did not answer.

No, he used his actions to give his answer.

He pressed the activation button twice and entered the virtual world once again.

Author's Notes: Some experienced readers will say: Heh heh, the upcoming plot must be face-smacking and acting awesome. To that, I immediately felt like sending a smack over. Isn't that fricking obvious? After setting up the plot for so long, how can there not be a burst of acting awesome to allow everyone to enjoy it? There will definitely be face-smacking. As for acting awesome, there will certainly be no lack of it. However, don't worry. This book's acting awesome method has always been fresh. It will definitely be different from other fancy schlocks. With a bit of foreshadowing, there will be wave after wave of climatic plots. Everyone, please look forward to it.

Chapter 73: God DogLeading

In a disaster-ridden era, the virtual competition industry that seemed to link itself with entertainment was not thought highly of by people. This was a reason why there were few customers that patronized the battle arena cafe.

However, every weekend, the number of people who came to the battle arena cafe would increase greatly. The main reason was a result of the weekly matches organized by the Battle Arena Corporation over the weekend. Another essential reason was a result of the strategy employed by the battle arena cafe—the weekly match was aired live for free.

Although Steel City was [Gaia]’s base, [Gaia] was only a Hero organization. The people in a Hero organization were valued by their quality not quantity, hence, the official members were a tiny fraction of the residents. Most of the residents were original residents before the base was built, as well as family members the official members brought with them. These original residents were similar to the city’s residents. They did not have much resistance against a live broadcast of a competition that was almost at the quality of a movie. Furthermore, the video quality in the battle arena cafe’s viewing hall was extremely high and most importantly, it was free!

Hence, although Yang Weiwei’s description of “undivided attention of thousands of people” was somewhat exaggerated, the number of people who came to the viewing hall to watch the weekly match live would not just be a handful of people. It would number at least a hundred.

And today was a special day. As the news of Miss Xiao Xiao personally participating in this week's competition was deliberately publicized by the battle arena cafe, the battle arena cafe's viewing hall was soon filled with people.

Whenever Xiao Xiao was mentioned, people would immediately think of four key information—Battle Arena Corporation's little princess, Pehua University's top student, a Psyker richly endowed by nature, a great beauty that could topple cities. And once these four key information were put together, it naturally created the effects of fans that were no less inferior than celebrities and idols.

Those people who came to the battle arena cafe could not only watch the live broadcast of the competition that was as good as a movie, but they could also catch a glimpse of Princess Xiao Xiao's glory. And most critical of all, it was all fricking free! Hence, even citizens that were disgusted by virtual competition were also attracted.

Yang Yang was one of those who came to watch the competition. He was different from others, because he was attracted here by Shi Xiaobai. Yang Weiwei had specially sent him a text message, bragging about how she had accomplished the “feat” of recommending Tu Dahei as a contestant. Yang Yang expressed his disgust at Yang Weiwei for letting a third level Psionic Mortal Realm rookie participate in a free-for-all match filled with seventh level Psionic Mortal Realm warriors. However, he could not help but give her a thumbs up, praising her with a “well done”.

He was eager to understand Shi Xiaobai's true strength. This was

the only way he could know the difference between them. Yang Weiwei's act was no doubt something he found agreeable deep within his heart.

However, the present Yang Yang was honestly feeling terrible. This was because he met the one person he least wanted to see in the viewing hall. Even worse, this person's seat was just next to his.

Yang Yang's eyes struggled for a moment as he gently sat beside that person, hoping that the person would not realize his arrival.

However, things never go the way we think they will. The moment he sat down, that person turned his head over and was surprised. He then made a cold taunt, "Hey, isn't this that mortal with pretty alright Mind Expanse? Your name is Yang-something?"

Yang Yang's mouth twitched slightly. The blond youth sitting beside him named Kevin was as infuriating as ever. Back at the Rookie Evaluation Test, he had been figuratively smacked in the face by Shi Xiaobai till his face swelled, but yet he was still unrepentantly trying to act the fatty.

In the past, Yang Yang would always keep a distance from a C Class Psyker like Kevin since he knew the difference between an ordinary person and a genius. He did not dare cross the line. However, after meeting Shi Xiaobai, he felt that the biological creatures known as geniuses were not that much superior.

Look at Shi Xiaobai, he is such an impressive genius, but isn't he quite cute from his foolishness?

“Hey, it's you. Blondy Narcissist.”

Yang Yang pretended to just discover Kevin's presence and gave an unsparing response. He no longer felt awe towards Kevin at all.

Kevin's face immediately turned liver-colored. This shameful salutation reminded him of Shi Xiaobai's wretched face. The fateful encounter of the Rookie Evaluation test was still fresh on his mind, so he coldly snorted, “Hmph, abject mortal.”

Yang Yang curled his lips. He was not interested in engaging in a meaningless war of words with Kevin. He ignored Kevin and turned to look at the huge screen in the viewing hall.

At this moment, the screen was playing explanatory clips. In a bid to replicate the viewing experience of the Heroes league, the Battle Arena Corporation invited two rather famous commentators every week. And the invited commentators today were a top-ranked father-daughter commentator duo—Sweets and Biscuit.

Although Biscuit was slightly plump from age, his professional knowledge was good. He was extremely eloquent and was currently serving as the national professional league's commentator. As for his daughter, Sweets, who looked extremely sweet, her commentating could be said to be better than her father's. At a young age, she was already very reputable in the commentator world.

The Battle Arena Corporation's invitation of these two people as commentators indicated how much importance they placed in this week's competition. After all, Princess Xiao Xiao was personally participating in it, so even if it was virtual competition, it was not to be treated lightly.

At this moment, the two commentators had finished introducing the rules of this week's weekly competition. After the seven-person free-for-all battle format was announced, it sparked a flurry of discussion amongst the audience in the viewing hall immediately. Compared to a group deathmatch or tag-team fighting, a simple and brutal seven-person free-for-all appeared more exciting.

After introducing the rules of the competition, the commentators introduced the seven contestants. The atmosphere quietened down. Regular members of the audience had already guessed at the candidates of each branch. After all, every branch could only send one contestant, so it was clearly going to be the branch's strongest player.

Other than having the Muse branch's contestant switched to Princess Xiao Xiao, all the regular members of the audience knew who was the strongest in every branch. Hence, they were only looking forward to the commentators introduction of Xiao Xiao. As for the others as well as the most likely strongest King of Leopards nominated by [Gaia] branch, they could not be any more familiar with them.

And when the two commentators introduced the first five contestants, nothing exceeded the expectations of the people.

Psionic Mortal Realm 7th level, machine gun user—
GunfireInTheWorld

Psionic Mortal Realm 7th level, hammer fatso—IAmNoPig

Psionic Mortal Realm 8th level, dual blade man—
DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld

Psionic Mortal Realm 8th level, sniper—ThatTenderOneShot

Psionic Mortal Realm 9th level, spear-wielding youth—
WindWithoutTrace

These five people were regulars. They had delivered an excellent performance last week, so they naturally had some fans. From time to time, there would be exclamations and praises coming from inside the viewing hall. The youth named “WindWithoutTrace” received the most enthusiastic cheers.

At this moment, the screen used to introduce the contestants showed a frame with a person’s figure wearing a clown mask and a clown costume. The audience in the viewing hall was immediately stunned while the commentators also seemed taken aback.

“This is a fresh face. It looks like [Gaia] branch has obtained a new customer.” Sweets said.

“Yea, this name is quite special. Tell me, how should we understand the name, ‘IChooseDogLeading’?” Biscuit said with a smile.

“Maybe, dog leading is a nickname of the person this contestant likes?” Sweets said with a laugh.

The two commentators began exploring the oddness and profoundness over the name “IChooseDogLeading”.

There was a commotion in the viewing hall.

“It’s actually not King of Leopards? Has a stronger customer appeared in [Gaia] branch?”

“IChooseDogLeading, does anyone know the meaning behind this name. Seeking answers online.”

“Could [Gaia] branch rise up today? IChooseDogLeading is actually a long hidden weapon?”

“...”

As Yang Yang heard the discussion, he wanted to shout out loud and tell them that this was Shi Xiaobai’s in-game nickname. Don’t think too deeply or you might turn silly when you learn the truth.

Yang Yang sighed slightly. As he glanced at Kevin, who was also

murmuring to himself in an attempt to guess the meaning behind the name, as though he knew what was going on, Yang Yang was immediately rendered speechless.

He turned his head to survey his surroundings when he suddenly realized that on his other side, his neighbor was trembling. From the way he looked, he appeared extremely excited.

Following that, Yang Yang heard that person trembly say the words—"God...God DogLeading!?"

Chapter 74: Xiao Xiao's Rules

“God...God DogLeading!?”

Wang Qiang said those words with a tremble. At this moment, he recalled the terrifying domination brought about by God DogLeading.

Wang Qiang had come here with an infuriated mindset to see which contestant had replaced him. At that moment when he realized the person was God DogLeading, he lost his will to complain any further. He was astonished and shocked, having mixed emotions of “so the Gods are with us”.

As Unrivaled Heroes had a default identity concealment system, Yang Yang did not know that Wang Qiang, who was sitting beside him, was [Gaia] branch's strongest customer below the realm of Psionic Soul, King of Leopards. When he heard how Wang Qiang was addressing Shi Xiaobai as God DogLeading, he was extremely puzzled. However, since he was naturally disposed towards not communicating with strangers, he did not ask him.

As there was a flurry of discussion in the viewing hall over the meaning behind “IChooseDogLeading”, the commentator, Sweets suddenly covered her mouth and said in astonishment, “Third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!? IChooseDogLeading is actually at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?”

Biscuit was also very surprised, but the mature him appeared a lot calmer. He said with a sigh, “Indeed, he is at the third level of

the Psionic Mortal Realm. It looks like [Gaia] branch is prepared to do something strange.”

“Impossible! It’s impossible that he is at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!”

Before the people in the viewing hall reacted to it, someone suddenly stood up and issued a cry of disbelief, “How can he be at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm? How can that be...How can that be...?”

The person’s eyes were flickering with disbelief as everyone cast their eyes on him. Noticing that, he hurriedly sat back down, but he constantly murmured, “Impossible, he can’t be at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm...”

“Why can’t he?” Yang Yang looked at Wang Qiang, who was on the brink of going mad, and could not help but ask.

Wang Qiang turned around to take a glance at Yang Yang and realizing that it was a 7–8-year-old boy, he immediately didn’t feel like answering. He lowered his head to continue indulging in his horror. He had always believed that God DogLeading was a noob abusing smurf stronger than him. At that moment when he realized that God DogLeading was only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm—recalling how he had been teased—he could not believe that it was true.

However, the weekly matches did not allow the adjustment of values, and the battle arena cafe had definitely verified the values

with great scrutiny, so God DogLeading was undoubtedly at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

“I actually got teased by a darn kid at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm for an hour?”

Wang Qiang was on the brink of tearing up as he felt as though his heart was about to suffer a collapse.

At this moment, a undisguised derisive voice came from somewhere not far away, landing into Wang Qiang’s ears.

“Tch, what’s a trash at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm joining the free-for-all for? The weakest ‘IAmNoPig’ amongst the five people here can easily fix him. Sending that King of Leopards would be better! What do you mean doing something strange? It seems to me they are at the ends of their rope!”

Wang Qiang could not help but turn his head to look at the source of the voice. He noticed that on his left two seats away, there was a blond youth who had a look of disdain. A cold sneer was hanging on his face.

If it was any other day, Wang Qiang would definitely have agreed with this youth’s statement. Letting a weakling at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm participate in the battle was definitely worse than sending him, the King of Leopards, to make a stir.

However, the person that was being ridiculed was God

DogLeading that had abused him so much that he had begun to doubt life, so Wang Qiang could no longer tolerate this. He reached his hand across his neighbor to pat the blond youth's shoulder forcefully.

Seeing the blond youth turn over with a questioning look, Wang Qiang sneered at him, "Youth, you know nothing about power!"

...

...

IChooseDogLeading caused quite a commotion in the [Gaia] branch viewing hall, but that was all. After all, they did not hold great expectations for the [Gaia] store representative, as such they were not really overly disappointed. The most important thing was that the next person to be introduced was Princess Xiao Xiao who everyone cared about the most. It was best if the irrelevant clown was skipped as soon as possible.

The two commentators were also clearly cognizant of this point, so they did not take out their arsenal on Shi Xiaobai. They did not even introduce the information that he was adept at Crab Steps to the audience. With a few words, they skipped over him, giving the director a cue to switch to Xiao Xiao's information.

The screen quickly displayed Xiao Xiao's game character avatar. Due to the identity concealment feature of Unrivaled Heroes, a white veil covered Xiao Xiao's face, but it still made the audience in the viewing hall hold their breaths.

She had pink long hair, and was dressed in a white long sleeved blouse, a white laced skirt, white knee-high socks and red boots. There was a big pink bow tie in front of her chest. It was a simple color combination and a simple outfit that seemed to accentuate her snow-white skin and excellent figure.

“Princess Xiao Xiao sure is beautiful.” As a young beauty, Sweets could not help but sigh.

Biscuit immediately followed up, “Not only is Princess Xiao Xiao’s beauty exceptional, but her strength is also a power to be reckoned with. Her Psionic Ability realm is the highest amongst the contestants this time round. It’s at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!”

Sweets echoed with a giggle, ” Princess Xiao Xiao is a top student in the best institute of higher learning in China, Pehua University. Furthermore, she is a Psyker with exceptional gifts. She deserves to be labeled a proud daughter of Heaven!”

In the next few minutes, the two commentators began a series of enthusiastic discussion that revolved around praising Xiao Xiao. The young male audience immediately found it very enjoyable. Although they could find most of the information regarding Xiao Xiao online, they had no qualms about listening to others praising the female goddess in their hearts.

After introducing Xiao Xiao, Sweets suddenly gave a mysterious smile and said, “Everyone should now know that this week’s

format is a seven-person free-for-all. So what battle strategy does everyone think should be employed, considering the rules? Dad Biscuit, tell me about it.”

Biscuit thought for a moment and said, “Firstly, of course there is a need to reduce one’s presence, in order to avoid becoming the collective target of others. Next, it is cooperation. They can form small groups with people they trust and first eliminate the contestants that fall along the sidelines.”

After Sweets heard this, she giggled, “As expected of Dad Biscuit, what you said is very reasonable. I have nothing to offer against your viewpoint. Hehe, in fact, Princess Xiao Xiao had already thought of these two strategies, and have established rules that allow these two strategies to be implemented!”

“Ah? It’s not the eliminating of these two strategies, but instead encouraging them?” Biscuit apparently looked a little surprised.

The audience also began to whisper in discussion. Shouldn’t there be attempts to eliminate such opportunistic strategies?

At that moment, Sweets said, “Although I am not sure why Princess Xiao Xiao did this, she definitely has her intentions, so everyone, please look forward to it. According to Princess Xiao Xiao’s rules, the weekly competition will be divided into three rounds. We will now begin the first round immediately. Princess Xiao Xiao calls it the—negotiation round!”

The moment Sweets said that, the screen switched to an empty

white room with a wall. There was not a single person in the room. If not for the wall and the ground making an angle, the entire screen would have appeared white.

“Now, what everyone is seeing is a scene from the virtual reality world. The seven contestants will have ten minutes of negotiation in this white room. All violence and acts of force will be prevented in here. Only rational conversations can be used to set up one’s small team!”

Sweets’s voice came from the screen. As people were digesting the information, she immediately announced, “Then, let the negotiation round begin!”

The moment Sweets said that, seven beams of light appeared in the white room. Following that, seven people appeared at different corners of the empty room.

After the seven people entered the white room, other than Xiao Xiao and IChooseDogLeading not moving, the other five people spontaneously walked towards Xiao Xiao. It was obvious what their intentions were!

The audience in the viewing hall drew a cold gasp of air. They immediately understood who was the biggest beneficiary of this round—clearly everyone else would wish that the strongest Princess Xiao Xiao would become a member of their team. It was believed that with a simple word from Princess Xiao Xiao, anyone would be willing to form a team with her!

Was this Princess Xiao Xiao's goal?

By establishing a rule that benefited herself, wasn't she openly cheating?

That didn't make sense. With Princess Xiao Xiao's strength and position, such an act was superfluous, wasn't it?

What were Princess Xiao Xiao's intentions?

Author's Note: The setting up of the plot is done. The real story begins next chapter.

Chapter 75: Take You Flying Into Awesomeness

When the five contestants walked towards Xiao Xiao, a cold voice immediately resounded.

“I will not form a team with any one of you, so all of you do not need to waste time on me.”

The person who said that was none other than Xiao Xiao. The tone in her voice was one not to be doubted. Although the veil hid her expression, it was clear that this beauty's face had a cold and expressionless look to it from her cold rejection.

Xiao Xiao's resolute personality was clearly something the five contestants were aware of. They halted in their footsteps and did not attempt to persuade her any further. Immediately, they turned to their second target. The five of them were all regulars, so they often met during the weekly matches. Hence, they naturally had some relations with each other.

Many people in the viewing hall heaved a sigh of relief. They did not wish to see their female goddess form a team with others. Furthermore, by doing so, it would incur the suspicion of cheating, so this was great. The cold rejection of these five plebeians was the best outcome.

Xiao Xiao's action won great acclaim from the audience. The commentators also immediately took the opportunity to praise

Princess Xiao Xiao, but they also raised some doubts. What was the reason behind Princess Xiao Xiao's establishment of this negotiation round? Was she that confident that she could deal with teams formed by others?

If this was the real world, as a Psyker at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, she might be able to use her superpower to fight against six, but in the virtual world, there was no way to use superpowers!

The two commentators began a round of rational speculation so as to fill the time for the audience, and in less than a minute, the seven contestants in the white room had basically formed their teams.

Xiao Xiao was leaning on a wall as though deep in thought. Shi Xiaobai, who was wearing a clown costume, was sitting alone in a corner motionless. As for the other five people, they had formed two distinct teams.

Ninth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, WindWithoutTrace and seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, IAmNoPig formed a team.

Seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm GunfireInTheWorld, eighth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld and eighth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, ThatTenderOneShot formed a three-man team.

From the numbers and overall strength distribution, the three-

man team appeared stronger. However, the two-man team's strength was not to be underestimated, especially with the spear-wielding WindWithoutTrace. His Wind Walk and Wind Spear had reached the Familiarized Proficiency realm and he was considered a genius in the Psionic Mortal Realm because of this.

“It looks like the individual small teams amongst the seven contestants have provisionally been formed. Now, the only ones left out are Princess Xiao Xiao and contestant DogLeading. By the way, I'll take this opportunity to tell the audience. The seven contestants did not receive any information about the contestants that are participating in this week's match. As such, the six people do not know contestant DogLeading's Psionic Ability realm. So this unfamiliar brother DogLeading would definitely be probed by the two teams and be a target they would compete over. Everyone, please look forward to it.”

Biscuit adeptly analyzed the situation for the audience and pointed out the possible highlights of the match. What he said was indeed very accurate. The moment he said that, the two teams began to walk towards Shi Xiaobai, who was sitting at a corner as though he was sleeping.

At this moment, WindWithoutTrace suddenly said, “I believe this brother clown will prefer that our teams approach him one by one. Since your team already has three people, can we go up first?”

As they did not know anything about Shi Xiaobai, they did not even know his game nickname. Hence, WindWithoutTrace addressed Shi Xiaobai as brother clown according to his getup. What he said made sense as matters of persuasion were best done

in order of arrival. However, the first team to approach definitely held the advantage, for who would know if this brother clown would be an easily convinced person?

Just as the three people were hesitating, WindWithoutTrace said with a serious voice, “Everyone, let’s do it on account of me, WindWithoutTrace, alright?”

The three people looked each other in the eye after hearing this. After they had an exchange in whispers, ThatTenderOneShot, who was dressed in a military uniform, took a step forward a moment later. He said to WindWithoutTrace, “Brother Wind, we will naturally take you into account. Let’s do this. We agree on letting you attempt first, but it has to be done by the fat pig. Brother Wind can only stand by the side and not give any guidance, alright?”

The fat pig meant “IAmNoPig”. Other than the person being fat, his brain was also like a pig’s. The three people may have appeared to concede, but in fact, they were forcing WindWithoutTrace into a dilemma.

WindWithoutTrace felt an internal struggle. Although IAmNoPig’s intelligence was not as bad as it was rumored, it was indeed not very good. However, as the present situation was not in their favor, it could likely end up a four versus two situation if they did not take the first-mover’s advantage.

“Alright, I agree.”

WindWithoutTrace eventually chose to agree. He exhorted

IAmNoPig before walking to a corner. He crossed his arms and stood there watching.

As for IAmNoPig, he began walking under the watchful eyes of the audience to the seated Shi Xiaobai.

At this moment, contestants from both teams, the audience in the viewing hall and even Xiao Xiao, who was leaning on a wall, turned their gazes over.

“Hi, my big brother, WindNoTrace, has the additional nickname of Wind Speed Fast Draw, and he wants to invite you to our team!”

After IAmNoPig walked in front of Shi Xiaobai, he did not do any small talk or pleasantries. He directly spoke his intentions out aloud.

Time froze for two seconds before Shi Xiaobai’s body suddenly moved. His nose issued out a long moan before he raised his head to give a big yawn.

“Oh? What’s the matter?” Shi Xiaobai, who was woken up, rubbed his eyes. Noticing the rotund figure in front of him, he asked with a hypnagogic voice.

The audience was surprised. They thought that the clown had sat at a corner because he was acting haughty or observing the situation. They never expected him to be sleeping. How could you sleep during the important negotiation round?

IAmNoPig was also stunned, but he did not think too much about it. He went straight to the point, “My brother, WindNoTrace is prepared to take you flying into awesomeness! Do you understand? Tell me your in-game nickname. I’ll first add you as a friend.”

IAmNoPig’s unsophisticated manner of speech dumbfounded the audience. Describing this guy as having a pig’s brain felt like an insult to pigs.

Shi Xiaobai was still in a sleepy state and was confused. He did not know what the fatso in front of him was talking about, but since he heard him ask about his game nickname, he half-heartedly answered, “IChooseDogLeading.”

Upon hearing this, IAmNoPig’s face flushed red for some unknown reason. With additional fury in his words, he said angrily, “Why are you scolding us? My brother can really take you flying into awesomeness. I’m not bullshitting! Quick, tell me what your in-game nickname is.”

Shi Xiaobai yawned again, and couldn’t figure out when he had scolded anyone, nor did he understand why the fatso kept asking him about his game nickname. As he was too tired to think, he decided to give his answer, emphasizing each word, “I...Choose...Dog...Leading!”

With this, the pig would probably get it, right?

IAmNoPig had indeed heard it, but he seemed to end up agitated.

It was as though he wanted to go into a rage, but he suppressed his anger. He constantly puffed, “Hu...Hu...Hu...What is your game nickname?”

Shi Xiaobai became impatient and shouted, “Aren’t you irritating? IChooseDogLeading! IChooseDogLeading! IChooseDogLeading!”

He repeated the important thing thrice!

“Fine, well done!”

IAmNoPig was immediately infuriated. He immediately dragged his flabby body towards WindWithoutTrace. His anger-filled footsteps caused the ground to tremble as he had an aura of hostility and indignation. He lamented to WindWithoutTrace, “Brother Wind, this kid rather gets led by a dog than lets you take the lead. What should we do about this?”

At this moment, the dazed audience in the viewing hall was immediately enlightened. All of them burst out in laughter and the undulating laughter in the viewing hall did not stop immediately. Some people were even tearing up from their laughing.

Sweets also could not maintain herself while laughing. As she held her abdomen, she said with a laugh that peppered her speech, “DogLeading...The mystery behind the contestant’s name..has finally been revealed. This name...sure is provocative!”

Chapter 76: The Brave Pig Slaughtering Knife

When Shi Xiaobai heard IAmNoPig's angry words, he took a few moments before he realized what had gone on. He was immediately left at a loss whether to laugh or to cry. His game nickname, "IChooseDogLeading", was an old meme on Earth. DogLeading was "GO DIE" in English, so "IChooseDogLeading" meant "I Choose Death", and did not mean choosing to be led by dogs!

Shi Xiaobai could not be bothered to explain it to "IAmNoPig". Having sat in the corner, just closing his eyes for a moment made him doze back to sleep. He was indeed overly exhausted.

Shi Xiaobai stood up and stretched his body, afraid that he would fall back to sleep if he sat back down.

A strange atmosphere filled the room. The other six people did not know that Shi Xiaobai's in-game nickname was "IChooseDogLeading". Other than Xiao Xiao having guessed the truth to the matter, the other five people were fooled by IAmNoPig's silly talk. Summarizing everything Shi Xiaobai had done the moment he entered the room, they theorized that Shi Xiaobai was an asocial person.

The two-man team naturally did not want to have anything to do with him, while the three-man team scoffed at the idea of recruiting him. As long as Shi Xiaobai did not join the two-man team, it was unlikely to cause them any harm. Having a greater

number of people per team was not necessarily the best idea. If a six-person team targeted a single person, they could only assure that they would be in the top six. As for the three-man team, they were currently the strongest faction present. This meant that they had the chance of ensuring themselves to be in the top three.

Hence, in the remaining few minutes, it became a scene that even the two commentators found uninteresting.

Princess Xiao Xiao stood with her back against a wall in silence, giving off a lonely but beautiful imagery.

Shi Xiaobai was similarly leaning against the wall, but his body was moving around oddly, as though he was an irritated ant.

As for the other two teams, they distanced themselves from each other. They began huddling together to discuss their combat tactics and strategy. The seven-person free-for-all clearly became a four faction match with a 3-2-1-1 line up.

In the commentator stands, Biscuit said, "According to my years of experience, the three-man team should be the strongest amongst the four factions. The two-man team should be of comparable strength with Princess Xiao Xiao. As for contestant DogLeading, he is temporarily last in place. However, we know that the beginning of a free-for-all does not determine the ending. The strongest faction might be ganged up against by an alliance formed between the weaker factions. And the weakest contestant, DogLeading, might not be the first to be eliminated. As long as he knows how to hide himself and keep a comfortable distance, he might be able to push himself to the top."

Biscuit's experienced commentary was filled with highlights. What was a baffling negotiation round made the seven-person free-for-all immediately turn clear. What would have easily made the audience lose interest had its interest reignited by Biscuit's commentary. Maybe the other four people would gang up to get rid of the three-man team first? Of course, this was all thanks to the humorous misunderstanding from IChooseDogLeading's nickname. If not, the three-man team would have become a four-man team, and that would indeed have made the competition become even more boring.

Sweets said with a smile, "Dad Biscuit's analysis is quite on point. You still have it in you despite your age. Hehe. Then, it's time for the second round established by Princess Xiao Xiao to stir up something. The second round—declaration before battle—begins right now!"

As if it was to make the commentary appear more effective, Biscuit did not seem to know of the rules prior to this. He said with surprise, "Declaration before the battle? That's interesting. Could the three-man team say something unbridled as a result of a moment of arrogance? It could lead the other four to form an alliance even faster. As a solo contestant, what declaration would Princess Xiao Xiao give to declare her position? What would contestant DogLeading say before the battle to reduce his presence?"

A short commentary from Biscuit highlighted several points of interest. It immediately made what seemed like an uninteresting second round turn exciting.

Sweets was secretly impressed by her father as she took over and said with a giggle, “After the tiny disturbance from before, Contestant DogLeading is probably going to find it difficult to lower his sense of presence.”

Biscuit clicked his tongue and said, “That’s true. The two-man team is probably the faction that wants to eliminate contestant DogLeading as soon as possible. If I were contestant DogLeading, I would first take advantage of the pre-battle declaration to explain the misunderstanding. Then I would admit that I’m at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, so as to reduce my level of threat. And most importantly of all, it has to alienate the teams from each other without showing the slightest trace. By causing a rift between the three-man team and the two-man team, it will lower his presence to a minimum. It will be a difficult task for contestant DogLeading to accomplish all of this in a short pre-battle declaration!”

Sweets immediately said with her eyes widened as she joked, “Dad Biscuit, it looks like your beer belly is not filled with beer, but filled with nefarious wisdom!”

The audience immediately burst into laughter. They gave Biscuit a big thumbs up. They had not placed themselves in DogLeading’s shoes at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. The method offered by Biscuit of lowering one’s presence under such a situation was indeed ingenious.

Under the two good commentators’ guidance, what was a simple and boring pre-battle declaration became something anticipated by

all.

...

However, the pre-battle declaration was still extremely boring, especially in the awkward situation of a seven-person free-for-all. Without absolute victory in their grasps, no one placed themselves on a pedestal during the pre-battle declaration.

The first pre-battle declaration was the deep and meaningful “everyone do your best” from Princess Xiao Xiao that concluded immediately. There were many ways to interpret these four words, but in such a situation, it appeared to be a perfunctory pleasantry.

The two-man team kept an even lower profile.

WindWithoutTrace said calmly, “Competition second, friendship first.”

IAmNoPig was not good with words, so he spoke candidly, “Everyone, don’t target me.”

The three-man team was as Biscuit had guessed. In order to prevent the other four people from forming a four-man alliance, they did not dare to appear arrogant despite having a small advantage.

ThatTenderOneShot’s declaration was very tender, “Regardless of the outcome, we should not have any bad blood amongst us.”

GunfireInTheWorld, who was usually hot tempered, held it in and said calmly, “I will do my best, I hope everyone does not hold back.”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was a silent person to begin with, so he said in a deadpan manner, “Let the match be interesting.”

After all these superficial pre-battle declarations were said, the viewing hall had turned silent. What sort of pre-battle declaration was this? It was clearly them vying to be the politest person.

The two commentators were also slightly embarrassed. Although they had expected such a boring scene, the way these people kept a low profile was too much. Biscuit sharply sensed the annoyance in the audience, and simultaneously realized that the last person was IChooseDogLeading.

Hence, with a flash of brilliance, he immediately said, “Everyone, the main show is here! After the first six people made such low-profile declarations, everyone’s presence is extremely low. This makes it even more difficult for contestant DogLeading to lower his presence. What would he do?”

Indeed, the audience immediately turned alert. The only thing worth watching now was how IChooseDogLeading would ease the situation with his pre-battle declaration. He had to explain the misunderstanding and cause strife, while lowering his own presence. This was fricking difficult!

What sort of pre-battle declaration would IChooseDogLeading deliver?

...

What sort of pre-battle declaration would Shi Xiaobai deliver?

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was also pondering over the same question. From the moment this round began, he had been constantly wrecking his sleepy and heavy brain over what to say.

He had participated in the seven-person free-for-all in the hopes for the six people to attack him. He wanted the immense pressure to allow him to make a breakthrough. Hence, everything depended on the precondition that he attracted the aggression of the six people.

And the pre-battle declaration was a Heaven-given opportunity!

What sort of pre-battle declaration would allow the six people to maniacally fight him?

After a long period of thinking, only when it was finally his turn to give the declaration did he suddenly have an idea. He figured out the best speech possible.

He took a step forward but unlike others, he did not face the

camera Instead, he turned to face the six contestants, opened up his arms and raised his head high.

Shi Xiaobai said softly, “A weakling hides his sharpness in a beautiful scabbard, while a true mighty figure will bravely pull out a rusty pig slaughtering knife.”

A baffling speech that seemed to sound extremely profound caused the other six contestants to frown. It also caused the two commentators to ponder and the audience to be puzzled. However, Shi Xiaobai did not stop after delivering his strange pre-battle declaration, nor did he wait for their reaction.

He opened his mouth once again.

Then, a shocking speech that made everyone stare aghast—something that the six contestants would never forget and something that was recorded in the “Classics of Shi Xiaobai” in the future—was slowly delivered.

“Don’t misunderstand. It’s not personal. What I’m saying is everyone present is a spicy chicken [1](#)!”

Chapter 77: Unexpected Opening

Don't misunderstand. It's not personal. What I'm saying is that everyone present is a spicy chicken!"

These arrogant and provocative words, along with Shi Xiaobai's deliberate look of being all high and almighty, immediately made everyone stare aghast.

The six contestants that were facing were completely frozen. IAmNoPig was the first to issue an incredibly furious roar, "What did you say!?"

The eyes of the others exuded a cold look.

They immediately understood the profound meaning in Shi Xiaobai's first sentence about the hidden scabbard and the pulling out of the pig slaughtering knife. He was mocking them for their pleasant pre-battle declaration—such an act was that of a "spicy chicken".

However, wasn't it a retarded choice to say such sharp words in the face of a seven-person free-for-all?

In fact, Shi Xiaobai found himself extremely clever. He believed that with this, the six of them would attack This King, right?

Shi Xiaobai sneered gently and said the words "spicy chicken" again before turning to walk to a corner. He ignored them as

though it was undisguised disregard.

The cold beam in Xiao Xiao's eyes faded away as a smile slowly appeared on her lips. The words "everyone do your best" was not a pleasantry, it was just something people had yet to understand. This contestant named "IChooseDogLeading" and his denigration of the contestants as "spicy chickens" did not include her, so there was no need for her to feel upset

The other five people were infuriated. However, as the free-for-all had yet to begin and this round prohibited violent behavior, they could only pent up their anger and secretly place Shi Xiaobai on the kill list.

.....

In the commentator stands, Biscuit's old face immediately turned. In such an atmosphere, he felt like he had to make a holy sacrifice, hence, he gave a self-deprecating laugh and said, "Ha... Ha, what contestant DogLeading did was unexpected. Can I retract the bullshit I said from earlier?"

Sweets realized Biscuit's intention of self-sacrifice to save the situation. Feeling touched, she immediately disparaged him in a merciless manner, saying, "I say Dad Biscuit, I was wondering why your face is getting fatter. So it was because it was smacked swollen. Wu Wu Wu. This contestant DogLeading really...really has a personality!"

The audience in the viewing hall immediately reacted as a

hubbub began. Soon, it crescendoed to a deafening cacophony that nearly blew the ceiling open.

“Awesome person. That’s what a pre-battle declaration should be!”

“Heh heh, it’s called courting death, alright? He doesn’t even know to keep a low profile when he’s only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. It looks like he did it because he has nothing to lose.”

“No, didn’t you hear what Sweets said? It’s called having a personality!”

“Smacking Biscuit’s big round face. This round was good. A pre-battle declaration should be filled with such smack talk!”

“To say the truth, having the strength to act awesome is what you would call awesome. If you act awesome without the ability, that is what you would call a retard. This DogLeading clown is a pure idiot. Validated with no mistakes.”

“If you don’t act awesome when you have the strength, that’s called a coward. Anyway, I support DogLeading. How can a pre-battle declaration not be more explosive?”

“A weakling hides his sharpness in a beautiful scabbard, while a true mighty figure will bravely pull out a rusty pig slaughtering knife. This sentence is such a fricking classic saying!”

“No offense, but everyone present is a spicy chicken!”

“...”

The audience in the viewing hall was immediately split on their views. A number of people felt that Shi Xiaobai’s declaration was a declaration of a warrior, and when compared to the first six people’s pleasantries, it was extremely genuine. His strength might be the weakest, but his courage was worthy of praise.

The other people felt that Shi Xiaobai’s declaration was a declaration for courting death. He was purely an idiot seeking death. They believed that he would be beaten to a pulp that even his mother would fail to recognize him. There were even people who announced that if the idiot DogLeading was not the first to be eliminated, they would stick their male appendages into a fan, at speed five.

The argument in the viewing hall immediately got out of hand.

Yang Yang was the only one in the audience who knew Shi Xiaobai’s identity and personality. He was at a loss whether to laugh or to cry, but he was not surprised. He knew Shi Xiaobai was always different from others. He was so unique that he attracted the desire for others to beat him up.

But what made Yang Yang speechless was the two madmen on his left and right. The right brawny person that addressed Shi Xiaobai as “God DogLeading” was yelling like a fervent fan. If anyone were

to curse “DogLeading retard”, he would immediately curse back at them, as though he wanted to pick a fight.

And the most speechless-rendering person was Kevin on the left. After hearing the brawny youth’s nonsense, he actually began to believe that “God DogLeading” was an invincible mighty figure in Psionic Mortal Realm third level clothing. After hearing Shi Xiaobai’s pre-battle declaration, he went from anti-fan to fan, becoming one of those who supported “IChooseDogLeading”.

It was unknown what expression Kevin would have when he realizes that “IChooseDogLeading” was actually Shi Xiaobai.

And at this moment in a corner, Xia Lin was already about to explosively depart. He turned around and realized that Yang Weiwei, who had always been behind him, had snuck away without his knowledge. As he was too deep for tears, he shouted at the entrance, “You fricking call this the newbie that fears death the most? Yang Weiwei! You don’t have to come tomorrow. No, you can scram right now!”

...

Only when it reached the third round—the true highlight of the show, the seven-person free-for-all—did the din in the viewing hall gradually come to a halt.

“The Battle Arena Corporation’s weekly branch competition, the seven-person free-for-all, officially begins. Now, we shall announce all the rules for the seven-person free-for-all.”

The virtual system's voice echoed in the white room and was simultaneously broadcasted in various viewing halls.

Everyone quieted down and pricked up their ears.

“Rule 1: The battle map has been selected to be the virtual map, ‘Heavenly Pulse Jungle’. There will not be any biological creatures in this virtual environment, but there will be random appearances of ‘Energy Pearls’. Using an ‘Energy Pearl’ will recover one’s Psionic Power, stamina and health. ‘Energy Pearls’ can be stored and are allowed to be used at any juncture in time.”

“Rule 2: The match will assign points according to the order of elimination. The first person eliminated will receive one point, the second two points and so on and so forth. At the same time, the number of people a contestant kills will be counted. Killing a contestant would obtain one point. The contestant’s final ranking will be decided according to the sum of the order of elimination and the number of people killed.”

“Rule 3: The contestants will be randomly transported to a random location in Heavenly Pulse Jungle. The teams formed during the negotiation round will be seen as an entity, so they will be sent to the same location. Every entity will also receive one ‘Energy Pearl’. Note, every team is considered an entity, so every team only has one ‘Energy Pearl’!”

“The aforementioned rules are all there is. The announcement of the rules has concluded. The seven-person free-for-all officially

begins. Transmission initiating, target destination—Heavenly Pulse Jungle!”

The system did not sound male or female, but after the emotionless voice was done, the seven contestants in the white room were wrapped in layers of light before instantly disappearing.

At the same time, the cameras switched to four close-up views. It switched through the 3-2-1-1 factions and their locations in the forest before fixing on the three-man team.

ThatTenderOneShot, DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld and GunfireInTheWorld formed a triangle that was neither too big nor too small. In the middle, there was a floating red pearl. It was about the size of a glutinous rice ball, but it exuded a red crystalline glow. It silently floated in midair, and it was obvious that it was the Energy Pearl described by the system.

At this moment, the atmosphere surrounding the three was very delicate. Although their expressions could not be seen due to their masks, the stiffened bodies and silent attitudes indicated that this team was in a dilemma.

In the commentator stands, Biscuit sighed, “It looks like this is the reason behind why Miss Xiao Xiao established the negotiation round. This team that was formed temporarily now faces a dilemma of the distribution of benefits. The Energy Pearl’s effects destine it to be extremely important for every contestant. All three contestants probably want it for themselves, and the rules of killing others to gain points will definitely push this team into an

awkward position. It would be a question as to who would get to kill a person that gets cornered by this team. It is a harsh problem that needs to be considered.”

Sweets also shared her mixed emotions, “It looks like the negotiation round was a trap set up by Miss Xiao Xiao. Under these rules, teams become a restrictive thing. Would the three people fight over this Energy Pearl?”

Biscuit said, “It can’t really be called a trap either. After all, there is still the advantage of a team. It just has additional drawbacks. At least in my opinion, a single Energy Pearl is not enough to cause a team to dissolve. It will just cause a tiny bit of strife amongst them. They will definitely not fight, but someone has to be the temporary custodian of the Energy Pearl.”

The moment Biscuit said that, the three people onscreen began having a simple discussion. The Energy Pearl was decided to be temporarily held by ThatTenderOneShot. They each promised to split any obtained Energy Pearl equally. The killing of others depended on each person’s ability. And as predicted by Biscuit, the team did not have any obvious cracks.

Sweets could not help but exclaim in praise, “As the saying goes, wine improves with age. Dad Biscuit is indeed impressive.”

Biscuit chuckled and said, “It’s because you are too silly. Which team would lose all decorum over an ‘Energy Pearl’?”

Sweets tsked gently as she pouted, making her look pretty cute.

At this moment, the screen was still fixated on the three-man team, but a voice resounded throughout Heavenly Pulse Jungle. It was also a sound that everyone in the viewing hall could hear.

It was the system's voice.

“Contestant ‘IAmNoPig’ eliminated. Currently there are six remaining contestants!”

What the f*ck, IAmNoPig was eliminated!?

Did WindWithoutTrace and IAmNoPig have a fall out because of the “Energy Pearl”?

Biscuit stared in bewilderment as he thought “Damn it, did I get smacked in the face again? Why is it so fast this time!”

Chapter 78: Princess Xiao Xiao

IAmNoPig was eliminated just like that? As the screen did not switch in time, no one knew what had happened. But as a result of what Biscuit and Sweets just said, the first thing that came to mind was—WindWithoutTrace and IAmNoPig's team had a rift, resulting in WindWithoutTrace killing IAmNoPig for the “Energy Pearl” and a point.

Or it could be said that this was the most logical explanation.

By the time the director switched the cameras to where IAmNoPig was, everyone was surprised to discover IAmNoPig lying on the ground. Protruding out of his fat chest was a silver shimmering crystal arrow! The crystal arrow had pierced through his chest from the back, while the cold arrowhead was still dripping with blood.

And what was oddest was that there was a hole spewing blood from IAmNoPig's throat!

These were two clearly different injuries, done by two different people. In the first few minutes of the match, two people had simultaneously attacked IAmNoPig?

What the hell was going on?

Thankfully, there was a tracking camera that followed every contestant, hence, the director aired the lost scenes.

The director replayed the last three seconds before IAmNoPig died. At that moment, WindWithoutTrace was putting away the “Energy Pearl”, while IAmNoPig was smiling in an honest and silly manner, as though he did not mind.

Suddenly, a crystal arrow tore through the void from the shadows. WindWithoutTrace was first to react as he gave a warning shout. Although IAmNoPig took a moment to react, he managed to produce a Psionic Barrier that enveloped his entire body. However, the crystal arrow instantly shattered his barrier, piercing through his back and out front, splattering immense amounts of hot blood.

IAmNoPig did not die immediately. He took a step forward and pointed to WindWithoutTrace’s chest while saying with a trembling voice, “Energy Pearl...give...me.”

The Energy Pearl could recover a contestant’s Psionic Power, stamina and health; hence, IAmNoPig immediately placed his hopes on the Energy Pearl before he died. He took another step forward, hoping that WindWithoutTrace would hold him up and give him the Energy Pearl.

However, what awaited IAmNoPig was a sudden stab from WindWithoutTrace. The spear penetrated his throat, causing him to fall backwards. When the crystal arrow’s tail hit the ground, the crystal arrow that had half penetrated his body immediately pierced upwards, causing his entire chest to open up. At the same time, large volumes of blood spewed out from the hole in his throat. Two fatal injuries very quickly took IAmNoPig’s life away.

At the moment IAmNoPig's consciousness left the virtual world, WindWithoutTrace said coldly, "Since you are about to die, I'll take this kill. Don't worry, I will kill the person who sneaked up on you to avenge you."

WindWithoutTrace did not give IAmNoPig another glance. He immediately turned around and used his Wind Walk to head in the direction from where the crystal arrow came.

This short replay did not last more than ten seconds, yet it caused a repressive situation amongst the audience. From their point of view, WindWithoutTrace definitely had sufficient time to push IAmNoPig out of the crystal arrow's attack range. He could also have used the Energy Pearl to save IAmNoPig's life. However, he did not do any of that. Instead, he added on a stab so as to score the kill!

Just because it was a virtual world, could life be treated so lightly?

The two commentators also fell silent. Although everything was virtual, a competition that did not amount to anything, it was impossible to approbate WindWithoutTrace's actions. They even wanted to denunciate him, but due to their professionalism, they prevented themselves from doing so.

And at this moment, the screen was following WindWithoutTrace's quick Wind Walk. After dashing through the thickest of the jungle and coming to an opening, the assailant who

shot the crystal arrow was standing silently in the jungle with a crystal bow in hand.

“Princess Xiao Xiao!?”

Numerous people exclaimed in shock, including the two commentators and WindWithoutTrace in the virtual world.

Who else but Princess Xiao Xiao could this silent white-dressed girl standing in the middle of the lush greenery be? But why was the person who shot the arrow her?

“I never expected that the person who launched the sneak attack was you!” WindWithoutTrace said with a hint of surprise in his tone.

“Sneak attack?”

Xiao Xiao smiled lightly and said, “That arrow was just a greeting shot. I never expected you to sit idle despite you clearly being able to save him.”

WindWithoutTrace’s breathing stagnated as he justified himself, “I wasn’t sitting idle. I was just unable to react in a moment of shock.”

Xiao Xiao sneered, “Not using the Energy Pearl and giving an additional stab, was all of that also because of a moment of shock?”

WindWithoutTrace's expression changed. He did not expect that his vile actions had been seen by Xiao Xiao. Immediately, killing intent rose in his eyes. With his spear, he took a small step forward.

"You should have left after shooting the arrow, yet here you boldly stand. Then, don't blame me for not letting you off." WindWithoutTrace's spear tip was already pointed at Xiao Xiao.

Xiao Xiao was a long-range bow-user, while WindWithoutTrace was a spear-wielding melee fighter. Now, WindWithoutTrace was only about ten meters away from her, entering a zone which he held the advantage. It could be said that Xiao Xiao was in extreme danger.

"Oh? Not letting me off? With that clumsy and laughable Wind Walk of yours?" Xiao Xiao's voice was cold and indignant.

WindWithoutTrace's eyes focused as he suddenly took another step forward, shooting straight at Xiao Xiao like a violent gust of wind.

"Just with my Familiarized Proficiency Wind Walk, I'll be able to kill you right here!"

The corner of WindWithoutTrace's lips suffused a confident sneer while his eyes were filled with killing intent. In the Psionic Mortal Realm, one's strength would far exceed other Psionic Mortal Realm opponents as long as a skill had reached the

Familiarized Proficiency realm. It was a world that only belonged to geniuses. His Wind Walk and Wind Spear were both at the Familiarized Proficiency realm, so even though Xiao Xiao's realm was one level higher than him, she would naturally not be able to put up a fight since he had closed the distance.

He was approaching her. The delicate figure beneath the white dress was just several feet away. His spear was about to pierce through her beautiful body, and the scarlet petals of blood would bloom at that instant.

“So what if you are a princess from a rich family? So what if you are a student of Pehua University? So what if you are a proud daughter of Heaven? You will still die under my spear!”

At that moment, even though he knew this was a virtual world and that everything in here was fake and nonexistent, WindWithoutTrace still felt a sick sense of satisfaction.

He wanted to penetrate Xiao Xiao's body with his spear and see how wretched she looked like in her dying state!

“Pu!”

With a light sound coming from the ground, dust gently flew up as WindWithoutTrace's Wind Spear stabbed into nothingness!

“Impossible!”

WindWithoutTrace stared with widened eyes as he watched Xiao Xiao retreat several meters in an instant!

WindWithoutTrace took a deep breath before raising his spear to attack again. This time he was in no hurry to stab, but attempted to close the distance with Xiao Xiao as much as possible.

However, what he clearly saw was Xiao Xiao's retreating footsteps. Countless dust and sand swirled around her feet while her body was distancing herself from him at an unparalleled speed.

“Wind Walk?!”

WindWithoutTrace, who was extremely familiar with Wind Walk, immediately realized that Xiao Xiao was using Wind Walk as well!

WindWithoutTrace was extremely alarmed. He was clearly using everything he got while chasing after her with his Wind Walk, but he was unable to catch up to the Wind Walking Xiao Xiao, who was retreating backwards while facing him. Their distance was even gradually opening up!

“Princess Xiao Xiao's Wind Walk has already reached the Exemplary Mastery realm. She is indeed fully deserving of being called a proud daughter of Heaven!”

In the commentator stands, Biscuit gave his judgment from his rich experience.

The audience was stunned silent. To be able to cultivate any skill to the Familiarized Proficiency in the Psionic Mortal Realm was an extremely impressive feat. Those who could cultivate to the Exemplary Mastery realm could only be described as freak geniuses.

And Princess Xiao Xiao was such a genius!

WindWithoutTrace, who was completely left far behind, also realized that Xiao Xiao's Wind Walk had reached the Exemplary Mastery realm. His proud heart was instantly shattered as the distance that slowly opened up between them was like the despairing distance between a true genius and him.

“Not letting me off? With that clumsy and laughable Wind Walk of yours?”

When WindWithoutTrace suddenly recalled Xiao Xiao's disdainful words, he suddenly found it hard to breathe. It was as though there was an invisible hand tightly grasping his throat.

Suddenly, his pupils abruptly shrunk because he saw that at a distance hundred meters away from him, Xiao Xiao had already pulled her bow open. The shimmering crystal arrow under the sunlight was already prepared to shoot.

Chapter 79: Doomed Sooner Or Later

The moment after Xiao Xiao finished pulling her bow open, WindWithoutTrace had the thought of escaping before the arrow shot out. His moving body immediately changed course and headed for the dense jungle. Soon, he was shuttling through the trees.

“Poplar Piercing Arrow!”

The crystal arrow penetrated through numerous trees, boring huge holes through tree trunks and nearly instantly appeared behind WindWithoutTrace.

“Bronze Armor Shield!”

WindWithoutTrace shouted loudly as a bronze-colored shield appeared behind him. Although Bronze Armor Shield was an E Class psionic defensive skill, it was stronger than Shi Xiaobai’s Wavelet Shield in terms of defensive strength. His Psionic Ability realm did not differ too much from Xiao Xiao, and after having numerous trees retarding the arrow, the Bronze Armor Shield naturally managed to block Xiao Xiao’s crystal arrow.

Although “Poplar Piercing Arrow” was a D Class archery offensive skill, it was something that placed more focus on accuracy, so it was less powerful.

Why did Xiao Xiao use such a long-distance archery technique

that focused on accuracy despite the short distance?

This thought flashed in WindWithoutTrace's mind. At the moment he blocked the Poplar Piercing Arrow, he thought of something that caused his pupils to violently contract.

“It's a locator arrow!”

A locator arrow was like an army's reconnaissance troops. They would sacrifice themselves to discover the enemy's location, allowing the troops from behind to catch up. In the field of archery, a locator arrow was usually used to pinpoint the target before an extremely powerful but low accuracy shot was delivered.

Hence, the fatal move was the next one!

Upon coming to this realization, WindWithoutTrace suddenly stopped and raised his hands to the sky.

“Black Iron Barrier!”

The moment a black barrier was propped up, a rain of arrows came falling from the sky. Hundreds of crystal arrows came raining down at WindWithoutTrace as though they were blotting out the sky.

“Peng! Peng! ...”

Numerous collision sounds and explosions echoed as the black barrier began to crack, and would shatter at any moment.

“Boom!”

The barrier only managed to last for a few seconds before it completely shattered. WindWithoutTrace appeared from inside the barrier with spear in hand. His hair fell backwards as he looked up at the inexhaustible rain of arrows and roared loudly.

“Wind Spear Dance!”

His spear kept stabbing and as he turned around and made a sweep, his footwork were like an elegant dance. As he brandished his spear, a silver-colored whirlwind began to form around his body.

“Clang! Clang! Clang...”

The impact between the silver spear and the crystal arrows constantly produced explosive sounds as numerous crystal arrows that came falling down were sent flying by the silver spear.

Moments later, the rain of arrows finally ceased, but when WindWithoutTrace took a look around him, there was not even a single crystal arrow on the ground! The only three arrows in the entire area were embedded in his body!

“Illusion Arrow Rain! What a terrifying woman.”

Illusion Arrow Rain was a C Class archery offensive skill. It was extremely difficult to learn, and just shooting three arrows was sufficient to create the illusion of a sky filled with arrows. It was an offensive skill that could instantly kill enemies with weak wills. WindWithoutTrace's Black Iron Barrier was shattered because of the terror brought by the rain of arrows.

WindWithoutTrace forcefully pulled out the three arrows in his body. Although he had lowered the pain setting to 10%, the pain of pulling the arrows still made him clench his teeth. He felt his life draining away and after a momentary internal struggle, he took out the "Energy Pearl". The system asked him in his mind if he wanted to use it as he immediately chose "Yes".

The Energy Pearl transformed into a blob of red light that merged into WindWithoutTrace's body. The three wounds on his body instantly recovered, and he recovered most of the health points he lost. The stunning effects surprised WindWithoutTrace as he suddenly felt a feeling of hatred and greed.

WindWithoutTrace only spent a few seconds to use the Energy Pearl to recover from his injuries, but he did not dare stay here for long. Immediately, he turned around and headed deeper into the jungle. He had two ideas at the moment. Firstly, keep away from Xiao Xiao because she was too terrifying! Secondly, find that arrogant clown and kill him before he used the Energy Pearl, so that he could obtain possession of an Energy Pearl!

On the other side of the jungle, Xiao Xiao gradually put away her crystal bow. She did not pursue him or send another arrow because

she did not wish for the early elimination of WindWithoutTrace. To be precise, she wished that the other contestants would be able to last a little bit longer.

A moving target for practice that was more resilient was better, wasn't it?

However, Xiao Xiao was slightly disappointed. This was because WindWithoutTrace, who had the highest Psionic Ability realm amongst the other six contestants, could not even put up a fight. He could not even defend against a C Class Illusion Arrow Rain. If she really used an A Class archery technique she wanted to cultivate, wouldn't she instantly kill them?

“Maybe, the targets were chosen wrongly from the outset. It was just wishful thinking on Grandpa's part that virtual competition is very useful in increasing a skill's proficiency. Forget it, I'll treat it as playing a boring game.”

With this thought in mind, Xiao Xiao turned around and walked slowly in a random direction into the jungle.

...

In the commentator stands, Biscuit and Sweets looked each other in the eye and revealed a wry smile.

Sweets sighed and said, “WindWithoutTrace's Psionic Ability realm is not too far behind, but his combat skills are just too

inferior. Princess Xiao Xiao and the other contestants are on a different level.”

Biscuit followed up, “Pehua University is China’s highest institute of learning. To be able to enrol in Pehua University, Princess Xiao Xiao has to be excellent in various aspects. However, the strength she has revealed to us has stunned me. Wind Walk at the Exemplary Mastery realm, Poplar Piercing Arrow at the Familiarized Proficiency realm and Illusion Arrow Rain at the Familiarized Proficiency realm. These excellent achievements in the Psionic Mortal Realm might just be the tip of the iceberg when it comes to Princess Xiao Xiao. It’s really shocking. I think Princess Xiao Xiao is a sparkling presence even in the genius-filled Pehua University.”

Sweets sighed and said, “Although as a commentator, I should not pass any absolute judgment, but I have to tell everyone that even if the remaining five contestants joined forces, they would be no match for Princess Xiao Xiao. She is invincible in this competition!”

Biscuit said, “However, did anyone notice one thing? Why did Princess Xiao Xiao participate in this week’s weekly match? Is there a deeper meaning to the rules she established herself? I believe Princess Xiao Xiao would not waste her precious time over the weekend to play a noob abusing game. She definitely has a deeper purpose. We can anticipate this reason as we watch on!”

Biscuit was still trying to think of a way raise the audience’s emotions and anticipation.

The audience in the viewing hall was already astounded by Xiao Xiao's immense power. Having heard the two commentators' analysis, they could only silently accept that there was no suspense to who would achieve overall victory for the match. At the same time, they also placed all their expectations on Xiao Xiao. Even last week's victor, WindWithoutTrace, was beaten up so brutally, so what else was there to look forward to with the other contestants?

At this moment, the scene cut to a person. That person was striding leisurely along a small forest trail. As the cameras zoomed in, a careful look indicated it to be IChooseDogLeading.

IChooseDogLeading's hands were held backwards as he strolled leisurely. As he walked, he shouted, "Spicy chickens, my dear spicy chickens, where are all of you...?"

Everyone was stunned hearing this.

Sweets was so stunned that she covered her mouth.

Biscuit said with mixed emotions, "Candidate DogLeading will be doomed sooner or later!"

At the same time, the bottom right corner of the screen revealed an overlay box that took up a quarter of the screen. The box was a miniature version of the jungle, and on it, there were six cartoon avatars on the map that indicated where the six contestants were and where they were heading to.

From this map, it could be clearly seen that the three-man team were stationary at a spot, as though they were waiting for something or were preparing an ambush.

About half the jungle's distance away from the three-man team, WindWithoutTrace was moving at an extremely fast speed, while Princess Xiao Xiao was following closely behind at a gentle pace.

However, an astounding thing happened. The avatar that represented Shi Xiaobai on the map was almost about to encounter the three-man team. If Shi Xiaobai did not change his direction, he would reach the trio's ambush spot in a couple of minutes.

Furthermore, WindWithoutTrace and Princess Xiao Xiao, who were traveling at different speeds, one ahead of the other, were also heading in Shi Xiaobai's direction.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was about to enter a trap, while there were hunters behind him, putting him in great jeopardy!

Biscuit blurted out, "Candidate DogLeading is doomed!"

Chapter 80: Giving You Full Marks For Customer Service

“Someone is coming. Heh heh, it’s that retarded clown.”

ThatTenderOneShot stood in a tree, hidden amidst tree leaves. Through his telescopic sight, he saw the strolling Shi Xiaobai from afar. He whispered to the other two who were also camouflaged in the jungle.

ThatTenderOneShot squinted his eyes slightly. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was completely open. He moved his sights on Shi Xiaobai’s head and his fingers moved slightly, as though he was about to pull the trigger.

“Brother Tender, didn’t we agree that you will only strike if DualBlades and I are not his match. If you were to kill that retarded clown in one shot, we can’t keep up this alliance.”

GunfireInTheWorld had sensed ThatTenderOneShot’s intentions, and as a person with a fiery temper, he did not know how to be tactful. He immediately sent a warning.

ThatTenderOneShot’s secretly sneered and weighed the pros and cons before slowly removing his finger from the trigger.

“Darn it, that retard would definitely have died if I made the shot.”

ThatTenderOneShot cursed in his heart. He found it a great pity to lose such an opportunity. Although he did not know the clown's Psionic Ability realm, he would have definitely scored a fatal shot on a target so wide out in the open. It did not matter even if it was Xiao Xiao who was at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

“Here he comes. I'll attack first but if my Tsunami Scatter Shot fails to put holes in him, it will be your turn, DualBlades.”

GunfireInTheWorld shook the machine gun in his chest as DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld nodded. He silently pulled out two blades from his hips.

At the same time, Shi Xiaobai had already arrived in the region where the three-man team was hidden. He was approaching straight for the shrubbery where GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's hid.

As the audience held their breaths, the two commentators also turned silent. They also knew that “IChooseDogLeading” was only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm and knew that the three-man team hated him deeply, so it was impossible for them to not know that “IChooseDogLeading” was doomed!

Shi Xiaobai was about three meters away from the shrubbery as GunfireInTheWorld's eyes lit up. Immediately, he jumped out of the shrubs and appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai!

“Die, motherf*cker!”

“The spicy chicken has finally appeared!”

The two voices shouted out at the same time from two different mouths, and what followed was the sound of a series of machine gun shots!

“Da Da Da Da Da...”

Bullets constantly spewed out of the gun’s barrel as they left a streak in their wake, as though they were the angry growls of a fierce beast. GunfireInTheWorld raised his machine gun and sprayed his rounds from left to right and then back from right to left, again and again. As he sprayed at an extremely fast speed, the bullets were like silver sea waves that came crashing down at Shi Xiaobai. The waves came in one after another, as though they would drown every lifeform in front of them!

The audience in the viewing halls gasped. Some closed their eyes while others shook their heads with a sigh.

Shi Xiaobai nearly smiled. He liked such a welcome!

“Crab Steps’ repeated side hops!”

Shi Xiaobai did not choose the simplest method of dodging with a jump or flash evasion. Instead he stood in his original spot before he began repeatedly hopping laterally!

Against wavelike bullets, wasn't jumping sideways in a repeated fashion courting death?

However, a miracle happened!

Shi Xiaobai's figure jumped from left to right without any pattern as the wave of bullets came spraying at him like a tsunami. He was like a crab that had lost its way, however, the bullets seemed to pierce through his body without hitting him!

"Da Da Da..."

GunfireInTheWorld stared with widened eyes, but found what he saw unbelievable. He increased the speed at which he sprayed the bullets and changed the pattern at which he spewed the bullets, causing the shooting trajectories to even begin to jitter. However, despite the bullets that came out of the barrel seemingly overwhelm the clown's body, why did that funny-looking side hops manage to evade all the bullets!?

"How...how did he do it?" Sweets exclaimed in the commentator stands.

A strange glow flashed in Biscuit's eyes as he said solemnly, "We all know that it is impossible for a machine gun to shoot out bullets all at the same time. Instead, it is shot out one bullet at a time at an extremely fast speed. So there is definitely a time gap in between the bullets, and it is this time gap that contestant DogLeading is using."

Sweets exclaimed, “The difference in time is probably 0.0001 seconds or less. How do you even use that? Just by side-hopping repeatedly?”

Biscuit suddenly said loudly, “Do you think this is just simple repeated side hops? From everyone’s point of view, contestant DogLeading might be jumping from left to right, but in fact, he is repeating countless side hops in an instant. His every muscle is moving from left to right, and through the countless side hops, he is perfectly using the gap between each individual bullet!”

Sweets seldom saw her father so excited and was momentarily stunned. She looked carefully at the simple looking side hops that had managed to dodge every bullet in the rain of bullets. Just thinking of Biscuit’s theory filled her beautiful eyes with shock.

The audience was even more shocked that they forgot to breathe. The machine gun was only three meters away from Shi Xiaobai, and as the waves of bullets roared at him like a tsunami, he kept insisting on jumping. The repeated side hops did not look elegant and even looked funny. However, in the eyes of everyone, this was f*cking awesome. He was absolutely cool!

They could not help but have a strange thought.

Was this godlike DogLeading really at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?

“Da Da Da...Da!”

As the bullets sprayed, it caused dust to burst up and trees to collapse. The ground was filled with countless holes.

Only when the last bullet was shot out from the barrel did the machine gun finally cease firing. GunfireInTheWorld's eyes were completely in a daze as he had sprayed his bullet for nearly half a minute. His enhanced super heavy-duty machine gun could shoot a thousand rounds, but not a single one of them hit the unbridled clown!

At a distance of three meters, the clown did not make any large moves. All he did was simple repeated side hops to dodge his tsunami spraying of bullets. Was this a dream?

GunfireInTheWorld was completely stunned.

“Hey, why aren't you changing your magazine?”

An anxious voice snapped GunfireInTheWorld out of his daze. He looked up and noticed the clown looking at him as though he had enjoyed the entire process. Underneath his mask, his eyes were filled with anticipation.

Change magazine? Oh right, although the magazine was empty, just changing it would allow him to shoot again.

But...

“Are you trying to humiliate me?”

GunfireInTheWorld's face was flushed red as he angrily shouted.

“How could that be? I give you 82 points for your customer service. As for the remaining 18 points I'll give it to you in a 666 fashion¹!”

Shi Xiaobai raised a big thumbs up at GunfireInTheWorld. The shooting that lasted for half a minute had given him quite a kick, so he had to give GunfireInTheWorld a Like. Shi Xiaobai did not address himself as “This King”. According to his personal understanding, if he revealed his identity as King, these weak mortals would not dare attack him together, so wouldn't he lose big?

Shi Xiaobai said to GunfireInTheWorld with a very satisfied look. However, he was not fully contented, but he suddenly recalled that this person was part of a three-man team. Hence, he smiled and asked, “By the way, where are the other two spicy chickens who were with you?”

Before Shi Xiaobai finished his words, a cold voice rang behind him!

“Spic...DualBlades is here!”

A figure appeared behind Shi Xiaobai as two blades shimmered with a glistening cold sheen. One of the blades came swiping at Shi Xiaobai's neck, while the other blade pierced at Shi Xiaobai's back.

Chapter 81: Let Me Do It!

The two blades that suddenly appeared behind Shi Xiaobai were like two demonic hunting blades that slashed straight at his neck and stabbed towards his back. The cold clammy hands of Death approached Shi Xiaobai in an instant!

“Crab Steps’ proximity chasm.”

The two blades were just a few centimeters short of making contact with his tender skin, but Shi Xiaobai’s figure had disappeared. Nearly in a blink of an eye, he was already more than ten meters away, causing DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld’s blades to slice through thin air. As he took a few steps forward to stabilize his body, he looked up at Shi Xiaobai, as though he had seen a ghost.

Such a terrifying acceleration burst allowed him to travel more than ten meters away in an instant, and why was his motion so minute that he could not even sense it?

Teleportation?

No, that was something only superpowers could accomplish. There was no superpower system in the virtual world, so...how did this guy do it?

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld realized that the usually calm him could no longer calm down!

“Phew, that was close!”

Shi Xiaobai was the one who felt slightly apprehensive. GunfireInTheWorld’s service quality was indeed excellent, causing him to nearly fall into a daze. He had nearly been hit, however, Shi Xiaobai loved this harrowing experience!

“Good job, one more time, baby!”

Shi Xiaobai spoke in incompetent English as his eyes were filled with fighting spirit.

Shi Xiaobai had already keenly detected ThatTenderOneShot who was hidden in the tree, but he did not expose him. He even attempted to forget this sniper. He wished for more harrowing experiences and hoped that he could experience more of such dangerous moments. Only by doing so could he surpass his own limitations.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld did not know Shi Xiaobai’s wish and thought Shi Xiaobai was humiliating and provoking them. The hot tempered GunfireInTheWorld naturally could not take this lying down, while the always calm DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld began to feel infuriated.

“Be careful, his Psionic Ability realm is at least the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld made a sound to alert GunfireInTheWorld as he raised his blades to attack.

“I got it. How can I be dumb enough to not tell that he’s an expert at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?”

After changing his magazine, GunfireInTheWorld aimed the barrel at Shi Xiaobai once again. He was already of the mindset that the clown in front of him was definitely at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. It was a professional hitman hired by [Gaia] branch!

When Sweets, who was in the commentator stands, heard this, she could not help but giggle. “If they were to know contestant DogLeading is only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, I wonder if they will find themselves especially dumb?”

Sweets laughter suddenly came to a stop. She suddenly scrunched up her face as though she was about to cry. “Why do I think I’m the one who is actually very dumb?”

Sweets was not the only one feeling dumb. Nearly every member in the audience was dumbfounded, especially when they saw what happened next.

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld charged at Shi Xiaobai like a beast while brandishing the two blades in his hands. He began using a dazzling offensive skill but Shi Xiaobai hopped sideways to dodge every one of them. The posture he had when dodging was as

natural and unrestrained as it could be. He was like a freestyle dancer, while the blade beams were like disco lights and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's angry grunts were like accompaniment music.

“Da Da Da...”

GunfireInTheWorld once again sprayed his bullets like a madman, but this time the way he sprayed was even more sad and lonesome. This was because Shi Xiaobai no longer side hopped around for him to shoot at him. His figure began to flutter through the woods as though he was a joyful butterfly.

F*ck that butterfly!

GunfireInTheWorld was close to tears as he changed a magazine while holding back his tears. Dozens of trees had been toppled by his bullets, and his surroundings looked desolate, but that figure was still jumping around without any hindrance.

From time to time, Shi Xiaobai would be moving or staying still. Regardless of how intense GunfireInTheWorld's bullets were raining at him or how heated DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld attacks were, he was still like a leisurely crab. He would occasionally deceitfully make fake moves and at other times face the attack head on. It was as though he was telling them—without sparing their feelings—how miserable it meant to be “even if I stood here for you to give me a beating, you would not be able to hit me”.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld found themselves completely exasperated, but they did not feel despair. They still did their best to persist on, because they knew that there was someone waiting for a chance. That patient sniper had never let anyone down.

ThatTenderOneShot was very cold and calm!

Alright, in fact, ThatTenderOneShot was extremely stunned at this moment. His finger was already placed on his trigger for several minutes, but he still failed to find the best opportunity. Ever since Shi Xiaobai began using Crab Steps, he was surprised to realize that he could not get a concise aim!

Shi Xiaobai had clearly stayed still several times, but ThatTenderOneShot kept feeling like he was constantly moving. He could not even target Shi Xiaobai despite him remaining stationary for a full second.

This was a crab that could not stop and was forever moving!

ThatTenderOneShot was in no hurry to pull the trigger. As a sniper, he was used to dealing a single fatal shot. This was because the moment he made his shot, he would expose his presence and location. The next shot would no longer have the same beneficial conditions, so sealing victory with a single shot was always his mantra. He had to have full confidence in that one shot!

He could see the hard work put in by GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld, and he had received the hopes

that they had placed in him.

“Keep it up, brothers. I will not disappoint you.”

ThatTenderOneShot rubbed his eyes and stretched his back. After changing to a more comfortable position, he was done with the preparations for a long battle.

As for the other two people, they could no longer persist much longer. GunfireInTheWorld's bullets were nearly expended, while DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's Psionic Power and stamina were nearly drained!

“What a terrifying conservation of Psionic Power. This rascal can't be a Psionic Soul Realm expert, right? It doesn't abide to the rules!”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was extremely astonished seeing the leisurely Shi Xiaobai who did not look exhausted at all. He found that Shi Xiaobai's Psionic Power reserves seemed massive as he did not appear to be exhausted despite using the flash motion movement techniques repeatedly.

“Is contestant DogLeading really at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm?” Sweets posed the same question in the commentator stands.

“I can't tell for sure now. Only when he uses a offensive or defensive skill will I be able to judge his Psionic Ability realm.

However, I believe contestant DogLeading does not appear exhausted not because of his massive Psionic Power store, but because he has outstanding comprehension over the allocation of Psionic Power.” Biscuit said calmly.

Sweets responded with a terse exclamation before hesitating for a moment. She suddenly asked, “Dad Biscuit, if I’m not wrong, contestant DogLeading is using Crab Steps at the Exemplary Mastery realm, right? But why do I keep feeling that his Crab Steps...how should I say it...seems different?”

Biscuit gave a faint smile as he said softly, “You are still young. Your horizons are still somewhat limited. Contestant DogLeading’s Crab Steps is no ordinary Crab Steps. If I’m not wrong, it’s the legendary...divine crab!”

“Divine...crab!?”

Sweets and the audience ruminated over the two words, as though they had heard of it before, but could not recall what it was.

“That...”

Sweets was about to ask in detail when she suddenly saw something out of the ordinary on the screen. Her voice came to a stiff halt.

At this moment, GunfireInTheWorld and

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld had given up their struggles. One lowered his machine gun while the other sheathed his two blades back into the scabbards by his hips. They were already cognizant of the cruel reality.

GunfireInTheWorld puffed as he looked at Shi Xiaobai and said hatefully, “Is smurfing interesting?”

Shi Xiaobai said with a lamenting expression, “Don’t give up. Persistence is the key to victory. You know what they say, where there’s a will, there’s a way, when the will is ready, the feet are light, people do not lack the strength, they lack will...”

Shi Xiaobai used all the proverbs in his head in an attempt to make the two of them regain their will.

Alright, what was mentioned was not the incident that stopped Sweets from asking.

The incident was a person running desperately.

The person held a spear and his eyes were flaring with flames of anxiousness. As he used Wind Walk, he ran as fast as he could.

That person was no other than WindWithoutTrace.

At this moment, WindWithoutTrace was naturally extremely anxious. From afar, he saw the clown being surrounded by the other three-man team. It was as though a woman had met a gang

of evil thugs.

No, this easily obtainable Energy Pearl is mine!

With this thought in mind, WindWithoutTrace shouted loudly from three hundred meters away, “Let go of that kid, I’ll do it!”

Chapter 82: The Color Of The Wind Is Green

“Let go of that kid, I’ll do it!”

WindWithoutTrace was feeling anxious as though a babe he had hooked up with was being encircled by a group of hooligans. The anxiousness was so much that he hated himself for not being able to teleport so that he can slap the hooligans away.

As he used Wind Walk at full speed, he closed the distance of a few hundred meters very quickly. When he was closer to them, he saw the expended shells and holes on the ground. He was somewhat startled when he noticed that GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld did not have their weapons out and looked extremely exhausted.

What was going on? Was there a world war here a moment ago? Did GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld fight each other for the Energy Pearl and the killing point?

WindWithoutTrace had this rough guess as he stopped ten meters away. Although he coveted the “Energy Pearl” on Shi Xiaobai greatly, it did not mean that he had let his guard down. He knew that ThatTenderOneShot was hiding in a particular corner and it was very likely that his sights were already aimed at this head. He knew very well that he was no match for the three-man team, so it was wishful thinking if he wanted to snatch the food from the jaws of a tiger. However, the temptation of the “Energy Pearl” and kill point was too alluring, it was something worth risking.

Ten meters was the optimal safety distance. Although his Wind Walk was surpassed by Xiao Xiao, his confidence was restored when he faced the three-man team. The key issue was how to get these hooligans to release their soiled hands.

He could not do it by force, but by wit.

WindWithoutTrace immediately felt like he had much to be done. He took a deep breath and said, “Brother DualBlades, Brother Gunfire, this person insulted us as spicy chickens, and even mocked me by saying that I’m inferior to a dog. Today, if I do not vent my anger, I will definitely end up with an anxiety disorder. I hereby plead that the two of you would let me kill this arrogant person together with you?”

WindWithoutTrace’s idea was very simple. Since he could not get the babe for himself, he had to first join the ranks of the hooligans. When everyone was molesting her, he could take the opportunity to obtain the babe’s first blood.

This idea was very good and forceful, but it was a question whether the hooligans would agree.

Indeed, upon hearing WindWithoutTrace’s words, GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld immediately appeared to look in pain as they fell silent.

WindWithoutTrace immediately had an idea as he continued speaking in a hurry. “If I do not teach this arrogant person a lesson

with my own hands, it will become a regret for the rest of my life. We have deep ties, so how can you have the heart to see me depressed? Friendship first, competition second. As long as you let me kill this evil bastard with the rest of you, I will definitely not covet the kill point.”

WindWithoutTrace’s face was filled with grief and anger, as though he would spit out blood if he did not kill Shi Xiaobai personally.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld frowned even more. They were not hesitating over WindWithoutTrace joining them, but considering what were the chances of victory if the three of them joined forces. They were already completely feeling despair when it came to Shi Xiaobai’s demonic footwork. They did not even have any desire to make another attempt. They did not think WindWithoutTrace was much stronger than them, so they did not have much hopes with the three of them teaming up.

Most importantly of all, GunfireInTheWorld’s bullets were nearly completely expended, while DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld’s Psionic Power and stamina had been excessively drained. They were in dire need of rest and readjustments. If they immediately carried on battling Shi Xiaobai, it was likely for WindWithoutTrace to notice that they were in a weak state, so who knew what sort of nefarious thoughts would arise from him?

The two looked each other in the eye as they saw the hesitation in each other’s eyes.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly said, “This Wind-something spicy chicken is right. Enjoying happiness alone is not as happy as sharing it. Good things need to be shared, why don’t all of you attack together!?”

Shi Xiaobai only wished their joint attacks could be more violent.

WindWithoutTrace was surprised as he wondered if the arrogant clown knew it was hopeless for him to escape and had given up.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld felt their heart sink. They could see the glowing light in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes, as though he was a starving cat that had seen three lost mice.

The duo looked each other in the eye again and saw the resoluteness in each other’s eyes this time.

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld looked at WindWithoutTrace and said, “Brother Wind, forgive me for being blunt. Ganging up against someone is a shameless act. I believe that to kill this arrogant person, we can take turns, but we should not gang up on him.”

Ganging up against someone was a shameless act, but you were part of a three-man team. How shameless are you to say such words!?

WindWithoutTrace cursed in his heart before saying, “Brother

DualBlades is right. Then let us take turns to punish him. Please let me take the lead. I will only vent my anger and will definitely not kill him!”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld’s eyes lit up. He was waiting for him to say that! He pretended that it was a hard proposition before saying, “This...everything has a chronological order...”

WindWithoutTrace immediately interrupted him, “Everything has a chronological order, but it also depends on how serious it is. I believe the person who hates this arrogant person the most is most qualified to take the lead!”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld continued to being evasive. “Brother Wind, what you say makes sense, but both Gunfire and I hate this arrogant person to the bone too!”

WindWithoutTrace’s eyes stared and said, “This person said I am inferior to a dog, and ridiculed me as a spicy chicken!”

“This...” DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld seemed to be in a dilemma.

WindWithoutTrace continued on. “You might not know. This person even spat a mouthful of saliva at my shoes when all of you were not noticing!”

Shi Xiaobai was shocked. This person was prepared to bullshit? This familiar feeling reminded him of a particular woman.

Upon hearing this, DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld fell silent, as though his will had been shaken.

WindWithoutTrace believed that he had a chance when he noticed this. With a stroke of brilliance, he said, “Sigh, I actually know this arrogant person in reality. I only recently recognized him, and there is a blood feud between us. I will be able to recognize him even if he turns to ashes, so it is absolutely unmistakable!”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was stunned as he said, “You know him? Who is he?”

WindWithoutTrace sighed and said, “I cannot reveal this person’s identity because it involves my family’s dirty linen. Sigh.”

“Dirty linen?” At this moment, even GunfireInTheWorld by the side turned interested.

WindWithoutTrace said with a pained heart, “I actually did not wish to mention it because one shouldn’t air one’s dirty linen in public, but with revenge at stake, I cannot miss it! I’m going to forgo all my shame. Everyone, I hate this person so much, because this person, this arrogant person had shared a room with my ex-wife a total of 108 times!”

WindWithoutTrace pointed at Shi Xiaobai and said angrily, as though he was venting all his rage.

Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded. Someone could actually willingly force themselves to be a cuckold!?

“Everyone, can you take it on account of my reputation? I only wish to take the lead so that I can cleave off the root of his evil!”

WindWithoutTrace gave a deep bow to the two of them as he glanced at Shi Xiaobai’s lower body.

Shi Xiaobai drew a gasp. Was he planning on harming little Xiaobai?

Shi Xiaobai immediately placed WindWithoutTrace on the blacklist. His eyes turned sharp. This asshole needs to be taught a lesson!

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was secretly delighted. He had tried refusing a few times so as to eliminate WindWithoutTrace’s wariness, but who knew that despite him only wanting a leaf, WindWithoutTrace had actually given him an entire forest!

Now that the opportunity was ripe for the picking, no, it should be said that the opportunity was almost burnt, DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld did not dare act any further. He pretended to say with a sigh, “Since Brother Wind hates this person so much, my hate is far inferior to yours. Forget it, I’ll let Brother Wind take the lead!”

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld heaved a sigh of relief as he turned around to indicate that he had given up the right to taking the initiative. After GunfireInTheWorld said the same thing to WindWithoutTrace, he also turned around to take a few steps back. He secretly gave DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld a thumbs up while DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld winked at him, suggesting how great his acting was.

Noticing the two people compromise, WindWithoutTrace heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. Although it was embarrassing to make himself a cuckold, he was already used to it. This was because his ex-wife, ex-girlfriend, and former ex-girlfriend had all f*cking cheated on him!

The most important thing of all was that his plan had succeeded. As long as he pretended to kill Shi Xiaobai because of a mistake, he could grab the Energy Pearl and use Wind Walk to escape. Everything would be perfect!

“I will be this week’s champion. It is loyal to me.”

Having been the champion for five consecutive weeks, WindWithoutTrace could not imagine the days of him missing the title of champion.

WindWithoutTrace raised his spear at Shi Xiaobai and said coldly. “Three strikes. I just need three strikes to make you regret what you did!”

Wind Spear had a total of nine moves, but he had only learned

three. However, three moves were sufficient. In a small match like the Battle Arena Corporation's weekly matches, other than Xiao Xiao, everyone else would immediately die after three strikes!

People called him—Wind Three Strikes!

Chapter 83: You Know Nothing About Your Ex-Wife

As the all-seeing audience, they knew WindWithoutTrace's true motives and were even more cognizant of the fact that the so-called "Wind Three Strikes" was useless against IChooseDogLeading. Hence, from the audience's point of view, WindWithoutTrace's actions would only be like throwing good money after bad. Not only had he insinuated himself as a cuckold, he was also about to suffer the loss of all morale when he faced the demonic footwork.

However, since WindWithoutTrace's various actions were beneath contempt, his coming suffering was deserving.

The audience could use this story as a laughable negative example. It could be used as a case study for criticism and for derisive discussion. But at this moment, few people laughed and there were few who found it interesting.

A strange repressive feeling emanated throughout the viewing hall.

In the commentator stands, Sweets, who had been completely stunned, finally could not help but ask, "Why...why? It is clearly a virtual battle, even if it's a competition, it is just a virtual game. Why, why would contestant WindWithoutTrace go to such an extent?"

This was also the question on the minds of many members of the audience. WindWithoutTrace's actions were indeed void of common sense. He had not shown any mercy by betraying IAmNoPig, who had followed him. He had also shamelessly cheapened his ex-wife's reputation. All of this just for an Energy Pearl and a kill point. Everything he did was just for victory in a virtual game.

WindWithoutTrace had sacrificed so much of his humanity in return for false glory. Was it worth it?

"He probably treats the virtual world as his real world," Biscuit gave a meaningful answer. "Everyone must have heard of the Church of Virtuality, one of the three international terrorist organizations, right? It is made up of a bunch of madmen who treat the real world as a virtual world. They treat other humans as non-player characters. Killing just becomes a mission. It is said that the congregation of the Church of Virtuality have their beginnings like what WindWithoutTrace is currently facing. They became sick of the real world, or were completely disappointed in the real world. So they end up addicted to the virtual world, treating everything in the virtual world as their own reality. And when these believers get lured into the Church of Virtuality by the Bishop of Virtuality, they would begin to see the real world as a virtual world."

Sweets said in astonishment, "Dad Biscuit, do you mean that contestant WindWithoutTrace is very likely a target of the Church of Virtuality?"

Biscuit pondered for a moment before saying, "I personally

believe that contestant WindWithoutTrace is temporarily at the beginning stages. He is somewhat disillusioned with the real world and is addicted to the glory won in the virtual world. However, he can still tell the differences between reality and virtuality. Hence, he is temporarily not the target of the Church of Virtuality, but he is in an extremely dangerous situation now. Once he receives a larger stimulus that can cause his mind to turn unstable...”

Biscuit stopped speaking.

Sweets hurriedly asked, “What will happen if his mind turns unstable?”

Biscuit sighed and said, “Legends say that the Bishop of Virtuality’s consciousness has penetrated the entire virtual world. He is constantly searching for prey. If there is a player on a brink of a mental breakdown while being immersed in virtual reality to the point of beginning to have strong doubts about reality, then the Bishop will take advantage of the opportunity to invade his consciousness and bewitch him, eventually making him become a loyal but crazy follower of the Church of Virtuality.”

Sweets exclaimed as she shook Biscuit’s arm and said anxiously, “Then what should be done? Contestant WindWithoutTrace’s mind seems to be somewhat unstable now!”

“What?”

Biscuit was stunned as he looked intently at the screen in front of him. The cameras were giving WindWithoutTrace an extreme

close-up. WindWithoutTrace's eyes were glazed while his body was trembling as though he found things unbelievable.

“What's the matter?”

Biscuit was stunned. He had just been distracted for a moment, and the story had developed to such a stage? Did he miss reading a chapter?

Sweets said, “I don't know. After using Wind Three Strikes, contestant WindWithoutTrace became like this!”

Biscuit said in surprise, “He has already used the Wind Three Strikes? Are you sure?”

His mind had just wandered for a few seconds and WindWithoutTrace was done with his Wind Three Strikes?

Sweets nodded and said, “Yea, contestant WindWithoutTrace has the nickname of Wind Speed Fast Draw, so he struck out really fast. It was nearly one strike per second, so he was done with the three strikes in three seconds. However...however, contestant DogLeading managed to dodge as though his body was motionless! After that, contestant WindWithoutTrace...he became like this!”

Biscuit could not help but click his tongue when he heard this. In his mind, he thought, “WindWithoutTrace O' WindWithoutTrace, although your nickname is Wind Speed Fast Draw, but isn't one stab a second f*cking too fast? If you were really that fast, it was no

wonder your ex-wife cheated on you!”

At this moment, the director nicely replayed what had happened before for Biscuit, as well as slowing down the footage several times for the audience.

Hence, the incredible scene perfectly appeared in front of the audience.

Even at a slowed down speed, the replay made everyone find WindWithoutTrace’s Wind Spear extremely fast and ruthless. The whistling of the wind seemed like it was caused by the spear’s strike, but it also seemed like the spear itself was a strong gust of wind!

However, Shi Xiaobai’s movements were even faster. At the instant the Wind Spear stabbed at him, Shi Xiaobai took a left step with his left foot, and immediately following that, his right foot took a step to the right. It was a very simple left and right side hop. Within two moves, his body went from left and then towards the right, quickly returning to his original spot. However, these two simple moves were completed at a speed invisible to the naked eye!

Even with the speed slowed down several times, all the audience saw was a fuzzy figure, so when the video was played at a normal speed, Shi Xiaobai’s simple left and right side hops appeared as though he did not make a move. The speed of him jumping left and then returning to his original spot was so fast that the naked eye could not grasp it!

Sweets exclaimed, “What...What terrifying speed. If contestant WindWithoutTrace’s Wind Spear has reached wind speeds, then contestant DogLeading’s jumping is nearly the speed of light!”

Biscuit commended, “The most terrifying thing is not his speed, but his accurate judgment when dodging. Moving at nearly the speed of light means that the amount of time to dodge is extremely short, but contestant DogLeading is able to use this short amount of time to dodge contestant WindWithoutTrace’s Wind Spear. This requires absolute confidence and judgment to complete such a feat.”

With the video slowed down, each of the Wind Three Strikes was faster than the last. However, Shi Xiaobai would only change the direction in which he moved or the number of times. He still maintained light speed, completing a near-perfect dodge.

When the video was returned to normal speed, it looked as though Shi Xiaobai had stood motionless to easily dodge WindWithoutTrace’s Wind Three Strikes.

After summarizing Biscuit’s explanation, they could only give a thumbs up and exclaim—Awesome bro!

At this moment, the director switched back to scenes from the live stream.

WindWithoutTrace was still in a dazed state. The hand holding the spear was trembling violently, as though he could not believe that his Wind Three Strikes had been easily dodged. He also looked

as though he was trying his best to convince himself that everything was an illusion. He was like a tiny mouse that had lost all courage to do battle but refused to concede defeat.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld cast sympathetic looks at WindWithoutTrace. They knew what WindWithoutTrace felt more than anyone else. They were also very thankful that they were clever enough not to fall into the pit of doom.

Biscuit sighed and said, “Contestant WindWithoutTrace must have realized the huge gap between himself and contestant DogLeading. However, contestant DogLeading’s light speed dodging has made contestant WindWithoutTrace produce thoughts that ‘maybe all this is an illusion’. Contestant WindWithoutTrace is currently wavering between reality and fantasy. He needs to make a decision.”

Or someone will give him a push.

Biscuit did not say this sentence, because pushing WindWithoutTrace towards a cruel reality or pushing him to a seemingly perfect but similarly cruel fantasy was an immense responsibility. The three-man team’s relationship with WindWithoutTrace could only be said to be average. They probably would not do such a thankless task.

As for contestant DogLeading, as he was the “culprit” for the presentation of this choice, regardless of which side he nudged him in, it would result in extreme effects. It was not bad if he did not do anything, much less help.

Eh, hold on, what is contestant DogLeading thinking of doing?

Biscuit was stunned as he saw Shi Xiaobai suddenly walk towards WindWithoutTrace. In a few steps, he was in front of WindWithoutTrace.

WindWithoutTrace could not help but look up to face the mysterious expert dressed in a clown costume who had unfathomable strength. His heart thumped because he did not want to hear any words of comfort, guidance or encouragement!

This rascal...what did he want to say?

As everyone looked in a daze, WindWithoutTrace had a pair of frail and lost eyes. At this point, Shi Xiaobai patted WindWithoutTrace on the shoulder. He said earnestly, “Do you think it was only 108 times in the room? Green Wind [1](#), you know nothing about your ex-wife!”

Spoiler

Chapter 84: This Is Not A Drill

“I see you as my brother but you sleep with my woman? To sleep with her 108 times? Nice, you are really my good brother.”

“Sorry Brother Wind.”

“Don’t apologize to me. Don’t you call me Brother Wind either. I do not have such a ‘loyal’ brother as you.”

“Brother Wind, if I said that she was the one who seduced me... will you believe me?”

“Heh heh, you said Xinxin...seduced you?”

“Brother Wind, I told you a long time ago that Wu Xinxin is a broad. She doesn’t deserve you, but you refused to believe...”

“This is the reason why you are sleeping with my wife?”

“Brother Wind, I’m doing it for your own good...”

“For my own good, you slept with my wife a 108 times?”

“108 times...Brother Wind, do you really think there were only 108 times?”

“What do you mean!?”

“Brother Wind, you know nothing about Wu Xinxin. 108 times is only in the room. Be it the car, in the wilderness, in dressing rooms, in the elevator...that broad, Wu Xinxin doesn't care at all. That broad really doesn't deserve you!”

“Shut up!”

...

.....

“Shut up!”

Having his most painful memory evoked by a simple phrase, it caused WindWithoutTrace's reason to completely crumble. In a fit of rage, WindWithoutTrace roared out angrily. His eyes were red and he began stabbing at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai dodged the strike with a single jump. As he looked at the WindWithoutTrace, who appeared like he wanted to tear him apart, he was extremely surprised. He never expected the nonsense he spouted had such surprising effects despite him only trying to agitate WindWithoutTrace into restoring his fighting spirit.

“You think there were only 108 times?”

After dodging the Wind Spear, Shi Xiaobai probed him by repeating his words.

“Shut up!” WindWithoutTrace roared. As he clenched his teeth, he continued stabbing angrily at Shi Xiaobai.

“Shut up! Shut up! Shut up!”

Wind Three Strikes, Wind Three Strikes, Wind Three Strikes...

As though he had eaten some rage medicine, WindWithoutTrace’s every strike was as fast as wind despite them being completely random. The sounds of empty space being torn apart sounded as loud as firecrackers.

Realizing how crazy WindWithoutTrace looked, Shi Xiaobai could not bear to agitate him any further. He shut his mouth and focused on comprehending and cultivating his Crab Steps.

WindWithoutTrace, who had lost his mind, seemed like a mad dog. Under his constant usage of Wind Three Strikes, it even made Shi Xiaobai feel a slight bit of pressure. It excited him somewhat, but also made him feel a bit of guilt.

It was as though he had done something incredible. Wind Three Strikes had now completely transformed into Mad Three Strikes!

The three-man team watched in amazement by the sidelines. This was the first time they saw WindWithoutTrace in such a

crazy state. The three strikes he delivered under his rage was extremely terrifying. If it were them, they would likely not last past ten seconds. As for God Clown, he had managed to dodge so freely under the crazy bombardment of the three strikes, as though he was not worried at all!

As the audience watched in amazement, be it Shi Xiaobai's provocative sentence of "you know nothing about your ex-wife" or WindWithoutTrace's sudden raging state, the intense battle was repeatedly refreshing their understanding of the world.

With the passage of time, Shi Xiaobai's expression turned more serious and his gaze turned intense. As for the raging WindWithoutTrace, he was still as ferocious as before and was in fact, getting worse.

As WindWithoutTrace's Wind Spear increased in speed, the way Shi Xiaobai dodged became more varied. It went from the repeated side hops to dodging with fakes moves, before becoming variable speed dodging. Finally, he even used Wavelet Shield in a defensive dodge, with the appearance of a few Crab Phantom Images.

Under the intense bombardment of the enraged three strikes, Shi Xiaobai was constantly approaching his limits.

GunfireInTheWorld and DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld stared helplessly. The demonic footwork that had tortured them so much was just the most basic move. God Clown actually had so many moves and tricks!

ThatTenderOneShot was also completely dumbfounded. He could have killed WindWithoutTrace, who was wide open from his attacks, but he could not bear to do so when he saw WindWithoutTrace in such a crazy state. After all, this competition was just a virtual game. Although he had the desire to win, he did not feel the need to obtain it through such unethical means. WindWithoutTrace's craziness and grudge did not seem fake, so if he were to kill WindWithoutTrace with a single shot, wouldn't he be too cruel?

As the two figures were embroiled in the battle, trees constantly crashed down. The raging WindWithoutTrace attacked desperately while Shi Xiaobai, who was nearly forced to his limits, constantly dodged. It made the audience hold their breaths.

This battle was extremely intense, it looked as though it would last for a long period of time.

Suddenly, without any warning, something unexpected happened—WindWithoutTrace suddenly stopped. He stopped his stabbing and pursuit, and even stopped breathing.

This sudden halt came too abruptly, as though a person running with all his might had suddenly come to a standstill.

In a closeup, WindWithoutTrace's red eyes slowly restored to normal, but his eyes were dull and his breathing slowed. He asked, "Who...are you?"

Everyone was stunned upon hearing his sudden question.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. Why did he suddenly ask for his name while they were having a nice battle?

Just as Shi Xiaobai was hesitant over answering truthfully, WindWithoutTrace's voice boomed once again.

“You say...This world is fake?”

WindWithoutTrace's voice sounded more and more astounded. So he wasn't asking God DogLeading? However, why did this question seem like he was conversing with someone. But from the way he looked, it did not appear like he was asking anyone around him.

What was wrong with WindWithoutTrace?

In the commentator stands, Biscuit suddenly felt his heart jump as he hurriedly shouted, “Bishop of Virtuality!?”

The moment Biscuit finished saying that, a black mist suddenly appeared around WindWithoutTrace. It sunk into WindWithoutTrace at an extremely fast speed as WindWithoutTrace's facial features instantly turned ferocious. He screamed out aloud but his roar came to an abrupt end half a second later.

WindWithoutTrace was completely engulfed by the black mist in a few seconds. The black mist suddenly solidified and transformed

into a gigantic black cocoon.

Everyone was stunned by the sudden turn of events. In just a few seconds, WindWithoutTrace had been completely enveloped by the black mist that turned into a black cocoon. It was as though he had completely fallen into the darkness.

“Quick, use the virtual system to inform the other contestants. Tell them to shatter the black cocoon as fast as possible!”

Biscuit hurriedly turned his head and shouted to the staff not far from him. “What appeared isn’t the Bishop of Virtuality, but the Bishop of Virtuality’s dark virus. As long as the black cocoon is shattered, contestant WindWithoutTrace will be saved! Also, do not stop the match. Inform the branch where WindWithoutTrace is. Do not attempt to wake WindWithoutTrace from his virtual immersion, or everything will be over!”

“Hurry up and shatter the virus black cocoon, or WindWithoutTrace would be brainwashed into becoming a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality. He will become a heartless terrorist!”

Biscuit’s rapid words and calm analysis caused the panicked crowd to gradually calm down. The staff did not dare delay any further and followed Biscuit’s instructions.

In a while, the system’s voice resounded in the virtual world in a hurried tone.

“All players, please shatter the black virus cocoon as soon as possible. If not, contestant WindWithoutTrace would become a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality. This is not a drill, I repeat, this is not a drill. Neither is this part of the game. It is an emergency!”

“Please...”

The three-man team was appalled when they heard the system’s voice. The Church of Virtuality was notorious, with it being one of the three international terrorist organizations. They had naturally heard of it. However, this was the first time they encountered the Bishop of Virtuality’s brainwashing process. If they did not shatter the black cocoon, WindWithoutTrace would become a zombie parishioner of the Church of Virtuality!

Shi Xiaobai was also horrified. Although he did not know what the Church of Virtuality was, he could sense the exigency of the circumstances from the panic the three-man team felt and the way the system said it.

If WindWithoutTrace was to become a so-called parishioner of the Church of Virtuality, it seemed like it was because of him?

Shi Xiaobai was feeling a little too deep for tears. Why were people these days so glass-hearted? Why were they hurt at the slightest umbrage?

Shi Xiaobai knew he could no longer stand by the sidelines and appear indifferent.

However...

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw the black cocoon. There was a golden sheen around the cocoon and appeared extremely hard.

Shi Xiaobai sighed. Expecting him who had no offensive techniques to shatter the black steel cocoon with his bare fists, This Subject can't do it!

Chapter 85: Holding Power

As Shi Xiaobai was weighing the possibility of his fists being able to shatter the steel-like black cocoon, the three-man team had begun taking action. Although they had never encountered the virus black cocoon before, they were acutely aware of the Church of Virtuality's infamy. The cult was filled with madmen who treated the human world as a virtual world. This group of madmen reduced life to cold numbers, represented killing as a daily quest used to level themselves up. As they were inhumane with no desires or fear, they had no weaknesses at all.

Compared to the other two terrorist organizations which had clear objectives and desires, the Church of Virtuality posed the greatest destructive threat to the human world. The parishioners who were brainwashed by the Bishop of Virtuality would follow every order. They would ignore all emotions and were collectively a group of controlled powerful zombies.

If WindWithoutTrace was completely brainwashed, what awaited him was just ice-cold death—being nipped in the bud by righteous organizations.

This had to be prohibited!

“Da Da Da...”

GunfireInTheWorld raised his machine gun and aimed at the black cocoon. He had few bullets left, but at this moment, he was not stingy with any of his bullets!

“Peng! Peng! Peng!

Scalding hot bullets violently bombarded the shimmering steel cocoon’s surface. As bullet after bullet pounded furiously on the unyielding darkness, the projectiles shattered and fell to the ground, giving off fiery sparks in the process. Black smoke began to billow as it lingered around the black cocoon.

Only when the last bullet was shot out and the lingering black smoke dissipated from the black cocoon’s surface did people realize that the black cocoon’s surface was as smooth as before despite GunfireInTheWorld’s intense shelling. There was not a single crack or depression!

“F*ck!”

GunfireInTheWorld cursed angrily under his breath as he threw his heavy-duty machine gun to the ground!

“Peng...Peng...Peng”

Despite GunfireInTheWorld having finished spraying his bullets, the sound of bullets striking the black cocoon’s surface did not come to an end. ThatTenderOneShot’s bullets were also working hard at it.

At this point in time, ThatTenderOneShot could no longer bother to hide his location. He jumped down from the tree and quickly

closed the distance. Shot after shot, he aimed at the same target. The bullets that streaked out from his barrel hit the same spot on the black cocoon's surface under his precise control.

However, a despairing reality was starkly revealed. Not a single mark was left behind on the black cocoon's surface.

“Clang! Clang! Clang!”

To the side of the black cocoon, the harsh collision sounds of metal hitting metal constantly resonated.

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was waving both his arms as two sharp blades slashed down again and again at the bottomless and impenetrable darkness.

A rare tint of redness appeared in the usually calm DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's eyes. His breathing became irregular as he constantly jumped, waving his arms and brandishing his blades. Despite repeating his untiring efforts, his blade failed to leave the slightest scratch on the black cocoon's surface!

“Peng!”

Suddenly, but completely within reason, the short blade in DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld's right hand broke!

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was surprised by this, but he

clenching his teeth in determination, he abandoned his broken blade. As he held the remaining short blade with both hands, he angrily slashed at the black cocoon once again!

The competition was just a virtual game, but what WindWithoutTrace was facing was a tragedy of the cruelest reality. The three-man team had given up their obsession with victory, foregoing any conflicts they previously had with WindWithoutTrace. They wanted to save WindWithoutTrace!

Even though they lacked the strength to save him, they still persisted on. It was not to hypocritically proclaim that they had risked their lives to save a person, but to honestly tell everyone that they had done their best to stop this black cocoon, an impenetrable darkness and an incoming tragedy!

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld angrily brandished his blade as he slashed at the black cocoon while ThatTenderOneShot continued cursing while constantly pulling the trigger.

Without a weapon, GunfireInTheWorld could only watch helplessly. Suddenly, he turned to look at Shi Xiaobai who stayed rooted in his spot. An irrepressible anger suddenly arose in him!

The lowly them were delivering their lowly efforts.

But the powerful him was just watching idly by the side?

“Why aren’t you doing anything?”

GunfireInTheWorld angrily shouted in Shi Xiaobai's direction!

...

“Why...isn't contestant DogLeading doing a thing. If this keeps up...”

In the commentator stands, Sweets spoke before stopping mid-sentence. In fact, the audience in the viewing hall had already raised a ruckus. The three-man team's humble efforts and Shi Xiaobai's standing by the sidelines formed a stark contrast. It forced them to question Shi Xiaobai's inaction.

Biscuit sighed and said, “Have all of you forgotten? Contestant DogLeading is only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He might have been abandoning his Psionic Ability cultivation in exchange for cultivating Crab Steps. His offensive strength might even be inferior to a normal person at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He is not doing a thing because he himself knows it would not amount to anything.”

Sweets was stunned and figured it out too. A mighty figure that had cultivated Crab Steps to the Exemplary Mastery realm but remained only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm was clearly an instance of attending to one thing and losing sight of the other. IChooseDogLeading's attacks were definitely inferior to his evasion. It was even very possible that it was not even up to mark, so it was impossible for him to shatter the virus black cocoon.

But, was everything doomed to despair?

Sweets could not help but ask, “If there is no way to shatter the virus black cocoon...what will happen to contestant WindWithoutTrace?”

Biscuit remained silent for a moment before he struggled to say, “If contestant WindWithoutTrace is completely brainwashed and becomes a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality, then the inquisitors will immediately isolate him, preventing any further deeper contact with the Bishop of Virtuality. He will be nipped in the bud or even...”

Once he was fully inculcated of those beliefs of the Church of Virtuality, he would become a murderous terrorist. Like a virus, he would be isolated by inquisitors to discipline and reform him, but most parishioners of the Church of Virtuality usually ended up being directly killed.

Sweets immediately found it hard to breathe. To watch a life, despite it being somewhat ugly on the inside and outside, walking towards the ends of darkness, one would naturally feel a sense of sadness for the loss of one's kind.

The audience in the viewing hall were all silent. Not long ago, they were still finding it surprising and amusing with WindWithoutTrace's absurd behavior. Now, they were all silently praying for WindWithoutTrace. People in this era faced all sorts of hidden dangers. Even while hiding in the virtual world, a true nightmare still existed. And this nightmare was a public enemy of humanity.

But at this moment, who could save WindWithoutTrace, shattering this hateful nightmare?

...

Nightmares could be shattered but the reality made the cruelty even more vivid.

GunfireInTheWorld found it impossible to understand why Shi Xiaobai was frozen still.

“Why aren’t you doing anything?” GunfireInTheWorld angrily shouted at Shi Xiaobai, “Does the powerful you lack the slightest bit of compassion?”

“WindWithoutTrace might have a grudge with you, but is there a need to turn a blind eye?”

“Can you watch unfeelingly as WindWithoutTrace becomes a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality, becoming a crazy terrorist?”

“...”

The helpless often took it out on bystanders that did not lend a helping hand. From GunfireInTheWorld’s point of view, Shi Xiaobai’s act of standing idle was extremely despicable. It made

him feel anger and shame.

Shi Xiaobai, who had been criticized, had his head down all this while. His eyebrows were knitted tightly, as though he was thinking of something, hesitating or even in a struggle.

Suddenly, as though he was moved by a sentence, Shi Xiaobai abruptly raised his head at GunfireInTheWorld.

GunfireInTheWorld was stunned as he swallowed the words that he was about to bellow out.

What...what sort of eyes were those?

Why...why did he have such a gaze?

Suddenly, a soft but firm voice resounded, waking GunfireInTheWorld up from his trance.

“This King will save him...before he becomes a terrorist.”

After Shi Xiaobai said that, he turned to walk towards the black cocoon.

GunfireInTheWorld froze in his spot.

Those eyes...seemed to hide an emotion that caused trepidation

in one's heart. It was hard to guess what the emotion was, and it was not something that could be empathized, but he could feel the upheaval the emotion in his eyes gave.

This guy...this guy that calls himself "This King"...was not simple.

As GunfireInTheWorld watched Shi Xiaobai's back, his expression softened.

The audience gradually turned silent as they noticed Shi Xiaobai approaching the black cocoon. Even though they understood that God DogLeading was a strange talent that specialized only in movement techniques after hearing Biscuit's analysis, it did not mean they could understand why he was sitting on his hands.

Even if God DogLeading was only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, they still yearned for a miracle to happen.

Maybe God DogLeading was able to save WindWithoutTrace, shattering this nightmare?

Under everyone's watchful gaze, Shi Xiaobai came to the side of the black cocoon where DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was standing.

He looked at DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld and asked, "Your blade, can This King borrow it?"

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was stunned as he handed the short knife in his hand hesitantly.

As Shi Xiaobai took over the short knife, he fell into startled state momentarily before he took a deep breath.

“Even This King is afraid of himself when This King uses a knife.”

As Shi Xiaobai held onto the knife’s handle, it was as though he held a power that could destroy everything.

Chapter 86: That One Knife

The moment Shi Xiaobai held the knife's handle, it was as though he turned into another person. His pair of black eyes flickered with a strange glint. The way he held the knife made it appeared like he had held one countless times before, but he was just out of practice due to numerous years of disuse.

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld was standing closest to him, so the feeling was impressed on him. As he watched the knife-wielding Shi Xiaobai in a daze, he felt as though there was an unseen edge that existed in Shi Xiaobai's body, but he also felt as though Shi Xiaobai's entire being had become an exposed blade that seemed blinding.

This was an expert, a peerless expert.

DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld felt mixed emotions amidst shock.

As the audience watched through the cold screen, they felt a fiery energy brewing around Shi Xiaobai. They could not help but hold their breaths, as they felt as though "this person and this knife was the only thing under the heavens".

As the cameras zoomed in, they gave Shi Xiaobai a close up. The audience was stunned because at this moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyes were closed. He stood in front of the black cocoon motionless, as though he was preparing something.

The virus black cocoon had already appeared for several minutes by now. The Bishop of Virtuality's brainwashing speed varied depending on the person. Those with weaker wills and doubted reality deeply were easier brainwashed. It was unknown what state WindWithoutTrace was in at this moment.

Time waits for no man!

Everyone was anxious but they still maintained a uniform silence. The three-man team in the virtual world did not dare disturb Shi Xiaobai as well. Everyone was waiting, waiting for the strike from that knife.

That knife very likely decided WindWithoutTrace's fate.

As time passed, Shi Xiaobai's breathing suddenly came to a halt as he abruptly opened his eyes. Without a roar or any grandiose postures, he directly and simply attacked using the knife!

This strike was neither a slash, nor a cut, but a direct stab into the steel black cocoon!

This stab was as fast as lightning, like the violent grinding of flint-stones!

Everyone stared with their eyes widened. Stabbing the thick metallic black cocoon with a short knife was like pricking a hardened rock with a needle. The most likely result was the knife breaking!

What was the outcome of the stab?

The result exceeded all expectations. The knife did not stab a hole into the black cocoon, nor did the knife shatter. Neither did the short knife rebound.

The knife actually “submerged” into the black cocoon!

There was no sign of an impact at all. There was not even the sound of a collision. The moment the short knife stabbed at the black cocoon, it sank into the black cocoon instantly, as though it had stabbed into black liquid!

“What happened!?” Sweets exclaimed in surprise.

Biscuit shook his head with a wry smile. Despite his rich experience, he too was clueless.

There was not a single crack or dent appearing on the extremely hard metallic black cocoon’s surface despite the combined attacks from the three-man team; hence, it was evident how hard it was.

However, DogLeading’s simple stab had penetrated deep into the cocoon like it had passed through water.

It was as though after the knife stabbed through, the black cocoon had turned into a liquid substance.

Biscuit had previously seen superpowers that made solids turn to liquids, but there was no such thing as superpowers in the virtual world!

“Peng!”

At this moment, a gunshot woke everyone up from their daze. ThatTenderOneShot had pulled the trigger once again, but his bullet ended up colliding onto the black cocoon. It produced a metallic ping before the bullet shattered to the ground once again.

The black cocoon was still the black cocoon!

Then...how did this knife that seemed to stab into liquid without a sound do it?

“Be careful! Stay away from the black cocoon!”

A shout woke everyone up from their thoughts. It was Shi Xiaobai’s voice!

Everyone saw Shi Xiaobai pulling out the short knife quickly. The ease and speed which he did it appeared as though he had pulled it out of water. After giving a warning shout, he jumped away from the black cocoon at an extremely fast speed.

The three-man team also reacted by running far away. They did

not dare disobey Shi Xiaobai's warning.

At this moment, a red beam of light shot from afar. It was like a burning flame that tore through the air, issuing a sharp sound that headed straight for the gigantic black cocoon!

“Boom!”

A red beam that shot forward clashed violently with the black cocoon, producing a tumultuous explosion. The aftershocks of the explosion caused dust to roll up and the surrounding trees to tilt diagonally downwards. DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld, who failed to withdraw far enough, was thrown to the ground in a miserable state by the blast of wind from the explosion.

Everyone was stunned by the sudden change of events. However, before they could produce any exclamations, another similar red beam of light shot from afar.

No, there were two beams.

Hold on, there was another one!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Three consecutive explosions resounded as black mist filled the skies and dust covered the black cocoon in layers. At the moment when the smoke dispersed and when the explosions died down, the sound of a fine, short and tiny but clear crack entered everyone's

ears.

It was like the sound produced when an eggshell cracked.

At this moment, a gentle gust of wind blew. The wind was so tender and soft, but it dispersed all the dust, eventually revealing the black cocoon's state.

On closer look, the black cocoon's surface was filled with numerous cracks!

“It has shattered, the virus black cocoon has shattered!”

Just as Biscuit managed a surprised exclamation, the black cocoon shattered completely like a ball of glass. It was reduced to numerous fragments that instantly turned into black mist, which quickly dug tunneled into the ground.

WindWithoutTrace's body fell from midair and crashed to the ground with a thud. The fallen WindWithoutTrace's eyes were closed and his face looked serene, as though he was asleep.

Biscuit heaved a sigh of relief and instructed the staff, “Inform WindWithoutTrace's branch head and wake WindWithoutTrace from his virtual immersion.”

From the looks of it, WindWithoutTrace had been saved.

The four red beams had shattered the virus black cocoon, saving WindWithoutTrace!

But...where did the four red beams of light come from?

As the audience watched intently at the screen, they saw a person walking slowly out from the depths of the jungle.

The person wore a white veil while adorning a white laced dress. There was a big pink bow tie in front of her chest, while pink hair rolled down to her shoulders. A crystal bow was held in her right hand, and like a fairy, she entered everyone's vision.

“Princess Xiao Xiao!” Sweets exclaimed.

The four red beams of light were Princess Xiao Xiao's crystal arrows!

Biscuit said, “That is an A Class archery offensive skill—Crimson Netherworld!”

Once a combat skill was at A Class or above, it was not something that could be grasped through the accumulation of time. It required extraordinary insights, so for Princess Xiao Xiao to be able to harness an A Class offensive skill at such a young age, she was indeed an impressive genius.

Most importantly, the black cocoon had shattered because of the four arrows despite the three-man team being completely

powerless against it. This sharp contrast impressed everyone.

The audience began to applaud and cheer Princess Xiao Xiao, as the repressive feelings from before turned to elation.

In the commentator stands, Sweets was also jumping in joy. The staff was constantly praising the excellence of the corporation's princess. The atmosphere was extremely lively.

However, Biscuit fell silent amidst the din. His gaze landed on a corner of the screen. It was a shoulder that the cameras had forgotten.

That knife, that knife that easily stabbed into the black cocoon. How did it do it?

Princess Xiao Xiao's four "Crimson Netherworld" arrows were indeed powerful, but were they really enough to shatter the virus black cocoon?

Most importantly, what did that knife do?

What...did it change?

Chapter 87: The Great Demon Lord Xiao Xiao

In a stroke of luck, WindWithoutTrace was saved after the virus black cocoon was completely shattered. If it had not been a public competition, or if it had not been the stunning power of Princess Xiao Xiao's four shots of "Crimson Netherworld", or if not for...

In summary, this outcome was indeed a joyous outcome. Compared to those pitiful players who were brainwashed by the Bishop of Virtuality in private games without the knowledge of anyone, WindWithoutTrace was considered extremely lucky.

However, not everything had come to an end. This was because Princess Xiao Xiao raised her crystal bow once again. Having strung a crystal arrow, she had pulled her bow open.

Upon seeing this, everyone calmed down.

"Since everyone is here, it should be time to put an end to this boring game."

Princess Xiao Xiao's cold voice smothered the joyful atmosphere that did not last more than a minute.

The three-man team's smiles stiffened as the audience took a moment before they came round to the turn of events. They had nearly forgotten that this was all a virtual competition after the repressive feeling brought about by WindWithoutTrace's terrible

encounter and the Church of Virtuality.

As Princess Xiao Xiao sad, the nature of the competition itself was boring. It was just an exhibition match with a bit of competitive elements. Although it would affect the branches' results, or prizes and honors to the winner, that was all to it.

Compared to the Church of Virtuality or terrorists organizations and the calamities that despaired an entire generation, this competition was trivial. As it nearly lacked any meaning, it appeared boring.

Those who watched or participated in this virtual competition were just trying to find so-called fun in something meaningless and devoid of fun. It was just used as a way to comfort one's soul due to the harshness of reality.

Now, Xiao Xiao wanted to end this boring competition.

How was it to end?

Xiao Xiao used her bow and arrow as an answer.

Without any hesitation, she released her fingers, and with a twang of the bowstring, an arrow shot out with a swift, red beam of light! The red beam stirred up a dust storm and tore through the void, leaving a red temporary scar behind. It carried an explosive and sharp whistling sound with it.

It was Crimson Netherworld!

Everyone stared widely and felt enlightened but also extremely shocked. They were enlightened because they finally understood that Princess Xiao Xiao was planning on using victory to end the boring match as she mentioned. The reason why they were shocked was because the arrow's target was Shi Xiaobai!

“Dodge!” In the commentator stands, Sweets could not help but cry out.

The arrow was without warning because when Xiao Xiao raised her bow, she was already aiming it at Shi Xiaobai. However, Shi Xiaobai had his head lowered while he looked at the short knife in his hand, as though his spirit was no longer fused in him.

And when the Netherworld arrow shot out, Shi Xiaobai remained dazed in his spot, as though he had no plans on dodging!

“Boom!”

After the explosion from the red beam, dust flew up as people saw the crystal arrow penetrate Shi Xiaobai's chest before sending his frail body backwards. A few trees were toppled one after another and soon, he was engulfed by the lush forest. Finally, he was pinned to an ancient tree.

The cameras zoomed in to reveal that Shi Xiaobai had been pinned to an old trunk by a crystal arrow!

The arrow had penetrated Shi Xiaobai's body, and the powerful shot had sent him flying tens of meters away. On his final pinned spot on a trunk, blood gushed out of his chest, dripping to the grayish-brown bark and the blackish-yellow soil.

Despite being a virtual world, everything still appeared realistic. The bloody scene was extremely vivid that it stifled people as though they had witnessed a true death.

The director hurriedly changed the scene to Princess Xiao Xiao standing there like a fairy. She looked nonchalantly in the direction where Shi Xiaobai had flown, but there was a tint of disappointment in her eyes.

...

Xiao Xiao was indeed somewhat disappointed. Due to an academic task, she had to cultivate "Crimson Netherworld" to the Exemplary Mastery realm. Under her grandfather's suggestion, she had taken time out of her weekend to compete in the Battle Arena Corporation's weekly competition. She had even personally drawn up the rules to explicitly allow six to fight one. The goal was naturally to raise her offensive skill's familiarity level through battle.

However, she was disappointed to realize that the six contestants were too weak for her. Targets that could be easily destroyed did not give her any improvements at all. She needed an opponent that was on par with her, one that allowed her to fight in an intense

struggle.

Unfortunately, amongst the six contestants, none of them was the opponent she was looking for, not a single one.

Originally, she believed that IChooseDogLeading, who gave such a stunning pre-battle declaration, might be an impressive opponent, but she did not expect him to lack the courage to even dodge. Although the arrow was Crimson Netherworld, was there a need to be scared stiff?

Xiao Xiao turned to look at the members of the three-man team who were rooted to their spots. She sighed and said, “Although it’s a boring competition, can all of you please resist somewhat, can you?”

With this said, the three-man team’s breathing stagnated before they immediately reacted. What Princess Xiao Xiao said was right. This shocking competition had yet to produce a victor. They could still put up a fight!

But...

Just as GunfireInTheWorld thought of his fanny pack that was emptied of its bullets, he immediately turned around and ran!

As DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld thought of how one of his two blades had broken, while the other one was lent to Shi Xiaobai, leaving him unarmed, he also turned around and ran!

When ThatTenderOneShot thought how it was the greatest taboo for a sniper to be exposed to the enemy, he also turned around and ran!

Although it was a boring competition, it still needed an outcome. It was expected for the contestants to strive hard for victory, as such, the three-man team did not choose to give up!

However, knowing that they were no match, they did not choose to put up a stubborn resistance. At this moment, they very rationally chose to...temporarily retreat!

“Pfft!”

At this moment, several people snorted in laughter.

The three figures that fled in different directions stunned the audience but they found humor in it. Instantly, they extricated themselves from the sorrow of how God DogLeading was taken down and gradually found the repressive feeling that the Church of Virtuality brought about dissipating.

Wasn't watching a virtual reality competition just a form of relaxation?

The way the three-man team simultaneously fled once again gave the audience a relaxing feeling of being able to appreciate the competition.

Biscuit could not help but laugh as he said, “Everyone, the competition has just begun!”

Before he finished his sentence, three red beams of light shot out. As three explosions resounded, three system voices echoed in response.

“Contestant ‘GunfireInTheWorld’ eliminated!”

“Contestant ‘DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld’ eliminated!”

“Contestant ‘ThatTenderOneShot’ eliminated!”

Just as Biscuit’s voice came to a halt, the audience’s smiles froze completely.

Everyone’s eyes spontaneously landed on the bow-wielding girl. Her transcendent bearing made her look like a fairy that descended down to the mortal world. The white laced dress and her overall stylish simple costume made her look like a pretty princess.

However, this girl who was like a princess fairy had shattered the virus black cocoon with four arrows and killed four contestants with four arrows too. She could be said to be a Great Demon Lord!

At this moment, Xiao Xiao’s eyes were cold. The eight shots of Crimson Netherworld had barely given her any improvements. It

was equivalent to the feeling of shooting fixed targets and it made her irritated. She was a person who always cherished time, so she was angry at having wasted her time on this boring and meaningless competition.

“What was I expecting?”

Xiao Xiao shook her head with a deprecating smile. She had hopes of meeting a worthy opponent in the virtual world who would give her an intense battle that she could fight heartily. This had motivated her to agree to her grandfather's suggestion. In the end, it was all her own fault.

Her fault was to have misplaced expectations right from the beginning. If she did not do that, she would not have felt anger from her disappointment and feel regret over her wrong choice.

Xiao Xiao put away her crystal bow and was prepared to quit the game. All she needed to do was kill the unconscious WindWithoutTrace to obtain victory, but that would result in WindWithoutTrace suffering a mental blow. She did not care for the outcome of the match, so she felt that quitting the game was the best choice.

Upon seeing this, Biscuit could not help but sigh and say, “The competition is over.”

The competition was over.

Was the competition really over?

“Heh, Girl, that arrow of yours, can you send another hundred of them towards This King?”

A weak voice was heard as a limping figure slowly walked out of the jungle.

Chapter 88: I Hope You Would Last Longer

The person who limped out was none other than Shi Xiaobai. His body was wrapped in a light red glow as his chest wound was healing at a speed visible to the naked eye.

At the instant the Crimson Netherworld arrow was about to strike him, Shi Xiaobai was awakened from an undesirable memory evoked from the short knife. However, it was already too late for him to dodge. At the moment he focused himself back in the battle, the crystal arrow had pierced through his chest. The surging forces that entered his body seemed like they would rip his body apart at the very next moment.

However, Shi Xiaobai's reaction was extremely fast. He immediately moved in the direction the crystal arrow was heading, allowing the force at which he moved backwards to offset as much of the impact brought about by the crystal arrow. This resulted in his body flying dozens of meters backwards into the jungle before he was pinned into a tree.

Thankfully, the arrow did not stab into his heart. The terrifying impact the arrow brought with it had been mostly reduced because of his leap backwards. This was also the reason why he did not get instantly killed by the Crimson Netherworld like the three-man team.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used the "Energy Pearl" and the stunning recovery effects did its job at pulling him back from Death's door.

However, having suffered such a serious injury, even the “Energy Pearl” required a relatively long period of time to finish the healing process.

As such, Shi Xiaobai had planned on waiting till the healing was done before he came out to meet the girl who had “sneakily attacked” him.

Unfortunately, Shi Xiaobai understood that he could no longer wait after Xiao Xiao instantly eliminated the three-man team with her three arrows.

He was constantly searching for a opponent who was on par with him. He wished to be locked in battle with his opponent, hoping for an opponent that could constantly threatened him, allowing him to repeatedly push himself to his limits and beyond.

And Xiao Xiao might be the person he was searching for. He wanted to battle this girl!

During the seven days of versus matches, Shi Xiaobai would occasionally encounter godly people at the level of Thomas who could easily destroy him. They made him lose extremely fast, resulting in insignificant improvements.

As it was a match at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, he would often encounter opponents at the corresponding level. These rookies did not provide him any value at all, but without any offensive means to quickly end the battle, he could only choose to

quit. Back then, he also lost very quickly and barely improved.

Only in rare instances would Shi Xiaobai be lucky enough to meet an opponent that he was evenly matched with. Every time he encountered such an opponent, his insights into Crab Steps would increase greatly because intense and difficult battles were the only way for him to break through his limits.

Shi Xiaobai no longer lost himself in the past associated with a short knife. He recalled what was the most important thing for him now—become stronger, become stronger, and become even stronger.

And Xiao Xiao's Crimson Netherworld was the hope he saw to make himself stronger.

He began to anticipate, hoping that this girl was his match, allowing him to engage in an inextricable battle!

He even had a tiny hope that she was able to shoot such a powerful arrow another hundred times. If that happened, wouldn't that be great?

So when he limped out, he could not help but ask—Heh, Girl, that arrow of yours, can you send another hundred of them towards This King?

.....

Shi Xiaobai's appearance and his arrogant-sounding words stunned everyone. They were suddenly reminded of the fact that the system had never announced the elimination of IChooseDogLeading. That arrow had failed to kill God DogLeading!

The audience laughed. Shi Xiaobai's request for another hundred arrows reminded them of the return of God DogLeading. Just thinking of the godly Crab Steps God DogLeading used, they felt like there was something to look forward to.

Kevin was equally stunned because God DogLeading had addressed himself as "This King". It reminded him of an extremely annoying person, a person who was equally arrogant and ostentatious.

"Do you think he is very similar to Shi Xiaobai?"

A voice filled with mixed emotions echoed in his ear as Kevin turned around to realize it was Yang Yang.

He knitted his eyebrows and angrily said, "Do not compare my God DogLeading and that retard, Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai might be lucky to be a genius, but his strength is nothing but garbage. As for God DogLeading, he has true strength. No matter how much a genius Shi Xiaobai is, he will still need to take several years to cultivate Crab Steps to the Exemplary Mastery realm. And by then, God DogLeading would have long attained an even more terrifying realm. The differences between them are staggering!"

Upon hearing this, Yang Yang fell silent for a moment before he

said in a deep, meaningful manner, “If...IChooseDogLeading is actually Shi Xiaobai?”

“Impossible!”

Kevin immediately denied the possibility as he said, “Heh heh, can you use your brain when speaking? How long has Shi Xiaobai begun Psionic Ability cultivation? If God DogLeading is Shi Xiaobai, I’ll run naked around Steel City.”

Yang Yang opened his mouth, but turned his head and fell silent. He could not help but imagine Kevin running naked. That would definitely be the funniest thing in the world, but why...couldn’t he laugh at all?

.....

Another person who could not laugh was Biscuit. When he announced that the competition had just begun, the three-man team was immediately killed. When he later announced that the competition was over, Shi Xiaobai immediately walked out, figuratively smacking him in the face.

Although it was nearly routine for his face to be smacked, having his face smacked at light speed twice in a row made him feel a tiny bit of melancholy.

This was f*cking embarrassing.

In order to alleviate his embarrassment, Biscuit coughed and said, “God DogLeading still has that familiar vibe! He is still as arrogant, and equally surprising with his words. I wonder how Princess Xiao Xiao will answer!”

Upon hearing this, the audience immediately pricked up their ears in order to hear Princess Xiao Xiao’s answer.

Xiao Xiao did not answer, but instead responded with a question, “Can you resist a hundred arrows?”

Shi Xiaobai’s appearance took Xiao Xiao somewhat aback. She could not understand how this person had survived having been directly struck by Crimson Netherworld. Furthermore, when she heard Shi Xiaobai’s words, she found it amusing.

Whether she could shoot a hundred arrows wasn’t critical, what was critical was if there was anyone who could resist a hundred Crimson Netherworld.

“This King can’t resist it.”

Shi Xiaobai answered.

“Oh.”

Xiao Xiao coldly responded. It was an answer that was within her expectations.

“But This King can dodge them all.”

Shi Xiaobai spoke once again with a tone filled with confidence.

Xiao Xiao was stunned as she said in amusement, “Are you saying you can dodge a hundred Crimson Netherworld?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said as though it was a matter of fact, “Of course, there is no attack in this world that This King’s Crab Steps can’t dodge in one step. If there is one, then two steps would do.”

“Girl, you haven’t answered This King. Are you able to shoot another hundred arrows?”

Upon sensing the seriousness and confidence in Shi Xiaobai’s words, Xiao Xiao suddenly recalled that before she came, this person, the three-man team and WindWithoutTrace were in the same area. Logically speaking, with him saying ‘everyone present is a spicy chicken’ during the pre-battle declaration, the four people would have skinned him alive, but he had yet to be eliminated up to now.

Could it be...

An inexplicable hint of anticipation rose up in Xiao Xiao’s heart. She summoned her crystal arrow once again and softly said, “I will shoot out as many arrows as you can dodge, I hope...you would last longer.”

As she spoke, Xiao Xiao had already strung her arrow and pulled the bowstring open.

Then, let her have a tiny bit of anticipation.

Chapter 89: To Be Killed To The Ends Of Time

Xiao Xiao pulled her bow open as she aimed at Shi Xiaobai. With that, Shi Xiaobai began moving. Although he was not making any significant moves, he was doing repeated side-hops at an extremely fast speed. The illusory figures that appeared as he jumped was dazzling.

Compared to the three-man team, Shi Xiaobai did not choose to remain motionless. Instead, he chose to repeatedly jump from side to side in order to confuse Xiao Xiao. It was meant to reduce her shooting accuracy because Xiao Xiao's "Crimson Netherworld" very clearly gave him a great deal of pressure.

Shi Xiaobai could easily react and dodge with an explosive move at the instant DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld attacked with his dual blade offensive skills or if it was GunfireInTheWorld with his Tsunami Scatter Shot. However, not only was "Crimson Netherworld" powerful, but it was also many times faster than bullets. Most important of all, the arrow contained a terrifying bloody aura. Once it locked on its target, it would cause apprehension in the target's heart, temporarily putting the target in a trance.

The reason why "Crimson Netherworld" was an A Class offensive skill was because it was no simple arrow. It could make a person have a terrifying illusion of falling into the netherworld!

Although Shi Xiaobai did not understand the battle

characteristics of “Crimson Netherworld”, his intuition told him that he had to move. This intuition appeared very often when he faced opponents at the level of Thomas. There was still a huge gap between Xiao Xiao’s strength and Thomas’, but her “Crimson Netherworld” exuded a threatening aura that rivaled Thomas’ “Wraith Bullet”.

As such, Shi Xiaobai moved. He pushed himself to his limits right from the beginning of the battle!

What kind of scene would it be like with Shi Xiaobai pushing Crab Steps to his fullest extent?

In the audience’s eyes, Shi Xiaobai had transformed into a series of indiscernible figures. The high frequency side hops and the fake moves from the dynamic change in speed startled everyone.

And in Xiao Xiao’s eyes, this funny crab-like figure that also seemed extremely elegant made her hesitate. She paused, unsure of when to shoot the arrow.

“So this is the confidence that makes you claim that you can dodge a hundred arrows.”

At this moment, Xiao Xiao smiled. It was a smile that was a result of joy that came from deep within her heart. This figure that made her unable to aim precisely and even exerted great pressure on her, wasn’t it the worthy opponent she had always been searching for?

“I’m greatly looking forward to the number of arrows you can dodge.”

At that moment, Xiao Xiao knew that it would be very difficult to hit Shi Xiaobai, but she did not believe that Shi Xiaobai could dodge all her arrows. It was predicated in her confidence that she would improve. Furthermore, it would improve rapidly in this battle before she completely flung Shi Xiaobai behind. This was a bedrock confidence in herself, one that had never wavered!

Xiao Xiao released her fingers as “Crimson Netherworld” shot out suddenly. Amidst the sounds of explosions, dust was blasted into the sky.

Moments later, as the dust settled, the figure was still jumping around as though nothing had happened. The arrow had missed its target losing its meaning.

But so what?

Xiao Xiao quickly shot out another arrow and it still possessed as much power as before, but it still missed!

The smile on Xiao Xiao’s lips became more pronounced. Two arrows that missed did not discourage her at all. On the contrary, it made the fighting spirit in her eyes and anticipation in her heart burn even more intensely. It was so intense that she nearly could not stop herself from laughing out.

This guy was the opponent she had been looking for!

In that case, everything would no longer be as simple as before.

What she needed to do was to constantly shoot her arrows. By forcing herself to shoot at a faster rate, she would have to fully concentrate in order to catch a glimpse of him, honing her accuracy in the process. She needed to improve herself with every arrow that missed until she was able to hit him!

However, she wished the arrow that ended the battle would come later. She wished that this guy could also constantly improve in battle, allowing her to progress longer in battle. This way, the gap she would open up would extend further.

“Improve, keep running. Do not let me catch you easily. Because at the moment you get pierced by my arrow, I will find it a great pity, a great, great pity!”

While having this thought in mind, Xiao Xiao could sense the pressure Shi Xiaobai exerted on her. She could feel how the pressure was giving her motivation and improving her. She even began to worry over the moment the battle ended.

When a true opponent was encountered, every shot of the arrow could bring with it a little bit of progress. Every attempt at aiming could enhance a tiny bit of her perception. This feeling was excellent, it was so excellent that Xiao Xiao could not bear to surpass him.

But it was a pity that she was destined to surpass this youth that used Crab Steps. Regardless of how refined his Crab Steps were, regardless of how many arrows he dodged, she would very quickly get adapted to it. Learning, progressing and eventually surpassing.

Because this was her life, a life of a genius born into this world.

...

“Improve, keep running, don’t let This King fling you far behind. Because at the moment you can’t exert the slightest pressure on This King, This King will find it a great pity, a great, great pity!”

Shi Xiaobai smiled. He could sense how each shot from Xiao Xiao was stronger than the previous one. It exerted more and more pressure on him. This feeling excited him greatly because he seemed to make contact with the reality of becoming strong under this constantly increasing pressure.

Every time he dodged her arrow, his Crab Steps would improve a tiny bit. Every time he confused her eyes that were ever-sharpening, his fake moves would become even more natural.

It was a feeling that could not be explained. It was as though the arrow-shooting girl had a same rhythm as he had. They were in a race on the same path, while he was attempting to fling her far behind, while she attempted to chase up to him. However, their speeds were no different. As a result, they were constantly pushing themselves to the limit, allowing them to run even faster. However, the speed at which they improved themselves was

similar. It resulted in no one being able to overtake the other.

They maintained a constant distance on the same path. As their improvements collided, they formed a delicate balance.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai was overjoyed. This was because his Crab Steps might be able to cultivate to the Dominating Refinement realm. He believed that meeting such a girl was truly a great thing.

At that moment, Xiao Xiao beamed with her eyes. This was because her Crimson Netherworld was very likely to cultivate to the Exemplary Mastery realm. She believed that meeting this guy was an extremely good thing.

...

Red beams flashed through the jungle as incessant explosions rang. The land was dotted with large craters as trees constantly toppled. It looked as though doomsday had arrived.

And in the foreground of this doomsday, there was a young man jumping around, issuing hearty laughs from time to time.

There was also a girl who held a crystal bow in hand. The wind blew up her hair, adding to her fairy-like beauty. She produced a chime-like laughter from time to time.

They were in an intense battle but they appeared like they were

enjoying a pleasant exchange. Their laughs that came from the bottom of their hearts contrasted with the explosions as the two different sounds teetered. It made what looked like a completely desolate scene have an inexplicable sense of beauty.

This scene was truly amazing and beautiful.

The audience was already dumbfounded.

“Is this still a battle? Why do I feel like it is a lovers’ fight?” A member of the audience expressed his feelings.

“You aren’t the only one thinking that.” Another member of the audience echoed his sentiments.

The audience began to laugh kindly.

Such an intense battle had made the two of them produce sentiments that seemed to border on love. From the joy that seemed to come from the bottom of their hearts, it made people feel like this battle would last to the end of time.

Maybe the end of time was overly exaggerated, but everyone present had no doubt that this battle would continue on for a very long period of time.

Suddenly, keen-eyed members of the audience saw a strange shadow at the borders of the screen.

“Be careful!”

Numerous members of the audience spontaneously shouted out those two words!

However, the person the two words were meant for was currently in another world. There was no way to hear their voices. Furthermore, the person was immersed in an intense battle, probably completely in a trance-like state.

Indeed, Xiao Xiao did not hear the warnings from the audience, nor did she sense a figure that had suddenly appeared behind her, much less realize that a cold spear was stabbing right at her waist!

Xiao Xiao was indulging in her long-awaited battle.

By the time she was alerted to the danger, the cold spear had pierced through her abdomen!

Chapter 90: If You Can Do It Then You Should Go Up And Do It

The cold spear pierced through Xiao Xiao's abdomen, spewing a scarlet splash of liquid that resembled a blood lotus. Time seemed to freeze at that very moment.

“Princess Xiao Xiao!”

The audience stared with widened eyes as they gasped.

As they looked carefully, they were taken aback when they realize that the person who had sneakily attacked from behind was WindWithoutTrace!

At this moment, WindWithoutTrace's eyes were red. His expression was ferocious and he looked like a devil!

“Die.”

A cold, grim voice spat out from WindWithoutTrace's mouth, sending chills down people's spine.

Why did WindWithoutTrace suddenly sneakily attack Princess Xiao Xiao who had saved him? Was he pretending to be unconscious?

Questions filled everyone's minds, but they did not have any time to think because Xiao Xiao's situation was already critical!

The cold spear would only take at most another second to completely penetrate her frail body!

In this extremely dangerous moment, Xiao Xiao was exceptionally calm. She hurriedly stretched out her right hand to grip the spear tip. As she forcefully pushed the spear backwards, she used Wind Walk to surge forward, allowing her to escape in an instant.

Xiao Xiao spat out a mouthful of blood as she began to feel lucky. She hated pain since she was young; hence, before entering the virtual world, she had instructed the professional technicians to reduce the pain levels to less than 10%. As a result, she only felt a fleeting moment of pain that was like a slight prick when her abdomen was pierced. This allowed her to maintain her consciousness.

However, after running about two steps, Xiao Xiao felt her body turn heavy and her limbs go soft. Only then did she realize that injuries in this extremely realistic virtual world would affect her bodily functions. Having suffered a grievous injury to her abdomen, her body could no longer support her usage of Wind Walk.

Xiao Xiao turned anxious as she heard the air crack, as though there was a sonic boom. She hurriedly turned her head over to see a cold spear tip attacking her. It was just inches away from her throat!

Even in a virtual world, the feeling of an impending death was extremely realistic, it was so realistic that Xiao Xiao unconsciously closed her eyes at that very moment.

In the darkness, she suddenly felt a pair of warm hands grab her waist tightly as her body fell into an alien embrace. Immediately following that, she lost her sense of weight and experienced a centrifugal force. A howling wind blasted across her face as she opened her eyes in astonishment. She looked up to see a clown mask that looked somewhat funny.

At that critical juncture, Shi Xiaobai had swept up Xiao Xiao, helping her to dodge that fatal strike!

“Hurry up and use your Energy Pearl.”

Shi Xiaobai’s reminder echoed in her ears before Xiao Xiao came round to. She immediately used her Energy Pearl, causing a pale red light to shroud her abdomen wound. The wound healed at a speed visible to the naked eye.

“Die!”

With bloodshot eyes, WindWithoutTrace, who appeared as though he had been possessed by the devil, charged over in a crazy manner. He stabbed straight at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai immediately jumped away with Xiao Xiao in his

arms. Noticing how WindWithoutTrace did not have any intention to stop his pursuit, he hurriedly began using Crab Steps to retreat. Although he was carrying someone, his Crab Steps was still a little faster than WindWithoutTrace's Wind Walk. Gradually, he opened up a gap between him and WindWithoutTrace.

Only then did Xiao Xiao heave a sigh of relief. As she relaxed, she suddenly felt a tension around her chest. When she lowered her head, her face immediately blushed.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was carrying her like he was carrying a princess. One hand was beneath her legs, propping them up, while the other hand was underneath her armpit. Her chest was tightly adhered to his.

Although this was a virtual world, the close contact felt extremely realistic in the immersive environment. Xiao Xiao, who had yet to date, had never experienced such a situation. She could forget how intimate the princess carry was, but what sort of breast-attacking wandering hands were those?

Despite understanding the extenuating circumstances and knowing how it was likely unintentional on Shi Xiaobai's part, or how everything was fake, Xiao Xiao could not resist the embarrassment she felt. Immediately, she coldly said, "Let me go!"

"Keep quiet if you want to live."

Shi Xiaobai's tone sounded irritated. He had lost the opportunity to have his Crab Steps break through to the Dominating

Refinement realm, so he was feeling absolutely terrible.

Upon hearing this, Xiao Xiao turned furious as she struggled in Shi Xiaobai's embrace. However, she went limp after struggling for a moment or two. The Energy Pearl required a period of time for it to fully heal her, so she was still in an extremely weak state. Xiao Xiao could not help but silently curse herself for designing the Energy Pearl to have a delayed recovery period in order to ensure the game's balance.

Wouldn't having instant recovery be great?

"So what if I die!? Hurry up and let me go!"

Xiao Xiao felt aggrieved.

What was so frightening about dying in a virtual world? A sex pervert like you was most frightening, do you get that?

"If you were to die, what will This King do?" Shi Xiaobai was angered.

If Xiao Xiao were to die, how was he to cultivate his Crab Steps?

"Ah?" Xiao Xiao was dumbfounded.

"This King needs you."

If he did not need Xiao Xiao to help cultivate his Crab Steps, he would not have gone through such great efforts to save her. After all, this was a virtual world. Death just meant leaving the game.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and tightened his embrace. WindWithoutTrace was still incessantly chasing after him, so he did not dare relax. He sped up once again.

When Xiao Xiao heard Shi Xiaobai's words, she suddenly recalled the feeling they previously shared as mutual opponents. As her heart softened, she whispered, "Piggyback me, we shall counterattack."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned before he understood what Xiao Xiao meant. As he turned his head to see that WindWithoutTrace was still a distance away, he gritted his teeth and hurriedly put down Xiao Xiao. He bent down and roughly piggybacked Xiao Xiao. He pushed Xiao Xiao's buttocks up from below in order to adjust his body before he began running ahead again.

"You!"

Having her buttocks attacked, Xiao Xiao was close to tears.

This rascal was definitely doing it on purpose! He was nothing but a pervert!

Xiao Xiao took a deep breath to force herself to calm down. She summoned her crystal bow and made a half turn with her body.

She immediately saw WindWithoutTrace, whose hair was disheveled and eyes bloodshot, crazily pursuing them.

“It’s all WindWithoutTrace’s fault!”

Xiao Xiao immediately found a target to vent her anger. If not for WindWithoutTrace’s sudden sneak attack, would she have been in such a... Hmph, if this battle could carry on, she swore to riddle the sex pervert with holes that made him look like a beehive.

“Crimson Netherworld!”

This arrow of Xiao Xiao’s contained her rage. Although she was being piggybacked by Shi Xiaobai, resulting in tremors and an awkward position, she was still able to shoot out an arrow at her usual standard.

This arrow had to kill WindWithoutTrace!

“Boom!”

The red beam shot out before an explosive blast happened. As dust billowed, a figure dashed out once again like a fierce wolf!

“Oh?”

Xiao Xiao was stunned. Why did WindWithoutTrace appear unhurt despite her shooting an arrow?

“Can you do it?”

Upon noticing the situation, Shi Xiaobai could not help but question her.

“Hmph!”

Xiao Xiao coldly grunted before she consecutively shot out another three “Crimson Netherworld” in a fit of rage.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

The sound of explosions resounded once again. This time Xiao Xiao realized why “Crimson Netherworld” did not manage to kill WindWithoutTrace. Every time her arrow was about to hit its target, it would collide into a black barrier that suddenly appeared. The black barrier only lasted for a moment, but it perfectly resisted Crimson Netherworld. WindWithoutTrace remained unharmed underneath the protection of the black barrier!

What was the deal with the barrier?

Only a Psionic Soul Realm warrior could perfectly block her Crimson Netherworld, so with WindWithoutTrace’s strength, it was impossible for him to produce such a powerful barrier!

“Hey, can you really do it?”

Shi Xiaobai was running with his fastest speed while piggybacking Xiao Xiao, so he was gradually feeling tired. Noticing how WindWithoutTrace was still unharmed despite her shooting four arrows, he could not help but question her.

Xiao Xiao's expression changed. The black barrier could have very well entered the domain of the Psionic Soul Realm, so she truly had no means of shattering it. However, she immediately felt wronged when she heard Shi Xiaobai's questioning.

What evil have I committed to be bullied by you in this manner?

Xiao Xiao retorted, "If you can do it then you should go up and do it!"

If you can't do it then don't even criticize!

"Okay."

Shi Xiaobai calmly responded. He came to an abrupt stop and let Xiao Xiao down before he turned to face WindWithoutTrace, who was desperately pursuing them.

Xiao Xiao was stunned, unsure of what Shi Xiaobai's intentions were.

"This King shall go ahead."

Shi Xiaobai pulled out the short knife DualBladesToTraverseTheWorld had lent him from his waist as he stepped forward to block Xiao Xiao behind him.

He raised his short knife and charged straight at WindWithoutTrace!

Chapter 91: Terrifying Knife Strike

Although the audience was stunned by Xiao Xiao's injury due to WindWithoutTrace's sudden sneak attack, they did not feel a sense of urgency. After all, everything that happened was just a virtual competition.

Despite the fact that it was contemptible for WindWithoutTrace to launch a sneak attack by faking unconsciousness, he had not violated any of the competition's rules. Furthermore, even if he successfully killed Princess Xiao Xiao, it was just the completing the reduction of a life bar to zero in a virtual game.

As such, the audience was not truly anxious over Princess Xiao Xiao's injury in the virtual world.

However, the experienced Biscuit could not sit still. After WindWithoutTrace launched his sneak attack, Biscuit had left the commentator stands.

Why was WindWithoutTrace still not out of the virtual world yet?

He had clearly instructed the staff to inform WindWithoutTrace's branch head to quickly wake WindWithoutTrace up from his virtual immersion!

Biscuit sensed that something wasn't right. He found the staff member he had previously instructed.

Upon seeing Biscuit's solemn expression, the staff member realized the gravity of the situation. Quickly, he dialed up the branch head.

Moments later, the staff member told Biscuit, "They say that... WindWithoutTrace can't be awakened!"

Biscuit's pupils constricted the moment he heard that as a wry smile suffused across his lips. He sighed and said, "WindWithoutTrace's consciousness is already controlled by the Bishop of Virtuality."

Biscuit blamed himself. If he had thought of this possibility earlier on, it might not have come to this.

In the form of a virus black cocoon, the Bishop of Virtuality's consciousness had invaded the virtual world where Xiao Xiao and company were in. At the moment the virus black cocoon was shattered, the Bishop of Virtuality's consciousness had sunk into WindWithoutTrace's game avatar, allowing him to completely repress WindWithoutTrace's consciousness.

At this moment, although WindWithoutTrace had yet to be brainwashed to becoming a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality, his game avatar was completely under the Bishop of Virtuality's control. Furthermore, with his consciousness repressed, there was no way to successfully wake him up in reality.

If they could not kill WindWithoutTrace's game avatar and chase

the Bishop of Virtuality's consciousness away, WindWithoutTrace's consciousness would never return to reality, effectively turning him to a vegetable.

However, Biscuit was at a loss as to what to do. He could only silently pray that IChooseDogLeading and the severely injured Princess Xiao Xiao could kill WindWithoutTrace in the virtual world, but Biscuit knew it was nearly impossible. This was because once the Bishop of Virtuality proceeded with his consciousness control, he would produce a computer bug-like barrier that protected the game avatar's safety. The barrier was many times harder than the black cocoon, so the two Psionic Mortal Realm kids had no way to crack it!

Biscuit returned to the commentator stands with a heavy heart. He happened to see Shi Xiaobai put Xiao Xiao down and the scene of him rushing at WindWithoutTrace with a short knife in hand. He immediately drew a gasp and turned extremely nervous.

...

Xiao Xiao's eyes flickered with a strange glow as it landed on Shi Xiaobai's back that was moving away from her. Although this person was a sex pervert, he was still rather courageous and reliable at crucial points in time.

However, Xiao Xiao immediately recalled the black barrier that perfectly blocked her four Crimson Netherworld arrows, so she immediately shouted to alert him, "Be careful of his barrier!"

The audience's hearts were already in their mouths as a black shield suddenly appeared to engulf WindWithoutTrace's body. They knew this much better than Xiao Xiao because the director had purposely replayed the scenes from before in slow motion. After watching it again, they could not help but curse out loud.

This f*cking barrier was too hard!

When Xiao Xiao's Crimson Netherworld shot at the black barrier, it did not even produce the slightest tremor. It was exactly like how GunfireInTheWorld's bullets collided with the virus black cocoon. The offense and defense between the two media were completely on two different levels!

And at this moment, the knife-wielding Shi Xiaobai was crashing head on with the spear-wielding WindWithoutTrace. Even though they were supporting Shi Xiaobai in their hearts, they were not optimistic. After all, if the defense could not be broken, victory was destined to be unobtainable.

Two figures approached each other at extremely fast speeds, and in seconds they clashed. It was not a beautiful chance encounter but a brutal duel. Both of them were brave warriors and at this moment, the person who clinched victory was stronger!

When the gap reduced to about a meter, WindWithoutTrace suddenly stabbed out with his spear!

Shi Xiaobai reacted extremely quickly. With a switch in his footsteps, he jumped laterally once, allowing Crab Phantom Image

to be ingeniously showcased. He had managed to dodge the spear at that hair-raising moment!

Simultaneously, the short knife stabbed straight out in a blink of an eye!

The black barrier also suddenly appeared at that instant, enveloping WindWithoutTrace's body completely in a bid to block off the short knife!

“Pu!”

A nearly inaudible sound was barely heard as the short knife seemed to stab into a calm water surface when it met the black barrier. It produced a concentric ripple as it stabbed straight in. The short knife had instantly immersed itself into the black shield!

As if time had frozen at that very moment, everyone's breathing came to a halt.

“Contestant ‘WindWithoutTrace’ eliminated!”

The system's mechanic voice resounded less than a second after the short knife stabbed into the black barrier. It announced WindWithoutTrace's death in the virtual world.

Simultaneously, the black barrier shattered. Shi Xiaobai had used the short knife in his hand to stab into WindWithoutTrace's left chest. It had pierced right through WindWithoutTrace's heart!

“Dea...Dead!? WindWithoutTrace was instantly..killed?”

Biscuit struggled to swallow a mouthful of saliva as he found it difficult to believe that what had happened was real.

Xiao Xiao was also stunned. The black barrier that had perfectly blocked four of her Crimson Netherworld arrows could not even last a second under the short knife! Who was this pervert?

The audience was also dumbfounded. They reacted moments later as the entire viewing hall erupted into chaos.

“Holy shit, an insta-kill. That’s so, so, so, so cool!”

“Am I dreaming? Why is the defensive shield that Princess Xiao Xiao was completely helpless against appear as though it was made out of paper?”

“God DogLeading is magnificent! I went from a bystander to a complete fan of God DogLeading. Furthermore, I have become a brainless fan!”

“That strike is indeed terrifying. Back when God DogLeading stabbed into the black cocoon like he was stabbing into water, I thought the black cocoon had gone easy. Who knew that God DogLeading is truly remarkable. Just with that one knife, God DogLeading has been conferred the title of god in my heart!”

“I agree. This strike is terrifying, so truly terrifying.”

“Aiyah, I really want to know what blade technique that strike belongs to.”

“That’s right, what sort of strike was that?”

“Does any knowledgeable person know what strike it is?”

...

“What sort of strike is this!?”

A cold but furious voice thundered from the screen, giving the audience a shock. They spontaneously fell silent.

From whom did this voice come from?

On the screen, a black billow of smoke suddenly rose up from WindWithoutTrace’s corpse. The black smoke coagulated instantly, transforming into a figure that floated in mid air.

The person was completely wrapped in a cassock, obscuring his entire body. There was even no way to tell if the figure was man or woman.

“Church of Virtuality’s Arch-Cardinal!” Biscuit exclaimed in

horror, informing everyone the identity of the cassocked figure.

The Church of Virtuality only had one leader, the Bishop of Virtuality. And beneath the Bishop of Virtuality were four Arch-Cardinals. These four Arch-Cardinals only had one above them and thousands under them in the Church of Virtuality.

Why did the Arch-Cardinal suddenly appear? And how did he appear?

“What sort of strike is this!?”

The cold voice resounded once again from the Arch-Cardinal’s mouth. It brought with it pent-up anger and an irrepressible disbelief.

The strike he was asking about was naturally the knife strike Shi Xiaobai had used.

This was very likely to be an unspoken secret, but he had to ask. He did not ask to pursue an answer, but deliberately asked to vent the doubts in his heart.

“This strike....”

Shi Xiaobai lowered his voice as though he was about to give the answer almost immediately.

This strike naturally had its name and it was not a secret that needed concealing.

Everyone pricked up their ears. Even the aloof Xiao Xiao was extremely curious.

This powerful and inconceivable strike that seemed to run counter to all logic. What sort of strike was this?

“This strike’s name is...”

Chapter 92: The Benevolent Butcher

“I don’t want to see it, I don’t want to see it. Brother, I don’t want to see it...”

A five or six-year-old boy with a fair complexion and welling tears hid behind a young man with black hair. He peeked his head out to look at a tied, white pig lying above a wooden platform not far away. Beside it stood a burly middle-aged man. As the boy’s tiny mouth shriveled, his tiny head shook like a rattle.

The young boy was both sad and afraid. Although the white pig wasn’t considered cute, it appeared very pitiful to be slaughtered under a butcher’s knife. Furthermore, not only did his father want to kill it, but his father had also insisted on him witnessing the process. His father was too vile.

“Dad, Xiaobai is still young. Why don’t we wait till he is older?”

The black-haired youth rubbed the small boy’s head. His eyes were soft and loving.

The burly man stared at the little boy and said with a straight face, “We cannot wait. Our Shi family has slaughtered pigs for generations. Back when I was three years old, I watched your grandfather kill three large boars. You were only four when you began learning how to slaughter pigs. This little bastard is already five years old this year, but he hasn’t even seen a pig-slaughtering process before!”

The black-haired youth's face turned stiff as he said softly, "Xiaobai is a bit more timid. Besides...The Shi family trade can just be inherited by me. As for Xiaobai, let him choose his own life, alright?"

The burly man fell silent for a moment after hearing this. Finally, he broke his silence with a sigh as he said, "I can't wrench my heart to let an outstanding Tsinghua University graduate become a pig-slaughtering butcher. You..."

"I'm fine."

The black-haired youth smiled gently like the warm spring breeze in March. "So what about a butcher? A butcher's child can still become an outstanding student! Although we kill pigs, we have never harmed anyone. Even if we are butchers, we are benevolent butchers. Most importantly, Xiaobai doesn't like killing pigs. We should let him do what he likes."

The burly man opened his mouth but was unsure of his words. His eyes turned soft but gloomy as his cleaver-holding hand trembled slightly.

"I like killing pigs!"

Suddenly, a crisp voice shouted out. The boy walked out from behind the youth. As he used his hands to wipe the tears from his eyes, he said with a childlike voice, "I don't want Brother to become a butcher...I like killing pigs. I...I will be the butcher!"

The black-haired youth and the burly man was stunned. The expression on the boy's pink face was extremely serious, so serious that it made it hard for people to believe that he was a five-year-old child.

But the boy's face suddenly cringed as he shriveled his mouth, "But the big white pig will be in pain, can you not kill it?"

The burly man squatted down and said gently, "Don't worry, Daddy will not make it feel any pain."

The boy was stunned before he asked, "It won't...be in pain?"

The burly man laughed heartily and patted himself on the chest. "Our Shi family does not have ruthless butchers. Your Grandpa always says that although we kill pigs, we can never forget how to be benevolent. Never letting the white pig depart in pain is a principle we must never violate."

The boy opened his mouth and lowered his head. His eyes were filled with sadness. "But...the big white pig...it will still die, right?"

The burly man was stupefied before he let out a bitter smile. No matter how benevolent a butcher was, he was still a butcher. With a cleave of the knife, regardless of how peaceful its life was robbed away from it, it was still a death that deserved sadness.

The black-haired youth patted the burly man on his shoulder and whispered, "Dad, don't force Xiaobai any further. I know you do

not wish the Shi family trade to end in your hands. I know you do not wish to let down Grandpa who is in heaven...Dad, I understand, so I will shoulder this responsibility. For me, I don't really like those complex cities. I like the air here, I like this village that has you and Xiaobai."

The burly man patted the slender hands resting on his shoulder and said gently, "Your hands were naturally born to hold a pen. How can I make you hold a knife? Forget it, forget it. The benevolent butcher. It's already enough. It's time to end this joke with me, the joke only serves to fool ourselves. If I were to meet your Grandpa in the future and get scolded, I will just scrunch up my face and suffer the beating. Haha."

The burly man's laughter was bold and unforced. The youth widened the corners of his mouth, but he could not laugh.

The boy looked up to take a glance at the youth before he turned to glance at the burly man. Suddenly, he let go of his hands that were tugging on the youth's trousers. He ran up to the wooden platform and stared at the large white pig tied there. He said loudly, "I want to see the pig being killed. I...I'm not scared!"

His shiny black eyes were obviously welling with tears, and the way he bit his lower lips looked miserable and pitiful, but his resolute expression was moving.

The burly man's eyes turned slightly moist as he walked forward. As he walked, he said, "A long, long time ago, our Shi family ancestors pursued the ability to slice a throat in one strike. However, that would result in the pig dying in agony. So after

countless years of improvement, our Shi family has now chosen—piercing of the heart!”

The burly man approached the large white pig and pointed to the pig’s left chest. He said, “This is where the big white pig’s heart is. However, a pig’s fat is very thick, so it is rather difficult to stab straight into the heart. If you aren’t careful, you will instead bring more pain to the large white pig.”

“However, this is a responsibility we as men from the Shi family have to shoulder.” This knife has to be accurate and without hesitation or mercy. It cannot be benevolent, because as butchers, it is the only remaining benevolence we have!”

The moment the burly man finished saying that, he suddenly lifted his hand and cleaved downwards. Instantly, he stabbed right into the white pig’s left chest.

“Oink!”

The large white pig whimpered once with a twitch before it closed its eyes immediately and stopped moving. There was no time for the fresh life to even struggle before it died completely.

The strike was fast and sudden. It was so fast that the boy could not close his already widened eyes in time.

“Wa!”

The boy was dumbfounded for a moment before he pounced into the youth's embrace with a yelp. He then burst into tears.

The burly man sighed deeply.

Didn't he too cry in such a heartbreaking manner so many years ago?

The youth hugged the boy tightly, his eyes sorry for the boy.

"After I graduate next year, I will return to slaughter pigs."

"This year, when we visit the tombs, I will tell your Grandpa that we will not slaughter pigs in the future."

Despite simultaneously saying words that had different meanings, what the two people said were both equally meaningful.

...

...

In a black cupboard, a black-haired youth and a young boy were huddled together. The young boy was trembling as the black-haired youth constantly stroked the boy's back.

"Don't worry. Daddy will be fine. Those bad guys...someone will

take care of them.”

The youth appeared as though he was holding back something. It made his voice tremble slightly.

The boy’s eyes lit up as he hurriedly said, “Hero... Brother, heroes will finish the bad guys, right?”

The youth was slightly surprised as he gave a humorless laugh. He forced an affirmative tone and said, “Of course, those heroes Xiaobai see on TV, they are the ones dedicated to finishing bad guys. Heroes will definitely save everyone. Daddy will definitely be fine.”

“Yea!”

The boy nodded his head sharply as his trembling body gradually calmed down.

At this moment, the sound of footsteps was suddenly heard from outside the house.

The youth held his breath as he hurriedly gestured a “Shh” to the boy. He used a nearly inaudible voice to say, “Ke..ep..qui..et.”

The boy nodded and buried his tiny head into the youth’s chest. His body began shivering again.

Suddenly, a hoarse but relentless voice was heard coming from outside the house. It came through the windows, across the cracks in the cupboard, straight into the youth and boy's ears.

“You bunch of idiots. You can't even get rid of a knife-holding butcher with a gun? A rusty pig slaughtering knife has killed two people. You even have the f*cking nerve to call yourselves terrorists?”

Following that, a stuttering male voice was heard.

“That butcher...was quite powerful...”

In the cupboard, the youth and young boy looked at each other in the dark when they heard this. Both of them revealed a pleased smile.

The hoarse voice was heard once again. “Even if he is powerful, can he be more powerful than a gun? All of you were just too stupid.”

The stuttering voice no longer stuttered and began to speak unusually smooth, “Yes, yes, yes. Our Boss is awesome as usual. You killed the butcher in one shot!”

Upon hearing this, the youth's eyes immediately glazed over.

The young boy also reacted moments later with a yelp.

The youth was alarmed as he hurriedly covered the boy's mouth. His other hand tightly embraced the young boy as he whispered, "Shh, quiet."

However, everything was too late. The two voices outside the house was heard once again.

"Oh? Is there someone in this house?"

"Boss, I heard it too."

"Looks like someone slipped through the cracks. Perfect, I happen to not have vented all my pent-up anger. Go, let's kill!"

The footsteps gradually came from outside the house through the main door. Despite being separated by the cupboard door and the tightly shut main door, it was still extremely audible.

A look of despair flashed in the youth's eyes.

But immediately, it ignited a glimmer of hope.

He lowered his head and kissed the young boy on his forehead. He spoke extremely quickly, but in a solemn tone, "Xiaobai, remember this. You are a King of kings. You shall rule the world of justice and evil. There will be a day when the Heretic King's powers will awaken in you. You will banish all the evil in the

world. You will save the world, because you are the King of this world. So, you must live on. Live on well, this world needs you.”

After the youth said those words, he suddenly stretched out his hand and hit the young boy on the neck. Sensing the stiff body in his embrace turn soft, the youth gave a gentle smile, one just like a blooming daisy in the winter.

As he walked out of the cupboard, he picked up a rusty pig slaughtering knife and charged out the door.

Moments later, numerous gunshots and invectives resounded in the world outside the window. The din continued for a moment before it reduced to the harshest silence.

And in the world of that tiny compartment, a tiny life slept peacefully.

...

...

In the virtual world, everyone was waiting for the strike's name. Be it the audience, the commentators, Princess Xiao Xiao or the Arch-Cardinal that had suddenly appeared, all of them pricked up their ears. What sort of strike was it for it to be able to easily penetrate the virus black cocoon and the darkness barrier, resulting in WindWithoutTrace's instant death?

“This strike’s name is...”

Shi Xiaobai opened his mouth as two tears streamed down his cheeks.

“It’s called...It’s called...”

He reached out his hand to wipe his eyes, but there was no end to his tears. His throat felt choked as though he was about to suffocate.

Two voices constantly resounded in his mind.

“Xiaobai is still young.”

“Xiaobai is a bit more timid.”

“Dad, don’t force Xiaobai any further.”

“For me, I don’t really like those complex cities. I like the air here, I like this village that has you and Xiaobai.”

“After I graduate next year, I will return to slaughter pigs.”

“So, you must live on. Live on well, this world needs you.”

...

“The benevolent butcher. It’s already enough. It’s time to end this joke with me, the joke only serves to fool ourselves.”

“However, this is a responsibility we as men from the Shi family have to shoulder.”

“This year, when we visit the tombs, I will tell your Grandpa that we will not slaughter pigs in the future.”

...

Shi Xiaobai raised his short knife and looked up into the sky, allowing his tears to fall to the ground. He used the gentlest voice to say to the world.

“This knife strike is called—Pig Slaughtering Knife!”

Chapter 93: Time Is A Pig Slaughtering Knife

The strong contrast between Shi Xiaobai's flowing tears and the "Pig Slaughtering Knife" he said left people at a loss.

The strike that had easily pierced through the virus black cocoon and the Barrier of Darkness, instantly killing WindWithoutTrace should have had a cool and ostentatious name to it, but why did it have such a simple and vulgar name, "Pig Slaughtering Knife"?

The Arch-Cardinal angrily shouted, "You say this strike is called Pig Slaughtering Knife? Are you kidding me?"

Shi Xiaobai wiped the corners of his moist eyes and gradually calmed down. As he looked at the strange floating person dressed in a cassock, he curled his mouth and said, "Since you don't even know what the Pig Slaughtering Knife is, you must be a foolish mortal. You must have never seen how pigs are slaughtered."

Not only did Shi Xiaobai's look of contempt enrage the Arch-Cardinal, but it also rendered the audience speechless. Indeed, few of them had seen the slaughtering process of pigs, but who the f*ck did not know what it was like?

If the Pig Slaughtering Knife was so awesome, would there still be humble butchers in this world?

"Just the Pig Slaughtering Knife alone can't penetrate the virus

black cocoon and the Barrier of Darkness. Since you aren't willing to speak the truth, don't blame me for being heartless." The Arch-Cardinal laughed coldly. He had paid a certain price to forcefully intrude into this virtual world mainly to vent his anger. WindWithoutTrace should have been brainwashed into a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality, increasing his year-end evaluation numbers, but it had been completely ruined by this youth. However, asking the name of the strike was just a curiosity of his. Since the youth was unwilling to speak the truth, then he did not need to speak further.

The Arch-Cardinal secretly gathered his powers as he readied his attack.

However, what Shi Xiaobai said next stunned him completely.

"Tch, that hole-filled black cocoon and that constantly flickering barrier, how can it withstand This King's Pig Slaughtering Knife?"

Shi Xiaobai had been left quite speechless all this while. The black cocoon was clearly filled with tiny holes, yet the three-man team failed to crack it. The black barrier was constantly flickering, yet it remained impregnable under Xiao Xiao's four arrows. And all he did was stab into the black cocoon's hole. As for the black barrier, he just pierced into it when it faded. So how could such flawed defenses withstand his Pig Slaughtering Knife?

Everyone was stunned by Shi Xiaobai's words. The black cocoon's surface looked extremely smooth, so where were the holes? That black barrier lasted only temporarily, but when did it constantly flash? Either this rascal was deliberately joking, or his

eyes were problematic.

“The Vision of God!?”

The Arch-Cardinal, Xiao Xiao and Biscuit said the four words in unison.

Biscuit hurriedly explained to the audience, “We all know that humans have six senses. And very few people in the world are blessed by the heavens. The six senses can reach the level reminiscent of a god. We call them the Six Senses of God. As for contestant DogLeading, he possesses the Vision of God that can see through the weaknesses of everything!”

When Biscuit said this, he suddenly fell silent because he did not know how to go on. Although the Vision of God had the ability to see through weaknesses, Shi Xiaobai had mentioned of the cocoon filled with holes or of the barrier that constantly flickered. If that was the case, how many weaknesses did he see? This was already far beyond the scope of the Vision of God. Calling it the King of Gods Sight or Vision of the King of Gods would be more appropriate?

Xiao Xiao clearly also realized this point and was so shocked that she had covered her mouth.

The Arch-Cardinal fell silent for a moment before he sneered, “What a crappy lie.”

Ignoring the fact that it was almost impossible to accomplish what Shi Xiaobai had mentioned with the Vision of God, and even if he could truly see through the black cocoon and the black barrier's weaknesses, the strike that pierced through the weak spot could not be ordinary. Furthermore...

The Arch-Cardinal said coldly, "I can sense the power of time in your knife. How did you do it. How are you able to use the laws of time in this virtual world where superpowers are invalid?"

The Arch-Cardinal raised the biggest question on his mind. As the virus black cocoon and the black barrier were produced using his powers, he could intuitively sense the "aging" of the black cocoon and the black barrier at the instant Shi Xiaobai's knife stabbed into them.

It was a feeling that the power of time had "aged" the defenses, turning them weak. The Arch-Cardinal had previously had the lucky encounter of meeting supreme beings who were able to control the laws of time in the real world, so he believed he wasn't wrong.

If the virus black cocoon had not been "aged" by the knife's power of time, how could it have been shattered by the extremely weak four arrows?

This knife technique that used the laws of time definitely couldn't be a so-called pig slaughtering knife!

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat stunned listening to the Arch-

Cardinal's words. Power of time? His Pig Slaughtering Knife was actually that awesome?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but sigh with mixed emotions, "Time is a pig slaughtering knife."

Upon hearing this, the Arch-Cardinal immediately became enlightened and said loudly, "I see, so this strike's name is called the Knife of Time!"

The Arch-Cardinal believed he found the answer.

Shi Xiaobai gaped, unsure of what to say next. "Time is a pig slaughtering knife" was an old meme from Earth [1](#). He had only nonchalantly mentioned it as a form of ridicule, but who knew... Forget it. They were people from different worlds, so he couldn't be bothered to explain.

"Heh heh, Vision of God and the Knife of Time, but only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. What a cute and pitiful worm. If I were to nip you in the bud, or even convert you into a pious devotee, the great Bishop will definitely give me his greatest favor."

The Arch-Cardinal's voice suddenly sounded somewhat crazy as a terrifying aura emanated from his body.

Shi Xiaobai's heart leaped as if he felt danger approach him. He immediately retreated at a rapid pace and only stopped when he

came beside Xiao Xiao.

Xiao Xiao had already raised her crystal bow and had aimed it at the Arch-Cardinal. She turned her head to glance at Shi Xiaobai and whispered, “Be careful. This strange person in a red cassock might be an existence that exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm. He might be at the Psionic Soul Realm, or even the Psionic Might Realm.”

Shi Xiaobai also raised his knife and nodded. “This guy is very strong.”

Shi Xiaobai sensed an aura much stronger than Thomas from the Arch-Cardinal, but his eyes were burning with fighting spirit.

Xiao Xiao’s eyes was also filled with fighting spirit. Although she did not know where this cassocked strange person came from and she knew that she was no match at all, defeat and death was just a change in digital numbers in the virtual world. There was nothing to worry about.

“Heh heh, are the both of you naive enough to think that there will be no substantive harm in this virtual world?”

Noticing how there was no fear in their eyes except fighting spirit, the Arch-Cardinal’s eyes immediately turned cold as he sneered, “For the Church of Virtuality, the virtual world is reality. Do you understand? In this world, if you get killed by me, your consciousness will be trapped. You will not be able to leave this world for eternity, and in reality, you will become vegetables.”

Upon hearing this, Xiao Xiao's expression immediately changed. Numerous descriptions of the Church of Virtuality flashed past her mind and instantly, she knew that what the Arch-Cardinal said wasn't false.

“Don't hope that someone will wake you up because at the very moment I appeared, this world was completely separated from reality. Of course, I definitely had to pay quite a big price to do it, but compared to kids like you, this price is negligible. So despair and tremble. Both your fates are sealed.”

The Arch-Cardinal frequently “hunted”; hence, he knew that killing a prey was nothing interesting. He found that having his prey lose themselves in despair was most fascinating.

It needed to be said that after he spouted those nonsense, Xiao Xiao truly felt some despair. With her wide breadth of knowledge, she could easily judge if what the Arch-Cardinal said was true.

Xiao Xiao quickly pondered over it, but regardless of how much she racked her brain, she could not think of a way to resolve the situation.

Suddenly, a figure appeared in front of her, shielding her from whatever was coming.

“This King hates fools who keep harping on despair. Foolish mortal, have you ever experienced despair?”

Shi Xiaobai raised his knife and pointed it at the Arch-Cardinal with a disdainful look before he turned to say to Xiao Xiao softly, “Wait for This King to kill a pig before a good battle will be fought with you.”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai strode forward, his back appearing extremely cool.

At that moment, Xiao Xiao’s hand that held her bow trembled slightly.

Chapter 94: Anymore?

Xiao Xiao's hand trembled for a moment as she suddenly recalled a distant memory. There was once a man that stood in front of her when she was in peril. Before the man left, he said to her with a smile, "Wait for me to come back, I want to eat the birthday cake together with Xiao'er."

After that, the man she called father never returned.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's back seemed to merge with the man that never returned.

"Wait...Wait for me!"

Xiao Xiao hurriedly chased up. She...had already sworn never to stay in the spot and wait.

"Why did you follow me?"

Shi Xiaobai cocked his head and glanced at Xiao Xiao curiously.

Ignoring the fact that This King is going to have a melee battle with the cassocked strange person, but as an archer, shouldn't you be kiting¹ from afar, why did you take the initiative to shorten the distance?

"I felt like it, why do you care?"

Xiao Xiao said with a bit of resentment before she suddenly felt odd. Why did the words she had said sound like she was being coquettish?

Pui, I must be too incensed. It's been a while since I met such an annoying guy.

“To be able to flirt, I guess the both of you have not thoroughly understand the cruel reality.”

The Arch-Cardinal became further incensed when he saw how the two of them appeared void of fear. He coldly said, “It looks like the both of you have yet to understand the true meaning of how ‘this world is completely separated from reality’. Pitiful worms, under His Grace Bishop of Virtuality’s favor, this virtual world is an independent reality of its own. In other words, this virtual world is no longer virtual. Do you get it? This place has become a real world!”

Xiao Xiao wanted to refute the term ‘flirt’, but she felt her heart go cold the moment she heard the Arch-Cardinal’s words. She immediately thought of a possibility and hurriedly stretched out her hands and made a grip in an attempt to summon a crystal arrow.

However, her hand remained empty after several attempts. Xiao Xiao immediately exclaimed, “The virtual system has crashed!?”

Upon realizing the possible harsh reality, she hurriedly reached

out to pull at Shi Xiaobai, who was still slowly walking towards the Arch-Cardinal. She said quickly, “Be careful. Death in this world... means we will die in reality!”

“Die? No, no, no. I won’t die that easily.”

The Arch-Cardinal was pleased to see Xiao Xiao finally frown, as he used a cold tone to say, “In this world that has received the favor of His Grace Bishop of the Virtuality, you will experience pain to its fullest extent. You will feel exhaustion and be drained of your stamina. You will experience the same pain and despair as the real world.”

The Arch-Cardinal’s vicious words made Xiao Xiao draw a gasp. She could not help but tighten her grip on her crystal bow.

So this was the true face of the Church of Virtuality. Under the lead of a madman who was able to turn a virtual world into reality, they could wreck wanton destruction in the real world without fear because of the ability to create a near-realistic world.

This group of madmen had no humanity or reason in them. This was because they no longer could tell what was reality or virtuality.

At this moment, an angry voice bellowed.

“Why do you keep putting the words death so easily on your lips? Why can you describe pain in such a deadpan manner? How much

do you really understand death and pain?”

Upon hearing this, Xiao Xiao turned her head in shock. Her eyes met a pair of eyes that were burning with fury and grief.

Once again, Shi Xiaobai took a step forward. This time, Xiao Xiao did not make an attempt to stop him because she knew he would not stop.

“Since death is a reality in this world, you too will die, right?” Shi Xiaobai asked.

As if he heard the most preposterous joke, the Arch-Cardinal let out a piercing laugh, “So what if it’s true?”

“Even a big white pig will feel pain when it’s killed. Reducing this period of pain to its shortest period is the last benevolence of a butcher.”

Shi Xiaobai’s footsteps sped up, but the flames in his eyes suddenly transformed into a pool of still water.

“So, This King will kill you with utmost kindness!”

The moment he said that, Shi Xiaobai jumped up like a strong gust of wind. With a short knife in hand, he was like a valiant soldier who had no fear!

The Arch-Cardinal laughed, a laugh that resulted from extreme anger. With a gentle wave of his hand, five skeletons with shields on their left hands and sabers on their right hands suddenly appeared in front of him.

The five skeletons charged at Shi Xiaobai at an extremely abnormal speed. As they raised their bone sabers, their assault surged with an aggressive momentum.

A cold beam flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes as he abruptly used Crab Steps the moment he pulled close to the five skeletons. He transformed into a confusing phantom and dashed through the five skeletons.

The sound of five slashes scratching through rocks resounded moments later, and in an instant, the five skeletons collapsed as dozens of bones shattered, leaving behind a heap of broken bones.

As for Shi Xiaobai, it was unknown when his figure appeared beside the Arch-Cardinal. As he raised his knife, a cold beam sparkled under the sun's reflection.

This scene dumbfounded Xiao Xiao as her tiny mouth slowly gaped.

Similarly, the Arch-Cardinal's pupils constricted as he felt a strong sense of danger. At the same time, whatever else he could see on his left was the blade that was already inches away from him.

“If I don’t dodge this strike, I will die!”

With this thought generated, the Arch-Cardinal desperately escaped, fleeing to a distance about a hundred meters away.

At a hundred meters, he turned around to see the youth standing at where he previously was. The way he held the knife made him look like a cold grim reaper.

He did not even have the courage to defend against that strike!

Acknowledging this reason made the Arch-Cardinal fall into an uncontrollable rage.

Shi Xiaobai, who had missed, frowned. From this dodge, he once again felt the powerful strength of the Arch-Cardinal. It was clearly a strength that could have easily steamrolled him hundreds of times.

But why...

“He can’t attack!”

Xiao Xiao’s eyes lit up and shouted at Shi Xiaobai, “Little pervert, that guy can’t attack! Although I do not know the reason, he is unable to attack in this world!”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai immediately figured out his

doubts. The cassocked strange person clearly had the power to crush them and he was filled with anger, but all he did was shoot off his mouth in an attempt to break them down mentally. All of this was because he could not attack.

The Arch-Cardinal's expression changed slightly. Clearly, Xiao Xiao's deduction was correct.

“Heh heh, naive worms. Do you think I have no way of killing you?”

The Arch-Cardinal sneered before waving his hand gently, causing ten skeletons to appear in front of him.

In this world, he could summon undead soldiers wantonly.

“Do you feel despair?” Hahaha...”

The Arch-Cardinal raised his head and guffawed. He loved to reveal the despairing naked truth after bugs like these thought they had seen hope.

“Anymore?”

A calm voice caused the Arch-Cardinal to turn his head over. Immediately, his gaze glazed over.

He saw the ten skeletons that he had just summoned reduced to a

heap of bones in less than three seconds. As for the knife-wielding youth standing in the middle of the heap of bones, his gaze was calm, as though he had done something trivial.

Chapter 95: Don't Kill Them All

The ten skeletons he had just summoned were reduced to a heap of broken bones in less than three seconds. This stiffened the Arch-Cardinal's face for several seconds before he let out a dry laugh. He was like a speaker who had his train of thought interrupted. He was lost for words, embarrassed as to what to say.

“Anymore?”

Shi Xiaobai repeated the word again.

“Very well, very well, very well.”

Embarrassment naturally transformed into anger. After the Arch-Cardinal laughed angrily thrice, he waved his hand, causing a door of darkness to appear in front of him. Twenty skeletons walked out from it. The moment they exited the door, they charged at Shi Xiaobai with an intense killing intent. They seemed to lack the stiffness a collection of white bones should have.

Shi Xiaobai was naturally unafraid. He shook the knife in his hand and just as he was about to charge forward, he suddenly realized something different.

These twenty skeleton soldiers appeared different from the first ten!

Not only were they faster, but they were also bigger. Most

importantly, these twenty skeleton soldiers had fewer “red lines”!

Shi Xiaobai could clearly see a red line that indistinctly appeared through each skeleton soldier’s body. When he first attempted to slash at those red lines, it was like he had cleaved into tofu. A gentle slash at it would reduce the skeleton soldier to broken bones.

Shi Xiaobai immediately figured out that these looming red lines were the skeleton soldier’s weakness. Just like the virus black cocoon’s holes and the Barrier of Darkness’ constant flickering, seizing their weaknesses allowed him to easily destroy them with a single strike.

Shi Xiaobai could precisely capture the trajectory motion of the red lines and use an extremely fast speed to slash at them. The motions he made that bordered on instinct was natural and smooth, as though he had gone through practice that numbered thousands of times. It easily allowed him to shatter the skeleton soldiers.

But for these skeleton soldiers, not only did they have fewer red lines, but the red lines were even finer and shorter. The speed at which the red lines moved was also much faster.

This meant that these skeleton soldiers had fewer weaknesses!

Or it should be said that they had become stronger!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, but he quickly flung those thoughts to the back of his head. After a slight pause, he charged straight at the twenty skeleton soldiers!

As long as the red lines existed, he could easily destroy them!

Shi Xiaobai charged into the twenty skeleton soldiers, causing a red glow to effuse from their eye sockets. As they raised their sabers to slash at him, the sharp sound of air being sliced through rang one after another.

Too slow! Too slow! Too slow!

In Shi Xiaobai's eyes, the skeleton soldiers' attacks were too slow. Their movements were overly simple too. They were completely not on par with Thomas' "Wraith Bullet" or Xiao Xiao's "Crimson Netherworld"!

Using his intuition for danger and his ability to spontaneously react, Shi Xiaobai easily dodged the dancing sabers in the clump of skeleton soldiers. He did not use any fake moves or sudden changes in speed, nor did he use any fancy moves. In the dance of the saber flashes, he was like a relaxed dancer, so calm and elegant.

"Keng! Keng! Keng! ..."

The sound of clashes continued as Shi Xiaobai slashed out his knife with each step he took. Every strike was one that no one could see clearly, but after each strike, numerous skeleton soldiers

would be reduced to a heap of shattered bones.

Moments later, not a single skeleton soldier was seen standing.

...

“Phew.”

Xiao Xiao, who was standing at a distance, could not turn her gaze away, but she finally heaved a sigh of relief. Her eyes were sparkling with light.

She had seen countless people much stronger than Shi Xiaobai, and had seen a mighty person use a stunning offensive skill to instantly reduce skeleton soldiers to dust. Even she herself could easily destroy these skeleton soldiers.

But this was the first time she saw such a delightful battle. Crab Steps, which was nicknamed “funny steps”, appeared like the coolest dance moves that made her heart palpitate.

Shi Xiaobai’s Crab Steps caused her to recall of a person she saw on video—Yaris, who was referred to as the “divine crab”. He was a famous world-class hero from America who stood atop the world.

People said that “after Yaris, there would be no more Crab Steps”. Xiao Xiao had also expressed similar notions in the past, but now, she felt that despite the pervert in front of her being greatly lacking compared to Yaris’ Crab Steps, it was as if Shi

Xiaobai had grasped the essence within. His Crab Steps had a similar soul as Yaris'!

And what was more shocking to Xiao Xiao was Shi Xiaobai's knife technique. Although the pig slaughtering knife termed "Knife of Time" by the Arch-Cardinal appeared simple and plain, it gave one a feeling of awe.

Every slice at the skeleton soldiers was so simple that it did not contain any Psionic Power or any bursting blade beams. It even appeared as though he did not use much energy, but just this simple knife technique alone allowed him to reduce the skeleton soldiers to pieces.

This knife technique was indeed unbelievable, a truly convincing technique!

Xiao Xiao had never encountered such a knife technique. Not only had she not seen it before, but she had also never heard of it!

As Xiao Xiao was sighing, she noticed the Arch-Cardinal once again sneer in anger. With a wave of his hand, the door of darkness appeared out of thin air once again. This time, forty skeleton soldiers walked out. And this time, all the skeleton soldiers were wearing armor!

Every wave of skeleton soldiers increased in number and their strength increased!

Xiao Xiao took a deep breath and realized that she had to join in the battle. Who knew when this wave after wave of skeleton soldiers would come to an end?

Xiao Xiao raised her crystal arrow as she slowly pulled her bow open. Beams of white light began to condense where her bowstring was, and quickly, they converged to form a white Psionic Power arrow.

Although the virtual system's crash prevented her from summoning her crystal arrows, Xiao Xiao naturally had mastered the most basic technique as an archer—"Psionic Arrows". This was an alternative archers used in an emergency situation when they were out of arrows.

Although "Psionic Arrow" was quite draining on the user's Psionic Power and stamina, Xiao Xiao could not care about that at this moment. She could not let Shi Xiaobai face so many skeleton soldiers alone.

After Xiao Xiao did a simple aim, she shot out her arrow. She did not use "Crimson Netherworld" but used an archery technique that was relatively low on power consumption. Thankfully, the arrow was able to kill a skeleton soldier but barely. Just as she was about to shoot her second arrow, Shi Xiaobai had already taken down more than ten skeleton soldiers.

Xiao Xiao gave a helpless laugh.

This pervert seemed really fearless, it appeared as though her actions were superfluous?

.

However, with the forty killed, another eighty might appear, so how long could this pervert last?

Upon thinking of this, Xiao Xiao suddenly had a flash of brilliance as an idea came to mind.

“Don’t kill them all. Leave one behind!” Xiao Xiao hurriedly shouted.

Shi Xiaobai had just raised his knife to shatter a skeleton soldier. When he heard Xiao Xiao’s words, he involuntarily paused and turned around. Amidst the messy pile of bones, there was one skeleton soldier standing there, shivering.

“The Arch-Cardinal’s summoning of skeletons have a growth rate. Every time all the skeletons are destroyed, he would be able to summon another batch. I suspect that the destruction of all his skeletons is the condition for the skeleton summoning to grow! Hmph, by sparing one, he will not be able to summon again!”

Xiao Xiao’s tone was somewhat agitated and a bit excited. There was even a tiny tinge of hoping to gain credit that she did not even notice.

After giving it some thought, Shi Xiaobai found what Xiao Xiao said to be reasonable. Although these skeleton soldiers were temporarily no threat for him, they would eventually exponentially increase to a point where they could just use the tactic of a “sea of skeletons” to take him down.

Xiao Xiao’s discovery was no doubt a major boost!

Shi Xiaobai gave Xiao Xiao a big thumbs up. He was prepared to have a nice chat with the remaining skeleton soldier about life, talking about his ideals and discuss what hairstyle would make him look smart.

And at this moment, a door of darkness appeared once again. Eighty red skeleton soldiers walked out of the door with terrifying killing intent.

...

Xiao Xiao’s face immediately flushed red.

Chapter 96: I Want To Know You

“Foolish worm, how can the Bishop’s summoning of the dead have such a laughable limitation. Do you feel despair? The limitless army of the undead will tear you to pieces!”

The Arch-Cardinal was floating high in the sky as he laughed in a cruel and ruthless manner.

The eighty red-colored skeleton soldiers held a bone saber in hand and wore a suit of armor. They charged at Shi Xiaobai the moment they appeared. That lone, trembling ordinary skeleton soldier seemed to find its courage when it found its cadres.

When Xiao Xiao saw this scene, she was both nervous and curious. She could not understand the Arch-Cardinal mode of actions. If the undead summoning did not have the limitations as she said, why didn’t he just directly summon a gigantic army and overwhelm them?

Time was likely something very valuable for the Arch-Cardinal.

The Church of Virtuality’s acts of terror were typically carried out in the real world. The virtual world was only the place where they “lured talent”. This was because once a parishioner of the Church of Virtuality did anything big in the virtual world, the various statistics that were connected to the World Divine Realm would reveal their location in the real world. This could be said to be fatal for a terrorist who was hiding from the authorities.

The existence of the Church of Virtuality had once caused the virtual competitive industry to decline, but the various countries could not harden their hearts to ban virtual competition. Firstly, there was a reliance on this piece of technology and secondly, the danger caused by the Church of Virtuality in the virtual world was nothing compared to calamity fiends or astral beasts.

If every parishioner of the Church of Virtuality could freely invade the virtual world like the Arch-Cardinal, or even cause the system to crash and the death of players, then would there be any reason for the virtual competitive industry to exist any further?

The Arch-Cardinal definitely had paid a huge price and taken a huge risk for the present situation to occur. But even so, he still had the limitation of being unable to attack in this world.

Hence, the most important thing for the Arch-Cardinal was time. To reduce the risk of exposing his location, it only made sense for him to end the battle as soon as possible. Why did he use an attacking strategy that sent wave after wave that gradually increased in strength?

“Time!”

Xiao Xiao’s eyes lit up slightly. “Different levels of undead summoning requires a different casting time!”

Xiao Xiao finally understood why the Arch-Cardinal was using an attacking method with a gradual growth. There was no other reason—Shi Xiaobai was too fast with his killing. Furthermore,

every time he was done, he would taunt the Arch-Cardinal with the words “anymore”!

The Arch-Cardinal could not tolerate such humiliation and gave up on a long casting time. After Shi Xiaobai was done with a wave, he would immediately use the undead summoning again. As such, even though the undead summoning was being improved every time, its increase was not that much!

Xiao Xiao found the reason quite amusing, but immediately became alert.

“Once the speed at which the army is cleared slows down, the next undead summoning will become stronger.”

Realizing this gave Xiao Xiao a huge fright. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was battling eighty red skeleton soldiers. If nothing surprising happened, the next wave would be a hundred and sixty, but once he slowed down due to exhaustion, the next wave might even increase to three hundred and twenty.

Their situation was currently no different from wading upstream!

She could not let the pervert wade alone. She had to move the two oars as well!

With this thought in mind, Xiao Xiao immediately raised her crystal bow, and shot out a Psionic Arrow!

“Peng!”

Xiao Xiao’s eyes could not help but widen as the arrow hit a red skeleton soldier in the peripheral. All it did was cause a few bones to break!

Although she had used ordinary archery techniques in order to conserve Psionic Power, the red skeleton soldiers’ defenses caught her by surprise. The defense was more than a grade higher than the normal skeleton soldier from before.

Xiao Xiao turned her head to look at Shi Xiaobai, who appeared to be swimming in a crowd of red skeleton soldiers. With that, she was completely dumbfounded. Although his dodging took more time because he was heavily surrounded, Shi Xiaobai’s speed at killing the skeleton soldiers did not slow down. The red skeleton soldiers were as weak as tofu under his blade. They shattered to the ground upon contact.

Apparently, the knife technique was called Pig Slaughtering Knife?

That sure was some f*cking divine Pig Slaughtering Knife!

For the first time, Xiao Xiao found her intelligence lacking. Gritting her teeth, she raised her crystal arrow and shot out another arrow. This time, the arrow was “Crimson Netherworld” that contained her grievance!

“Boom!”

With an explosion, a large swath of skeleton soldiers was reduced to smithereens.

The corner of Xiao Xiao’s lips suffused a slight smile as she regained a bit of her confidence. However, her tiny face scrunched up once again. In order to produce a Psionic Arrow that could be the medium for “Crimson Netherworld”, the arrow had consumed a great deal of her Psionic Power. At this rate of consumption, her remaining Psionic Power could only allow her to produce a few more “Crimson Netherworld” shots.

But...

“Crimson Netherworld!”

Xiao Xiao gritted her teeth and resorted to Crimson Netherworld once again. She felt the pinch as she experienced the loss of her Psionic Power.

“Boom!”

Another skeleton soldier was blown to smithereens by the arrow.

Under the combined efforts of Shi Xiaobai’s Pig Slaughtering Knife and her Crimson Netherworld, the wave of skeleton soldiers

was quickly cleared. The Arch-Cardinal appeared dumbfounded as he fell into inaction.

A sly smile suffused on Xiao Xiao's lips as she faced the Arch-Cardinal and deliberately taunted, "Any~more?"

"Courting death!" The Arch-Cardinal immediately gave an angry laugh. With another wave of his hand, the door of darkness appeared before red skeleton soldiers walked out with surging killing intent.

Xiao Xiao scanned and immediately smiled. There was indeed only eighty red skeleton soldiers for this wave! Her guess was correct. The longer the casting time, the stronger the undead summoning would become!

"Since you are such a cardinal, then don't blame me for a little scheming."

Xiao Xiao found the Arch-Cardinal truly stupid. As long as he held back with a bit of tolerance, he could produce a gigantic wave of skeletons to drown them to death. The battle would be over, but he...

Xiao Xiao felt somewhat lucky. The path she took was a stable and safe academic route since she was a genius that had been pampered from her childhood. Although she appeared composed on the surface, she had never experienced true danger. She only experienced such a life and death situation when she was still very little.

When she first encountered the Arch-Cardinal, she was startled at the beginning. She even felt a tinge of despair after knowing that the virtual system had crashed.

But...

Xiao Xiao focused her eyes on the dancing youth who was appearing everywhere amidst the pile of skeleton soldiers. He was elegant and appeared like a cold grim reaper. He wore a funny clown costume, and was using funny Crab Steps and a knife technique with the name of Pig Slaughtering Knife, but this actually gradually settled down her panicked heart.

This was the coolest clown she had ever seen.

“We have been saved.”

As Xiao Xiao told herself in her heart, a smile appeared under her veil as arrow after arrow of Crimson Netherworld was shot.

“As long as enough time is delayed, Grandpa will definitely think of a way to save us. We just need to hold on a little longer and we will be able to leave this world that has reality turned on its head.”

She opened her mouth, but no sound came out of it.

“When the time comes, I want to know you.”

...

The final skeleton soldier was shattered to bone rubble by Shi Xiaobai's Pig Slaughtering Knife. The eighty skeleton soldiers wave was once again completely wiped out.

Xiao Xiao was just about to carry on taunting when she saw the hovering Arch-Cardinal slowly rise up. He was floating several hundred meters high, but he did not continue summoning the undead. Instead, he calmed down like a statue.

Suddenly, a black glow appeared from the Arch-Cardinal's hands.

Streams of black gas began to emit from the ground as they surged towards the sky, into his cassock. A dark wail resounded through the sky as if it was the roar of a ferocious ghost.

Shi Xiaobai immediately shouted, "Be careful, the little pig is going to use his super move!"

Xiao Xiao: "..."

Chapter 97: Door Of Darkness

Exactly as Xiao Xiao guessed, the undead's strength that were summoned depended on the casting time. Due to Shi Xiaobai's taunting, The Arch-Cardinal had choose not to hold back for a bigger and more powerful move. Instead, he would immediately summon the undead once a wave of skeleton soldiers was destroyed.

By considering the Arch-Cardinal's actions, be it taking the risk to forcibly intrude into this world or lose his calm and composure from Shi Xiaobai's taunting, it was easy to tell that the Arch-Cardinal had a high opinion of himself but had an easily enraged heart made out of glass.

Xiao Xiao keenly sensed this point and planned to use it to buy time.

Although her imagination was perfect, reality was cruel. Despite possessing a heart of glass, the Arch-Cardinal did not have a brain made of tofu. He could not have become an Arch-Cardinal in the Church of Virtuality if he was that stupid.

He knew how the risk increased the longer he stayed in this world. After he struggled for a moment, he finally decided to choose the most secure method. In fact, this was what he should have done from the very beginning, but he had let his anger get to his head.

But it was still not too late!

As the black gases constantly rose up from the ground, they surged into the black halo in Arch-Cardinal's palm. The heaven and earth resounded with the wails of ferocious specters as an eerie atmosphere enveloped the jungle, turning it to a shade of gray.

The next undead summoning would end everything.

...

Xiao Xiao spaced out slightly as she realized the gravity of the situation.

The Arch-Cardinal was using all his strength to channel the undead summoning, and it would definitely be a level that could crush them.

“We have to interrupt his channeling!”

Xiao Xiao hurriedly shouted at Shi Xiaobai, who was about a thousand meters away. However, she seemed to realize something after she shouted. She could only shake her head with a wry smile plastered across her face.

The Arch-Cardinal was obviously quite afraid of Shi Xiaobai's Pig Slaughtering Knife. He deliberately flew to a height of a hundred meters to channel his super move. Unless Shi Xiaobai could fly, there was nothing they could do to the Arch-Cardinal.

The only person who could interrupt the Arch-Cardinal's channeling was her!

However, could her arrow break through the Arch-Cardinal's defenses?

Xiao Xiao smiled bitterly, but her eyes immediately turned resolute. Regardless of the outcome, she had to give it a try.

Xiao Xiao raised her crystal arrow and aimed at that cassocked figure. Psionic Power surged to her fingertips from her body, condensing into a hard Psionic Arrow. As she pulled the bow open, she took a deep breath and released the arrow!

“Crimson Netherworld!”

Xiao Xiao did not dare to have any reservations for this arrow.

“Boom!”

A black barrier suddenly flashed, blocking the arrow in mid air!

“Barrier of Darkness!” Xiao Xiao sighed. If WindWithoutTrace could be protected by the Barrier of Darkness, it was only natural for the Arch-Cardinal to also be protected by the Barrier of Darkness.

Just thinking back on how the Barrier of Darkness could

perfectly withstand four of her Crimson Netherworld arrows, she immediately felt somewhat discouraged. She could not even cause the Barrier of Darkness to quiver with crystal arrows, what more Psionic Arrows that were one grade lower in hardness?

Against this black barrier, the weak her was powerless.

Suddenly a voice shouted from afar.

“This barrier is ten times weaker than before!”

Xiao Xiao hurriedly traced where the sound came from and she saw Shi Xiaobai’s figure disappearing into the jungle. Despite that, his voice still echoed out of the jungle into her ears.

This sentence was specifically meant for her.

Wait, did this pervert said the Barrier of Darkness was ten times weaker than before?

How did he tell?

After a moment of thought, Xiao Xiao’s eyes lit up. If she did not remember wrongly, Vision of God had an ability known as “Eyes of Numeric Data”. It could reduce all sorts of information into numbers. If Shi Xiaobai possessed the Eyes of Numeric Data, then he could indeed see how much the Barrier of Darkness had weakened.

However, wasn't this little pervert's Vision of God "Discerning Weakness"?

Xiao Xiao was somewhat puzzled. Although there were many forms and abilities for the Six Senses of God, there had been no records of people having multiple abilities or having such amazing abilities. Theoretically speaking, "Eyes of Numeric Data" and "Discerning Weakness" could not coexist in the same pair of eyes.

Xiao Xiao shook her head and flung her doubts temporarily away. She did not have the time to consider these academic issues.

"It appears that when the Arch-Cardinal is channeling his skill, he is unable to place emphasis on his defense, which results in the Barrier of Darkness being ten times weaker."

Upon coming up with the most reasonable judgment, Xiao Xiao felt a glimmer of hope rise up in her heart.

Since the Barrier of Darkness had weakened by ten times, it was still possible for her to shatter it!

Xiao Xiao released her Psionic Power again as she formed a new Psionic Arrow.

...

Moments later, Xiao Xiao languidly lowered her crystal bow.

Ten times. She had shot “Crimson Netherworld” a total of ten times. She had used all her strength to shoot ten “Crimson Netherworld” consecutively. But in the end, the Barrier of Darkness did not shatter. It did not even have the slightest tremor!

Didn’t he say that it was ten times weaker?

Xiao Xiao faintly sighed as she looked up into the sky. The black halo that was gradually condensing was becoming extremely large. It was slowly forming the outline of a gigantic door.

Xiao Xiao could not imagine how many undead legions would pour out once the Arch-Cardinal was done channeling his super move. It was probably a number that would throw them into a state of complete despair.

“Is this the end?”

Xiao Xiao’s lips trembled slightly as she felt a tinge of despair.

But at that moment, a shout suddenly resounded from the jungle. A figure suddenly appeared in mid air!

Xiao Xiao focused her eyes as her pupils constricted violently. The figure that had leaped high into the air was none other than Shi Xiaobai. With a knife in hand, he stabbed into the sky with his Pig Slaughtering Knife, as though he wanted to poke through the

black fog that filled the sky.

However, the highest height Shi Xiaobai reached from jumping was only slightly more than ten meters.

As for the Arch-Cardinal, he was situated about a hundred meters in the sky.

His knife had without any suspense, stabbed into nothingness. After struggling in mid air for half a second, Shi Xiaobai fell to the ground in a funny posture.

What was this fool doing?

Xiao Xiao was dumbfounded.

Just as she was in a daze, she saw Shi Xiaobai rapidly getting up from the ground. This time, she saw the entire process.

She saw Shi Xiaobai look around his surroundings to find a relatively tall tree. Next, he climbed up the tree like a monkey. After reaching the top, he would stagger to stand up before leaping high into the sky.

However, the tallest trees in the jungle were still less than twenty meters tall. His jump was destined to never touch the Arch-Cardinal, who was a hundred meters high!

Without any suspense, Shi Xiaobai failed, but he immediately got up and continued repeating these attempts that were impossible to succeed.

“Does this fool think he can jump ninety meters?”

Xiao Xiao fell into stunned silence, but for some reason, she felt somewhat upset.

She was very tempted to yell at Shi Xiaobai, “Give up. You are doing something foolish.” However, it was as though there was a fish bone stuck in her throat, preventing her from saying anything.

If this was in the past, she would definitely scoff at such ridiculous behavior. She might even secretly mock in her heart.

However, at this moment, her eyes turned slightly red.

She was somewhat touched, but it was mostly guilt.

As she was about to give up, he was still persisting with his laughable efforts.

He was still hopeful when facing the huge distance of ninety meters.

As for her, she had felt despair when she looked at the few

centimeters where her fingers moved when releasing an arrow.

He did not say “don’t give up” to her. He did not request for her to persist on in this life-and-death juncture. He was just silently giving his all without wavering in his resolve. He was doing everything within his power.

As for her...what did she do?

“What a fool.”

Xiao Xiao exhaled. Her heart felt like something was slipping away, but it also felt like something was filling it up.

She raised her crystal bow as streams of white Psionic Power surged out from her fingertips, gradually forming a Psionic Arrow.

Not enough! Not enough! Not enough!

Xiao Xiao gritted her teeth and did not stop releasing her Psionic Power. The white energy constantly flowed into the Psionic Arrow, condensing it into a harder and more solid arrow.

Sensing how specks after specks of Psionic Power was draining from her body which did not have much Psionic Power left to begin with, the corner of Xiao Xiao’s mouth gradually formed an arc.

Slowly, her body began to turn limp while her vision began to turn blurry. Her legs were constantly trembling as her hand could barely hold the Psionic Arrow that was getting more and more dazzling. However, Xiao Xiao did not stop. It was as though she wanted to squeeze out every drop of energy from her body to release the Psionic Power.

At the instant she was about to drain off all her power, Xiao Xiao finally released!

By releasing her fingers and let it go, she could regain the ability to grasp onto hope!

This arrow was called never giving up!

...

Xiao Xiao did not see the scene of the arrow shooting up into the sky. At the moment she released her hand, she had fallen backwards and plopped to the ground.

However, she knew that the arrow would succeed, because at the moment she shot out Crimson Netherworld, it had reached the Exemplary Mastery realm and also because she had used all her strength for this arrow.

Indeed, a deafening explosion resounded from the sky as an angry voice boomed.

Xiao Xiao imagined the Arch-Cardinal's flustered appearance and smiled in her heart. She struggled to get up, but just lifting her upper body had expended all the strength she had left.

But being able to hold up her upper body was sufficient.

This was because Shi Xiaobai happened to be falling from mid air. When he got up from the ground, he could see her when he turned around.

They were separated by a thousand meters and their eyes interlocked over the great distance.

She nodded at him.

He waved at her.

At this moment, a gigantic black door fell from the sky. The door firmly embedded itself into the ground, as though a black wall had been built across half the jungle, separating Xiao Xiao and Shi Xiaobai on two ends.

In Xiao Xiao's vision in front of her, all that was left was darkness.

In the darkness, dozens of gigantic bone dragons flew out as row after row of black skeleton soldiers marched out.

They appeared from both sides of the door. One headed to the left, while the other headed to the right. This door of darkness split the jungle into two worlds, but they were the same hell.

Xiao Xiao's face immediately turned white because numerous bone dragons were already flying towards her with a roar, but she no longer had any strength to escape.

Chapter 98: Go On First

A door of darkness fell from the sky, and from it undead legions emerged, each and everyone having intense killing intent. The sky was filled with flying bone dragons, while the land was trampled by skeleton soldiers. It looked no different from doomsday.

Xiao Xiao, who had slumped to the ground, was drained of all her Psionic Power. She found it difficult to even keep her upper body up, so how could she muster the strength to escape?

The bone dragon that was closest to her suddenly began to flap its bony wings which in turn stirred up a furious storm. Its sharp talons shimmered with a cold sheen as it charged at Xiao Xiao with a deafening roar.

“Am I going to die?”

With her death approaching, Xiao Xiao’s heart was complicated but calm. It was complicated because she had to draw the curtains on her life that had yet to become interesting. It was calm because she had done her best. At least she had never really given up.

As her vision gradually turned hazy, she suddenly saw a familiar figure jump out of the skeleton soldier clump. The figure was rushing madly at her at a speed as fast as lightning. In a blink of an eye, the figure had caught up to the racing bone dragon.

“Little pervert!”

Xiao Xiao's gaped her little mouth.

He passed through the door of darkness and leapfrogged rows after rows of skeleton soldiers. He had come to save her and had already chased up to the bone dragon!

At this moment, the bone dragon had also realized a minute figure running on the ground. With an angry roar, it suddenly turned and plummeted downwards, rolling a storm alongside it to attack Shi Xiaobai!

"Be careful!" Xiao Xiao hurriedly shouted.

Shi Xiaobai did not seem to hear it as he only cared about his desperate run forwards. Just as he was about to reach Xiao Xiao, he suddenly turned around and kicking off with his right foot, he jumped up high towards the bone dragon's sharp talons!

The gigantic bone dragon's shadow completely shrouded Shi Xiaobai, as though he had been swallowed by darkness. The bone talon swiped down at him in a ruthless manner!

Shi Xiaobai raised his short knife as he faced the bone talon!

"Keng!"

A loud noise erupted from the collision, as though a rock had hit

a hard wall. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's figure was grabbed by the white chilling talons and instantly disappeared!

“No!” Xiao Xiao screamed.

“Roar!”

The bone dragon suddenly looked up and roared. Its roar was filled with anger and fear.

“Peng! Peng! Peng...”

The sounds of explosions and ruptures emitted from the bone dragon's body as thick bones broke one after another and fell to the ground, resembling a grayish-white rain that poured down from the sky. In seconds, the gigantic bone dragon was reduced to a pile of bones on the ground.

In the middle of the heap of bones, Shi Xiaobai stood up and patted his body, clearing the bone fragments off his body. His eyes were calm and indifferent.

Xiao Xiao was dumbfounded

Could this Pig Slaughtering Knife not be so ridiculous?

However, it is pretty cool.

Having survived the calamity, Xiao Xiao revealed a faint smile. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had turned around and headed towards her. He leaned over and reached out both his hands.

Xiao Xiao's smile stiffened but soon softened.

...

More than ten bone dragons flew over in a rage while hundreds of skeleton soldiers marched forward like a torrential flood. Xiao Xiao knew that not a moment could be delayed; hence, when Shi Xiaobai ran towards her and appeared as though he wanted to carry her, she did not show any resistance. However, she felt somewhat embarrassed about the princess carry she was about to receive.

But, but, but!

“Why are you carrying me this way!?”

She was thrown over Shi Xiaobai's shoulder in a fireman's lift. Xiao Xiao's face blushed so red that she wanted to dig a hole and jump into it. However, she quickly realized Shi Xiaobai had done so to free his hand for his knife. A fireman's lift just needed one hand.

Fine, she understood the logic, but this position is too...

Xiao Xiao tried her best to straighten her upper body but she had

no strength at all. She could only let her chest rest on Shi Xiaobai's back. However, as Shi Xiaobai began running, her upper body constantly bounced. Her soft lumps on her chest struck his back again and again.

This was so embarrassing!

However, the ceaseless pursuit by the bone dragons and skeleton soldiers would overwhelm them at any time. It was not the time for her to complain about such matters.

As the color on Xiao Xiao's face oscillated between red and white, she cursed the ungentlemanly pervert in a manner too deep for tears in her heart. However, just the thought of the critical situation they were in, and how he had rushed from the other end of the door of darkness like a knight to save her, made her heart feel warm.

“Hey, little pervert, what's your name?”

Xiao Xiao suddenly remembered that she did not know his name. Although asking another person of their identity in the virtual world was a big taboo, they were after all sharing weal and woe. If they really failed to escape this disaster, they might end up being buried in the same piece of land.

If she did not even know his name, wouldn't it be too lonely?

Xiao Xiao did not hear the answer she wanted to hear because a

door of darkness came crashing down in front of them without any warning. It shook the entire jungle.

The door of darkness in front of them produced thousands of undead legions that began to charge at them, while there were bone dragons and skeleton soldiers chasing them from behind. Both the front and back was a dead end!

At this moment, the only choice was left or right!

But!

“Boom!”

A door of darkness suddenly crashed to their right.

“Boom!”

Almost at the same moment, another door of darkness fell from the sky, landing on the road to their left.

Gigantic bone dragons, armor-wearing skeleton soldiers, bow-wielding skeleton archers... A dense horde of undead legion emerged from every direction as they encircled them. There was not the slightest gap!

The skeletons army stopped marching forward about ten meters away from them. They raised their bone sabers and were filled

with intense killing intent.

The skeleton archers also stopped more than ten meters away. Their arrows were all aimed at the two people who had no way out.

The constantly hissing and growling bone dragons were circling the skies, as though they were dark clouds that blocked out the sun.

A cassock appeared in the encirclement as he let out a taunting laugh.

“The game ends here.”

...

The game ends here?

Xiao Xiao struggled to get off Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. She barely stood up as she leaned on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. She looked at the Arch-Cardinal not far away and asked with an ugly expression, “Doesn't your undead summoning...require a casting time?”

The three doors of darkness that had completely blocked their paths had nearly appeared at the same moment. It was in completely at odds with her speculation of the casting time mechanism.

“Casting time?”

The Arch-Cardinal did not seem in a hurry to order the undead legion to tear the two of them to pieces. Instead, he said with interest, “I, who have received the favor of His Grace Bishop of Virtuality, can summon the doors of darkness at any time. Of course there is no summoning time.”

“You are lying.” Xiao Xiao coldly said. If there was not casting time, then why did he not summon the door of darkness right from the beginning to corner them into despair?

However, just as she said that, the Arch-Cardinal gently waved his hand as a door of darkness immediately opened in the distance. Bone dragons and skeleton soldiers poured out like a flood.

A look of disbelief flashed past Xiao Xiao’s eyes as she said with a trembling voice, “Why?”

Was everything she guessed wrong?

But why?

Why did he constantly give them the chance to delay time despite having the ability to completely overwhelm them?

“Looking at pitiful worms constantly struggle, constantly going

from having hope to despair, and then gaining hope from despair, until they fell into absolute despair. Such a delightful matter must not be missed, am I right?” The Arch-Cardinal sneered and said, “Unfortunately, time is limited for me, so the game can only go this far. So, it’s time for you to die obediently.”

The moment he said that, the Arch-Cardinal flew up to a distance of a hundred meters. He gently raised his hands as all the skeleton soldiers, skeleton archers and bone dragons readied themselves. They were just waiting for the Arch-Cardinal’s hand to go down to indicate for them to charge forward and engulf the duo.

Xiao Xiao could not help but tighten her grip on Shi Xiaobai’s arm as a hint of despair flashed past her eyes. Being surrounded by layers of skeleton armies and bone dragons that completely blocked out the skies, there was not even a trace of hope for them.

Everything was ending just like that?

What indignation.

“Shi Xiaobai.”

Suddenly, a calm voice resounded in her ear. Xiao Xiao was slightly surprised as she turned her head to see a pair of black eyes that seemed to sparkle at a magnitude brighter than the stars.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai’s gaze was extremely calm. None of the undead legion that surrounded them or the impending death

seemed to shake his will.

“This King’s name, Shi Xiaobai.” He said.

Xiao Xiao finally reacted. This was an answer to a question from not long ago.

This belated answer did not seem too late.

“Xiao Xiao. My name.”

Xiao Xiao’s panicking heart suddenly calmed down as she reached out her hand and said softly, “Nice to meet you.”

To be able to get to know you at the final moment is indeed something fortunate.

Although she felt extremely indignant, she also felt a tiny consolation. Maybe there was no need to be so sad.

Shi Xiaobai did not stretch out his hand to grab the soft hand but instead said with a calm voice, “Then...you go on first.”

Go on first?

Xiao Xiao was stunned for she could not figure out the meaning behind the sentence immediately.

However, a short knife stabbed into her chest suddenly. It was direct, quick and merciless as it stabbed through her heart.

She did not have the time to ask why.

She did not have the time to take a glance at that pair of dark eyes to find out what emotions they contained.

Xiao Xiao's vision turned black as she lost all consciousness.

Chapter 99: Stabbed Into My Heart

China's capital. Battle Arena Corporation headquarters.

“Chairman, the management systems and safety mechanisms that control the virtual world which the Missus is in are all crippled. The competition temporarily cannot be suspended. However, the technical team is doing their best to troubleshoot the invading virus. We believe they will soon expel the Arch-Cardinal. Please wait a little longer!”

In a long hallway, a white-shirt elder strode quickly and proceeded forcefully despite his white hair. A man in a suit and sunglasses was following closely behind as he tone sounded anxious.

“Wait? Xiao'er is currently in danger, and you want me to wait?”

Xiao Lingtian frowned as his voice was filled with an angry tone. His eyes were filled with worry.

The suited man attempted to persuade him, “We informed America's intelligence agency the moment the Arch-Cardinal appeared. We believe they will soon nab the Arch-Cardinal. Missus would definitely be fine.”

Xiao Lingtian sneered upon hearing this. “All the power of the Arch-Cardinal comes from the Bishop of Virtuality. Even if all four of the Arch-Cardinals are killed, the Bishop of Virtuality can

immediately create another four with a simple thought. The American intelligence agency would not put in any effort for two Chinese nationals that provides no benefit. I can't place my hope on them."

"I know you are worried about the Missus' safety, but please do not hastily use the 'Battle Holy Arrow'!"

The suited man hurriedly said, "Although the technical team has managed to reverse locate the Arch-Cardinal to be in San Francisco, USA, you will definitely alert America's Department of Defense if you were to shoot the arrow at San Francisco. You might even affect Sino-American diplomatic relationships. And even the 'Battle Holy Arrow' will find it hard to tear through America's defenses. Furthermore, there is the bunch of monsters known as the Avengers there. Your arrow might not only fail to stop the Arch-Cardinal, but it might also result in a catastrophe!"

As the suited man spoke, the duo arrived at the end of the hallway where a silver metallic door stood. Xiao Lingtian went to the authentication panel by the side and began a complicated authentication process by scanning his face and doing a thumbprint identification, as well as providing his saliva for analysis.

Xiao Lingtian turned around and glanced at the suited man. He said with a resolute tone, "This arrow is meant to stir the American Department of Defense. If they can't be bothered with the lives of two Chinese nationals, then my 'Battle Holy Arrow' will definitely make them look up. Furthermore, I have to save Xiao'er regardless of the consequences even if there is no guarantee

she will be saved. If one arrow won't do, then I'll use two. If two isn't enough, I will use all the 'Battle Holy Arrows'!"

Upon hearing this, the color on the suited man's face changed. His voice slowly turned distant. "Are you insisting on persisting in this willful act?"

Xiao Lingtian did not respond. After he finished the authentication procedures, the silver metallic door gradually opened. There was only a glass platform in the spacious room and on it, there was a purplish-gold bow and seven pure white arrows.

The bow's name was "Azure Descendence", a sacred artifact that had been passed down through the Xiao family for hundreds of years.

And the seven arrows were called "Battle Holy Arrows". It was developed by the Battle Arena Corporation's research department over a period of seven years, spending tens of billions of Chinese currency before they barely managed to produce these seven holy arrows that possessed the ability to destroy an entire city.

These seven arrows were what the Battle Arena Corporation used to ensure its safety in the Chinese business industry. In this era of rampant calamities, if they lacked the strength that matched their wealth, they would be ruthlessly denied the qualification to participate in the shady business world.

At this moment, Xiao Lingtian was willing to lose everything to save Xiao Xiao.

“You are ruining the Battle Arena Corporation by doing this!”

The suited man saw Xiao Lingtian grasp the Azure Descendence bow and sling the seven holy arrows on his back before leaving. Gritting his teeth, he threw himself in front of Xiao Lingtian and took a deep breath. He said agitatedly, “Missus is your granddaughter, but what are the employees of Battle Arena Corporation to you? They too have children. They have the duty to support their families. Can you really harden your heart to disappoint them and make them lose everything? Are you going to destroy the Battle Arena Corporation’s foundation built up over ten years because of a meaningless stubbornness? This was established by you single handedly. Isn’t it also your child?”

Xiao Lingtian faltered in his footsteps as a slight struggle flashed in his eyes. He then sighed and said, “Ten years ago, for the Battle Arena Corporation and for the Xiao family estate, for so-called righteousness, I lost my son and daughter-in-law, while Xiao’er lost her parents. And at this moment, with the same choices placed in front of me, I have to choose to be selfish this once even if it is wrong.”

“I will arrange for the corporation’s employees to take up jobs in other companies. I still have that bit of power. If the United States Department of Defense denounces China, I will personally head to the United States and take up all responsibility. Although I am just a lowly businessman, I still know some important figures. I believe this old man’s head isn’t worthless.”

Xiao Lingtian was adamant.

The suited man's eyes flashed a ferocious color but he lowered his head to prevent Xiao Lingtian from seeing it. He hurriedly followed Xiao Lingtian's footsteps along the hallway. The hallway's exit began to appear in front of them. Once out of the hallway, Xiao Lingtian could immediately pull Azure Descendence open and shoot out the Battle Holy Arrow. This arrow would fly across rivers and mountains, crossing dozens of countries before arriving in San Francisco, United States.

After this arrow, the Battle Arena Corporation's reputation would be left with nothing. All his ambition would just be reduced to disappearing bubbles.

“Is this the end?”

The suited man sighed. A dagger in his sleeve inched out quietly.

“Let's end it here.”

A lazy voice was heard coming from the exit. A silver-haired youth dressed in a blood-red robe suddenly came out into the light. As the youth walked, dozens of red skull-shaped flames floated around him as they issued strange screams from time to time.

“Young Master Red Lotus!?”

A look of shock flashed in Xiao Lingtian's eyes as he suddenly thought of something. He turned to look at the suited man and said

in disbelief, “You secretly informed the Ministry of State Security?”

The suited man bowed his head and said, “This was my only way to stop you.”

A trace of disappointment flashed in Xiao Lingtian’s eyes. After he sighed, he turned to look at the silver-haired youth and asked, “Since the Ministry of State Security has deployed you from the Dragon team, have they hardened their hearts to stop me?”

The silver-haired youth yawned and said weakly, “That’s true. Although I don’t think letting you shoot a few arrows would be a big deal, the few old men in the Ministry of State Security treat this ‘international peace’ as importantly as their lives. So don’t struggle and obediently put the Azure Descendence back and relax yourself with a full-body massage. Of course, if you insist on not coming to your senses, I don’t mind playing with you.”

Xiao Lingtian’s facial expression changed as he said solemnly, “Young Master Red Lotus, although you are a genius not seen in a hundred years, and the Dragon team broke tradition by recruiting an elite like you, you are still too young. Although I have been in the business world for decades, I have never fallen back on my cultivation. If this becomes a life-and-death struggle, I’m afraid you are no match for me. For Xiao’er, I can’t care too much. I am even prepared to kill you who they call the future of the country, so...”

“So noisy!”

The silver-haired youth's cold shout interrupted Xiao Lingtian's words as his lazy expression slowly turned cold. He sneered, "It appears you aren't going to listen to advice. Fine, I don't like wasting time either."

As the silver-haired youth said that, he suddenly took a step forward. Dozens of flaming skulls instantly gathered around his body, turning into a gigantic blackish-red skull. The gigantic skull ferociously opened its mouth and let out a deafening scream.

"For Xiao'er, so what if I become a desperate ignorant man!?" Xiao Lingtian sighed helplessly as he raised Azure Descendence. Numerous green beams of light immediately appeared in the air as they gathered in his palm, condensing to form a green arrow.

The suited man was standing not far behind Xiao Lingtian. A fierce look flashed in his eyes as the dagger in his hand quietly protruded.

At this moment, the sounds of anxious footsteps came from the other end of the corridor.

"Missus...Missus has woken up!"

...

In the most luxurious private room in the Battle Arena Corporation, Xiao Xiao sat up from her virtual immersion cabin.

Her hand held her chest as she took a deep breath while her heart continue palpitating. Moments later, she calmed down.

Her mind recalled all that had happened in the virtual world as well as that sudden stab. She knitted her eyebrows and took a long while before they gently eased up. A lovely smile suddenly bloomed on her beautiful face.

“I see.”

Xiao Xiao hugged her knees and placed her head on them. She dreamily said, “Shi Xiaobai, that knife of yours has stabbed into my heart.”

Chapter 100: This Is Such A Bonus

United States, Intelligence Agency.

An old liquid display screen was displaying Shi Xiaobai's devil-like footwork amidst the skeletons army and him shattering a skeleton soldier in one strike with his knife. Roy, who was sitting by the computer, was constantly pushing his spectacle rims up, and when the final skeleton soldier was reduced to pieces, he let out a long exhale and said with a praise, "Wow, this is amazing!"

Standing behind Roy was Gino, who also showed his adulation. "The Crab Steps he uses is reminiscent of Yaris' style. And that knife technique is clean and precise. Every strike hits a vital spot. I did not expect such a genius to be amongst China's younger generation."

Roy nodded and finally sighed, "Unfortunately, he is destined to die at a young age. The Battle Arena Corporation might have informed us the moment the Arch-Cardinal appeared, allowing us to successfully intercept and locate the Arch-Cardinal's location in an extremely short amount of time, but..."

"But our superiors haven't given us the permission to make the arrest."

Gino finished Roy's sentence in a tone tinged with sarcasm. "This youth is after all from China. Our so great and wise superiors only wishes for China to lose its geniuses. Now, for them to choose to turn our backs on him and pretend we are incompetent is their

usual style. After all, the United State's justice is only valid for American citizens."

Roy shrugged his shoulders and said, "Don't let our superiors hear that or you will be in deep trouble. You were sent to the Desert of Death to gather intelligence previously. Surely, you must not have forgotten what that felt like?"

Gino curled his mouth but he lowered his volume, "Sigh, even if we can't save the two Chinese nationals, we can't just easily let the Arch-Cardinal go, right?"

Roy shook his head and said with a laugh, "Young Gino, you are still too young. That's right, you haven't been with the Intelligence Agency for long. It's normal for you not to know certain secrets. Let's put it this way. The Arch-Cardinal is just an ordinary person. It might be some alcoholic at a bar, or an employee at KFC. He might even be a beggar on the streets. They have only temporarily gained the favor of the Bishop of Virtuality."

When Gino heard this, he said in wonder, "What does that mean?"

Roy patiently explained, "All of the Arch-Cardinal's power comes from the Bishop of Virtuality. Although there can only be four Arch-Cardinals at one point in time, who becomes an Arch-Cardinal is all decided with a single thought by the Bishop of Virtuality. Once the present Arch-Cardinal is arrested, the Bishop of Virtuality would recover all his powers from him and transfer it to another person. In the end, the Arch-Cardinal is just an ordinary person who was temporarily given powers."

After Gino heard this, he gave it a moment's thought before saying, "If that is the case, catching the Bishop of Virtuality would result in the complete collapse of the Church of Virtuality?"

Roy sneered and said, "The American Intelligence Agency has an intelligence network that covers the entire world, but after a decade of intense investigations, not a single clue has led to the Bishop of Virtuality. We are even beginning to suspect that the bastard is hidden on another planet or another dimension."

Gino clicked his tongue and said, "That's true, that old monster definitely isn't easily caught. So the Arch-Cardinal's power is entrusted to him by the Bishop of Virtuality. I was wondering why his actions were so strange."

Roy said, "The power this Arch-Cardinal received must be fleeting. The Barrier of Darkness protection and the channeling-style undead summoning is all he has, but this guy is truly a fool. If he had channeled the most powerful undead summoning right from the beginning, these two kids would have been dead a hundred times over."

At this moment, the screen was showing the Arch-Cardinal floating a hundred meters high in the sky, preparing to launch his super move.

Roy curled his mouth and said, "It looks like this idiot is getting flustered."

Next was the scene of Shi Xiaobai constantly climbing up trees and leaping up into the sky, as well as Xiao Xiao shooting arrow after arrow at the Arch-Cardinal.

The two of them watched in a daze.

Gino sighed and said, “These two are good seedlings. It’s such a pity.”

At this moment, Xiao Xiao’s fully concentrated arrow pierced through the Barrier of Darkness, interrupting the Arch-Cardinal’s channeling. However, as he was at the end of his channeling, the door of darkness still fell from the sky, while the screen showed the Arch-Cardinal stamping his foot in rage before switching to Shi Xiaobai.

Following that was a scene that completely stunned the duo.

They saw Shi Xiaobai dash ahead before the door of darkness even landed. His speed was frightening fast. When the door of darkness landed, he charged straight into the darkness and moments later appeared from the other end of the door of darkness.

However, there were dozens of skeleton soldiers blocking his path, but by using a series of dazzling feints, the skeleton soldiers were reduced to two bone heaps, opening up a narrow path that allowed Shi Xiaobai to proceed forward. Next, he used an extremely fast speed to chase up to the bone dragon and shattered the bone dragon to pieces.

All of this happened in less than ten seconds!

“Holy shit, this guy is only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!?”

“F*ck, this Chinese guy really deserves death!”

The two of them cursed out in unison before they interlocked their eyes and roared with laughter.

Gino rubbed his chin and said, “This kid’s divine Crab Steps is quickly approaching the Dominating Refinement realm. However, being able to completely shatter the bone dragon in one strike doesn’t make sense. This is not the strength a person at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm should possess.”

Roy gave it a little thought before saying, “I suspect that the undead is vulnerable to his knife technique. For example, the legendary ‘Sword of Light’ makes slashing the entities of Darkness as simple as cutting vegetables. This strike likely has similar effects as the Sword of Light.”

Gino nodded his head in agreement.

At this moment, the screen showed three doors of darkness suddenly land, blocking off the duo’s escaping path.

Gino exclaimed, “Doesn’t that bastard have to channel to do the undead summoning? Why is he able to instantly summon such large armies?”

Roy frowned for a moment before it eased. He said, “The Arch-Cardinal’s strength depends on the Bishop of Virtuality’s intentions. Since he suddenly possesses the ability to make such a powerful summon, then there is only one possibility. The Bishop of Virtuality wishes for him to quickly finish this task, so he gave him additional strength.”

Just as Roy said that, the Arch-Cardinal said from the screen, “Looking at pitiful worms constantly struggling, constantly going from having hope to despair, and then gaining hope from despair, until they fall into absolute despair. Such a delightful matter must not be missed, am I right?”

Upon hearing this, Gino could not help but curse, “This Arch-Cardinal not only wants to uphold his reputation, but he is also rather shameless. To forcefully flaunt himself, he is only an idiot. Sigh, unfortunately the end of the road for these two is here. No one can save them.”

At this moment, the Arch-Cardinal had already gradually lifted his hand.

“No, they still have a way to help themselves.”

Roy spoke at a very fast speed, “Didn’t you notice? The Arch-Cardinal wasted so much time emphasizing the consequences of

death to prevent the two of them from attempting to commit suicide. The crippling of a virtual system does not mean everything has become real. There is just no normal method of extricating themselves from the immersion. Death allows them to forcefully leave the game. However, if they were killed by the Arch-Cardinal, it would be equivalent to being infected by the virus and their nerves would be damaged, destroying their brain stems.”

“So, if they want to save themselves, the only way is to commit suicide!”

Roy’s words astounded Gino. He finally understood that all the bravado talk the Arch-Cardinal said at the beginning was not a bunch of hogwash, but to fool the two of them. It had even fooled him!

The American Intelligence Agency was indeed powerful. They even knew such a secret.

But...why didn’t they tell this to the world?

Gino opened his mouth and suddenly felt discomfort. If so-called justice was only used to serve their own citizens and used to pursue their self-interests, then how different was it from evil?

“Commit suicide, please!” Gino whispered to the computer screen.

As if he heard his prayer, Shi Xiaobai suddenly stabbed Xiao Xiao

in the heart!

“Holy shit, this bastard must have done that by luck, right!?”

Roy had spat out the cigarette dangling by his mouth.

...

...

In the virtual world.

After Xiao Xiao's heart was pierced, she nearly did not experience any pain before losing her consciousness. She then softly slumped into Shi Xiaobai's arms.

A few seconds later, Xiao Xiao's body transformed into a white light that shot up into the sky, disappearing from this world.

“Goodbye, Little Little. I wish we will meet one day in the real world.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed and lifted his knife to aim at his heart, preparing to stab down at it.

“Wait!”

The Arch-Cardinal hurriedly descended from the sky and said in panic, “Why are you committing suicide!?”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a moment before he looked at the Arch-Cardinal as though he was looking at a retard. He said matter-of-factly, “Committing suicide allows me to leave this darn place, so why shouldn’t I commit suicide?”

The Arch-Cardinal was alarmed as he stammered, “How...How did you...you know the secret?”

Shi Xiaobai had his knife to his chest, so he was in no hurry to commit suicide. So he suddenly imitated the Arch-Cardinal’s flattering tone and said, “Your Grace Bishop of Virtuality, thank you for bestowing your favor. This lowly person will definitely live up to your expectations. With the ability to make powerful summons, this lowly person will immediately dedicate the two worms to you!”

The Arch-Cardinal stared with widened eyes as though he had seen a ghost.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used a dignified posture and said, “This Bishop does not like trash. You are now on your own. Make sure not to let the two of them commit suicide or they will leave this world. You have to plant the virtuality virus into their consciousness by all means, or else...hmp!”

The Arch-Cardinal immediately began sweating profusely as he said in disbelief, “Impossible, how do you know the contents of my

conversation with His Grace!?”

Shi Xiaobai sneered and said, “Foolish mortal, This King is omniscient.”

“You can hear my mental conversation with His Grace?

The Arch-Cardinal’s voice suddenly began to tremble as he whispered, “To be able to hear mental conversations...that’s...the Audition of God!? No, that’s impossible. You clearly have the Vision of God, how can you have the Audition of God? This is against common sense. Humans cannot possess two Six Senses of God at the same time. You..you...you aren’t human!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he could not help but nod his head in agreement. He said loudly, “Foolish mortal, you have finally touched the Door of Truth. That’s right. This King is the King of kings. I am neither god nor demon or human. This King is a supreme existence, an existence that transcends everything!”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai felt delighted. Indeed, as a King of kings, he was destined not to be able to keep a low profile. People would incidentally stumble upon the hidden brilliance he had.

“Alright, This King shall be leaving. Sayonara!”

Shi Xiaobai smiled as he wanted to stab himself in the heart with his knife.

Naturally, the Arch-Cardinal could not stop him in time. All he could do was roar in grief, hating that he lacked the power to instantly kill the bastard.

Everything appeared like it was ending.

Only if time did not stop.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Just as Shi Xiaobai raised the short knife up, time froze.

The familiar black text slowly materialized in front of him again.

[Choice 1: In half an hour, make the Arch-Cardinal loudly shout “Grandpa” three consecutive times (D-level reward)]

[Choice 2: In half an hour, make the Arch-Cardinal loudly shout “Hubby” three consecutive times (C-level reward)]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “bonus-style choice”. The mission chosen has to be completed or time would be repeated!)

“Make your choice, youth!”

...

AN